

CODEX SINAITICUS:

The New Testament in English
Translated from the Sinaitic Manuscript
Discovered by Constantine Tischendorf
at Mt. Sinai by H. T. Anderson
And begun in 1861

Edited by
Jackson Snyder
Jack L. Williams
Roy Shurtleff Miller



Apostolia.com

Codex Sinaiticus:
The H. T. Anderson New Testament
© 2004-2010 Jackson H. Snyder II
All Rights Reserved

ISBN 978-0-557-34102-3 Hardcover

In Memory of Roy Shurtleff Miller 1950 - 2009

Though we have combed the text for errors, you may find some. Please report them to Apostolia.com.

CONTENTS

| | |
|-----|---|
| 4 | Prefaces |
| 14 | According to Matthew |
| 70 | According to Mark |
| 104 | According to Luke |
| 164 | According to John |
| 210 | Acts of the Apostles |
| 266 | Acts 29, Sonnini Manuscript |
| 270 | Paul to the Romans |
| 294 | Paul to the Corinthians 1 st |
| 318 | Paul to the Corinthians 2 nd |
| 334 | Paul to the Galatians |
| 342 | Paul to the Ephesians |
| 350 | Paul to the Philippians |
| 356 | Paul to the Colossians |
| 362 | Paul to the Thessalonians 1 st |
| 368 | Paul to the Thessalonians 2 nd |
| 372 | Paul to Timothy 1 st |
| 378 | Paul to Timothy 2 nd |
| 384 | Paul to Titus |
| 388 | Paul to Philemon |
| 390 | Epistle of Hebrews |
| 408 | Epistle of James |
| 414 | Epistle of Peter 1st |
| 420 | Epistle of Peter 2nd |
| 424 | Epistle of John 1st |
| 430 | Epistle of John 2nd |
| 432 | Epistle of John 3rd |
| 434 | Epistle of Jude |
| 436 | Revelation of Jesus Christ |
| 464 | Epistle of Barnabas |
| 488 | Shepherd of Hermas |
| 588 | <i>Didachē</i> or Teaching of the Twelve |

Editor's Preface

English translations of the *Sinaiticus* are rare enough; but Anderson's New Testament is unique. We hope the reader will



appreciate the literacy, accuracy and authenticity of this work – which was the goal of the translator's life and the editors' passion.

Anderson did not translate *The Shepherd* or *Epistle of Barnabas*. The *Barnabas* here is based on Hoole's 1885 re-edited by Ted Dornan in 2007. The Lightfoot translation of *The Shepherd of Hermas* is offered here to make the corpus complete. The Sinaitic manuscript is

missing enough pages at the end to account for the inclusion of *The Didachē* or *Teaching of the Twelve*, which we suspect would have been close to its companion text, *Barnabas*. For good measure, I added the Sonnini Manuscript, *St. Paul in Great Britain*, in the place of Acts 29.

(As of 2010, I have new, annotated English translations of the *Didachē* and *Barnabas*, each interpaginated with the Received Greek text, available in Hebraic Roots versions at www.Apostolia.com.)

We recommend two books that may be helpful in understanding the rightful place of *Sinaiticus* in the history of the canon: *Bart Ehrman's Lost Scriptures: Books That Did Not make It Into the New Testament* (2003) and *Encountering the Manuscripts: An Introduction to New Testament Paleography & Textual Criticism*, Philip Wesley Comfort, (2005).

Codex Sinaiticus, from *Wikipedia*, the free encyclopedia.

Codex Sinaiticus is a 4th century uncial manuscript of the Greek Bible, written between 330–350. While it originally contained the whole of both Testaments, only portions of the

Greek Old Testament or Septuagint survive, along with a complete New Testament, the Epistle of Barnabas, and portions of The Shepherd of Hermas (suggesting that the latter two may have been considered part of Biblical canon by the editors of the codex). Along with Codex Vaticanus, Codex Sinaiticus is one of the most valuable manuscripts for textual criticism of the Greek New Testament, as well as the Septuagint. For most of the New Testament, Codex Sinaiticus is in general agreement with Codex Vaticanus and Codex Ephraemi Rescriptus, attesting an Alexandrian text-type, but in John 1:1-8:38, Codex Sinaiticus is in closer agreement with Codex Bezae in support of a Western text-type. A notable example of an agreement between the Sinaiticus and Vaticanus texts is that they both omit the phrase “without cause” from Matthew 5:22.

The entire codex consists of 346½ folios, written in four columns. Of these, 199 belong to the Old Testament and 147½ belong to the New Testament, along with two other books, the Epistle of Barnabas and part of The Shepherd of Hermas. The books of the New Testament are arranged in this order: the four Gospels, the epistles of Paul, the Acts of the Apostles, the General Epistles, and the Book of Revelation.

Of its prior history, little is known. It is speculated to have been written in Egypt and is sometimes associated with the 50 copies of the scriptures commissioned by Roman Emperor Constantine after his conversion to Christianity.

A paleographical study at the British Museum in 1938 found that the text had undergone several corrections. The first corrections were done by several scribes before the manuscript left the scriptorium. In the sixth or seventh century many alterations were made, which, according to a colophon at the end of the book of Esdras and Esther states, that the source of these alterations was “a very ancient manuscript that had been corrected by the hand of the holy martyr Pamphylus” (martyred AD 309). From this is concluded, that it had been in Caesarea Maritima in the 6th or 7th centuries. Uncorrected is the pervasive iotacism, especially of the εἰ diphthong.

The Codex Sinaiticus was shown to Constantin von Tischendorf on his third visit to the Monastery of Saint Catherine, at the foot of Mount Sinai in Egypt, in 1859. The first two trips had yielded parts of the Old Testament, some

found in a basket of manuscript pieces, which Tischendorf was told by a librarian “were rubbish which was to be destroyed by burning it in the ovens of the monastery.” (However, this story may have been a fabrication, or the manuscripts in question may have been unrelated to Codex Sinaiticus: Rev. J. Silvester Davies in 1863 quoted

“a monk of Sinai who ... stated that according to the librarian of the monastery the whole of Codex Sinaiticus had been in the library for many years and was marked in the ancient catalogues ... Is it likely ... that a manuscript known in the library catalogue would have been jettisoned in the rubbish basket.”

Indeed, it has been noted that the leaves were in “suspiciously good condition” for something found in the trash.) Tischendorf had been sent to search for manuscripts by Russia’s Tsar Alexander II, who was convinced there were still manuscripts to be found at the Sinai monastery. In May 1975, during restoration work, the monks of St. Catherine’s monastery discovered a room beneath the St. George Chapel which contained many parchment fragments. Among these fragments were twelve missing leaves from the Sinaiticus Old Testament.

The story of how von Tischendorf found the manuscript, which contained most of the Old Testament and all of the New Testament, has all the interest of a romance. Von Tischendorf reached the monastery on January 31; but his inquiries appeared to be fruitless. On February 4, he had resolved to return home without having gained his object:

On the afternoon of this day I was taking a walk with the steward of the convent in the neighbourhood, and as we returned, towards sunset, he begged me to take some refreshment with him in his cell. Scarcely had he entered the room, when, resuming our former subject of conversation, he said: “And I, too, have read a Septuagint” — i.e. a copy of the Greek translation made by the Seventy. And so saying, he took down from the corner of the room a bulky kind of volume, wrapped up in a red cloth, and laid it before me. I unrolled the cover, and discovered, to my great surprise, not only those very fragments which, fifteen years before, I had taken out of the basket, but also other parts of the Old Testament, the New

Testament complete, and, in addition, the Epistle of Barnabas and a part of the Shepherd of Hermas.

After some negotiations, he obtained possession of this precious fragment. James Bentley gives an account of how this came about, prefacing it with the comment, "Tischendorf therefore now embarked on the remarkable piece of duplicity which was to occupy him for the next decade, which involved the careful suppression of facts and the systematic denigration of the monks of Mount Sinai." [5] He conveyed it to Tsar Alexander, who appreciated its importance and had it published as nearly as possible in facsimile, so as to exhibit correctly the ancient handwriting. The Tsar sent the monastery 9,000 rubles by way of compensation.

Regarding Tischendorf's role in the transfer to Saint Petersburg, there are several views. Although when parts of Genesis and Book of Numbers were later found in the bindings of other books, they were amicably sent to Tischendorf, the codex is currently regarded by the monastery as having been stolen, is a view hotly contested by several scholars in Europe. In a more neutral spirit, New Testament scholar Bruce Metzger writes:

Certain aspects of the negotiations leading to the transfer of the codex to the Czar's possession are open to an interpretation that reflects adversely on Tischendorf's candour and good faith with the monks at St. Catherine's. For a recent account intended to exculpate him of blame, see Erhard Lauch's article 'Nichts gegen Tischendorf' in *Bekanntnis zur Kirche: Festgabe für Ernst Sommerlath zum 70. Geburtstag* (Berlin, c. 1961); for an account that includes a hitherto unknown receipt given by Tischendorf to the authorities at the monastery promising to return the manuscript from St. Petersburg 'to the Holy Confraternity of Sinai at its earliest request', see Ihor Ševčenko's article 'New Documents on Tischendorf and the Codex Sinaiticus', published in the journal *Scriptorium*, xviii (1964) pp. 55-80.

For many decades, the Codex was preserved in the Russian National Library. In 1933, the Soviet Union sold the codex to the British Library for £100,000. Visitors in our day report that the monks at St. Catherine's Monastery display the receipt they received from Tischendorf for the Codex, in a frame that hangs upon the wall.

One theological controversy arising from the content of the Codex Sinaiticus are the different writing styles in the Gospel of Mark, indicating the addition of the Resurrection in a different, more informal hand (possibly to an earlier, shorter version of Mark that finished with the empty Tomb).

Present Location

The codex is now split into four unequal portions: 347 leaves in the British Library in London, 12 leaves and 14 fragments in St. Catherine's Monastery of Sinai, 43 leaves in the Leipzig University Library, and fragments of 3 leaves in the Russian National Library in St Petersburg.

In June 2005, a joint project to produce a new digital edition of the manuscript (involving all four holding libraries) and a series of other studies was announced. This will include the use of hyperspectral imaging to photograph the manuscripts to look for hidden information such as erased or faded text. This is to be done in cooperation with the British Library. (2010: the project continues at www.codexsinaiticus.org/en/manuscript.aspx.)

Bibliography

Bruce M. Metzger, *The Text of the New Testament, its Transmission, Corruption and Restoration*, Oxford University Press, 1992, p. 46.

Skeat, T. C. "The Last Chapter in the History of the Codex Sinaiticus." *Novum Testamentum*. Vol. 42, Fasc. 3, Jul., 2000. p. 313

Davies words are from a letter published in *The Guardian* on 27 May 1863, as quoted by J.K. Elliott in *Codex Sinaiticus and the Simonides Affair*, (Thessaloniki: Patriarchal Institute for Patristic Studies, 1982), p. 16; Elliott in turn is quoted by Michael D. Peterson in his essay "Tischendorf and the Codex Sinaiticus: the Saga Continues", in *The Church and the Library*, ed. Papademetriou and Sopko (Boston: Somerset Hall Press, 2005), p. 77. See also notes 2 and 3, p. 90, in Papademetriou.

Constantin von Tischendorf, *The Discovery of the Sinaitic Manuscript, Extract from Constantin von Tischendorf, When Were Our Gospels Written? An Argument by Constantine Tischendorf. With a Narrative of the Discovery of the Sinaitic Manuscript* [New York: American Tract Society, 1866].

James Bentley, *Secrets of Mount Sinai* (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1986), p. 95.

This entry incorporates text from the public domain Easton's Bible Dictionary, originally published in 1897. The editors accessed this article from Wikipedia October 25, 2007.

Henry Tompkins Anderson was born in Caroline County, Va., January 27, 1812. His parents were natives of that State and were of the Baptist faith; however, they were liberal in their views. The early training of young Anderson was in harmony, in a large measure, with the simple teachings of the Bible. In his father's home the Bible was a daily textbook, and its teaching had a powerful influence upon the youthful mind of H. T. Anderson. At the age of twenty-one he



confessed his faith in his Lord and was baptized by his elder brother. His brother had left the Baptist Church and was only a Christian. Henry T. renewed his prayerful study of the Bible and made rapid progress in developing his spiritual life. He began to preach in May, 1833, about ten months after his baptism.

He had a unique method of studying the Scriptures. He left nothing without mastering to the best of his ability every word and sentence of the New Testament. He had been educated in the best schools of Virginia at that time, and he brought his learning into use in the study of the New Testament. He began early to study the New Testament in the original Greek as well as in the English. He became as familiar with the Greek text of the New Testament as he was with the English text. He never ceased to study the New Testament in Greek.

He remained in Virginia and preached in his native county and surrounding counties until 1837, at which time he moved to Kentucky, and taught school for a number of years in Southern Kentucky. He never ceased

to preach the gospel as opportunity was given him. He preached much in Christian and Todd counties. In 1841 he was invited to come to Nashville, Tenn. He accepted the invitation and labored with the congregation in Nashville for several months. Part of this time he made his home with Tolbert Fanning, who lived near Nashville. In 1847 he was called to preach for the Walnut Street Church, Louisville, Ky., and continued his work with that church for six years. After leaving the Walnut Street Church he resumed his teaching and taught successfully in various parts of Kentucky.

In 1861 he began the translation of the New Testament from the Greek into the English language. He gave the best part of his life to this work. He levied tribute on all of the resources of his classical mind and liberal education and gave all to the great task of translating the New Testament. This was the masterpiece of his life's work. He saw from the reading of the Authorized Version that there was a need for this translation, and with a consecrated heart he dedicated his all to the task. He speaks of his work as follows: "The work has been carried on under many adverse circumstances, but, by the good providence of God, it has been completed." He was about three and a half years making this translation. After he had completed it he breathed a prayer of thanksgiving to God for permitting him to finish the task. He sent his translation out with this prayer: "May it go forth, under the divine blessing, to establish and comfort the hearts of those who love the truth." Many scholars have pronounced this translation the best in the English language. Certainly it has many merits and is a monument to the love, scholarship, and prayerful work of a man who loved supremely the word of God. The brotherhood has been blessed and the literature of the disciples of Christ has been enriched by this very valuable contribution in the field of translation.

Henry T. Anderson had a strong mind which was adorned with classical training. His preaching was not so

eloquent, but simple and practical. He was no pulpit orator and laid no claims to such, but he was a teacher both in the classroom and in the pulpit. He was no lover of money, but was contented with just enough food and raiment to live upon. Oftentimes, like many other faithful preachers of the gospel then, he struggled through much poverty and suffering. He was very poorly supported both as a teacher and a preacher. It is thought that the brotherhood generally did not know of his deep poverty and necessity of the simple things of life. He did not possess those winning traits of character which draw people very close to him. He was kind and gentle to all, but he was a student. He was so absorbed in his study that he had not time, as he thought, to make and retain friends. Possibly he saw this weakness, but his love for study caused him to neglect the cultivation of the society of his brethren and sisters. He suffered in poverty without complaint. He did not censure the church or his brethren for his poverty.

He believed firmly in the word of God. He trusted in God to bring all things to Christ for his own glory and the salvation of his servant. He had firm convictions, and he had the courage to stand by these convictions. He did not believe that a Christian should take vengeance or retaliate. In the prime of his manhood, under the solemn conviction that Christians are not allowed to take vengeance or retaliate, he submitted gracefully to a scourging or whipping from one who had become offended at him. He did not complain, but took the chastisement in the name of the Lord and suffered meekly without any effort to strike back. He had complete mastery of himself. He had the courage and determination to suffer for Christ's sake.

Probably no one had a faith more simple and wonderful than did H. T. Anderson. While he was poor with respect to the worldly things of this life, yet he was rich in faith and strong and courageous in his conviction. When he began his translation of the New Testament, he had a

large family to support and a very meager salary or income; yet he believed that the Lord would provide. In speaking of his work in translating the New Testament, he said that the Lord did provide and would continue to do so unto the end.

H. T. Anderson was a “man of one book.” He studied the Christian religion only; and the Bible, either in Greek or English, was the only book he wanted or would have. He had no desire to study other matters. He may have made a mistake in not studying more in a general way, for near the close of his life he unfortunately gave utterance to some undigested metaphysical conclusions which were held against him. Many made his conclusions a ground of criticism. The enemies of the truth used them as weapons against the truth. If he had given his attention to the study of these questions earlier in life, he would not have made such a blunder, and the enemies would not have had the occasion to turn much of his good life and teaching into weapons against the truth.

He was forced near the close of his life to give his services to the government for bread. He accepted a governmental position of minor importance and went to Washington, D. C., and labored hard for his meat and bread. This was sad, as he desired to give all of his time to the study of the Bible and the teaching of the same to his fellows. He was stricken with disease and suffered extremely before his death. He died in the city of Washington, September 19, 1872. He had a pilgrimage on earth of sixty years, eight months, and eight days. He died in the full assurance of the Christian faith.

Biographical Sketches of Gospel Preachers, H. Leo Boles, GA c.1932 page 165-169. Information with thanks from Scott Harp, www.restoration.com.

CODEX SINAITICUS:

The H. T. Anderson New Testament

with the additions of
The Sonnini Manuscript
The Letter of Barnabas
The Shepherd of Hermas
The Didachē

Codex Sinaiticus:
According to Matthew

Matthew 1

1 The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begot Isaac: Isaac begot Jacob: Jacob begot Judah and his brothers:

3 Judah begot Pharez and Zerah of Tamar: Pharez begot Hezron: Hezron begot Ram:

4 Ram begot Amminadab: Amminadab begot Nashon: Nashon begot Salmon:

5 Salmon begot Boaz of Rahab: Boaz begot Obed of Ruth: Obed begot Jesse:

6 Jesse begot David the king. David begot Solomon of the wife of Uriah:

7 Solomon begot Rehoboam: Rehoboam begot Abijah: Abijah begot Asa:

8 Asa begot Jehosaphat: Jehosaphat begot Jehoram: Jehoram begot Uzziah:

9 Uzziah begot Jotham: Jotham begot Ahaz: Ahaz begot Hezekiah:

10 Hezekiah begot Manasseh: Manasseh begot Amon: Amon begot Josiah:

11 Josiah begot Jeconiah and his brothers about the time of the removal to Babylon.

12 But after the removal to Babylon, Jeconiah begot Shealtiel: Shealtiel begot Zerubbabel:

13 Zerubbabel begot Abihud: Abihud begot Eliakim: Eliakim begot Azor:

14 Azor begot Zadoc: Zadoc begot Achim: Achim begot Eliud:

15 Eliud begot Eleazar: Eleazar begot Matthan: Matthan begot Jacob:

16 Jacob begot Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham till David, are fourteen generations; and from David till the removal to Babylon, are fourteen generations; and from the removal to Babylon till Christ, are fourteen generations.

18 But the birth of Jesus Christ was thus: After his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit.

19 And Joseph her husband, being just and not willing to make her an example, intended to put her away privately.

20 But while he thought of these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying: Joseph, son of David, fear not to

take to thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit.

21 And she shall bear a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for he shall save his people from their sins.

22 And all this was done, that it might be fulfilled that was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying:

23 Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bear a son, and they shall call his name Immanuel, which is, when translated, God with us.

24 And Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord had commanded him, and took to him his wife; and knew her not till she had brought forth a son; and he called his name Jesus.

Matthew 2

1 But after Jesus had been born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, Magi from the east came to Jerusalem,

2 saying: Where is he that has been born king of the Jews? For we saw his star at its rising, and have come to worship him.

3 And hearing it, king Herod was alarmed, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And he assembled all the chief priests and scribes of the people, and inquired of them where the Christ should be born.

5 And they said to him: In Bethlehem of Judea; for thus it is written by the prophet:

6 And thou, Bethlehem, land of Judah, art by no means the least among the princes of Judah; for out of thee shall come a Governor, who shall rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herod having secretly called the Magi, inquired of them strictly the time at which the star appeared;

8 and sending them to Bethlehem, said: Go, make strict inquiry for the young child: and when you have found him, bring me word, that I also may go and worship him.

9 And after hearing the king, they departed; and lo, the star which they had seen at its rising, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.

10 And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with very great joy.

11 And coming into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother; and falling down they worshipped him; and having opened their treasures they offered to him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.

12 And having been warned in a dream not to return to Herod, they withdrew into their own country by another way.

13 But after they had withdrawn, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying: Arise, and take the young

child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there till I bring thee word; for Herod is about to seek for the young child, to destroy him.

14 And he arose and took the young child and his mother, by night, and withdrew into Egypt,

15 and was there till the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled that was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying: Out of Egypt I called my Son.

16 Then Herod, seeing that he had been deceived by the Magi, was greatly enraged; and, having sent out, he slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all its borders, from the age of two years and under, according to the time which he had strictly inquired of the Magi.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet, saying:

18 A voice was heard in Ramah, wailing and great mourning: Rachel weeping for her children; and she would not be comforted because they are no more.

19 But after Herod had died, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 saying: Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead that sought the young child's life.

21 And he arose and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But hearing that Archelaus reigned in Judea, in place of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; but being warned in a dream, he withdrew into the regions of Galilee,

23 and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled that was spoken through the prophets: He shall be called a Nazarene.

Matthew 3

1 But in those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

2 saying: Repent, for the kingdom of the heavens is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of through Isaiah the prophet, saying: The voice of one crying in the wilderness. Prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 But the same John had his clothing of camel's hair, and a girdle of leather around his loins, and his food was locusts and wild honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about the Jordan,

6 and were baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 But seeing many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them: Brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the coming wrath?

8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of repentance,

9 and think not to say within yourselves: We have Abraham for a father; for I say to you that God is able of these stones to raise up children for Abraham.

10 And now the ax is lying at the root of the trees: every tree, therefore, that brings not forth good fruit is cut down, and thrown into the fire.

11 I indeed baptize you in water in order to repentance; but he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry: he will baptize you in the Holy Spirit and in fire:

12 whose winnowing shovel is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing floor, and gather his grain into the granary; but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

13 Then came Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan to John, to be baptized by him.

14 But he forbade him, saying: I have need to be baptized by thee, and comest thou to me?

15 But Jesus answered and said to him: Permit it now; for thus it becomes us to fulfill every righteous act. Then he permitted him.

16 And having been baptized, Jesus immediately went up from the water; and lo, the heavens were opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and coming upon him.

17 And lo, a voice from the heavens, saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Matthew 4

1 Then was Jesus led up by the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted by the devil.

2 And having fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward hungry.

3 And the tempter came and said to him: If thou art the Son of God, command that these stones become bread.

4 But he answered and said: It is written: Not by bread alone shall man live, but by every word that comes forth through the mouth of God.

5 Then the devil took him into the holy city, and set him on the wing of the temple.

6 and said to him: If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down; for it is written: He will give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall take thee up, lest thou strike thy foot against a stone.

7 Jesus said to him: Again it is written: Thou shalt not put the Lord thy God to the proof.

8 Again, the devil took him to a very high mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them,

9 and said to him: All these will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then Jesus says to him: Get hence, Satan; for it is written: The Lord thy God thou shalt worship, and him only shalt thou serve

11 Then the devil left him; and, behold, angels came and ministered to him.

12 But when he had heard that John was delivered up, he withdrew into Galilee;

13 and leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is on the sea, in the borders of Zebulon and Naphtali;

14 that it might be fulfilled that was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying:

15 The land of Zebulon, and the land of Naphtali, toward the sea, beyond the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles;

16 the people that sat in darkness saw great light; and upon those who sat in the region and shadow of death light arose.

17 From that time Jesus began to preach and to say: Repent, for the kingdom of the heavens is at hand.

18 And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, throwing a net into the sea, for they were fishers.

19 And he said to them: Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they immediately left their nets and followed him.

21 And going on thence, he saw other two brothers, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.

22 And immediately leaving the ship and their father, they followed him.

23 And he went about in the whole of Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and curing every disease and every malady among the people.

24 And his fame went abroad into the whole of Syria; and they brought to him all that were sick with various diseases, and that were afflicted with torments, and those possessed with demons, and lunatics, and paralytics; and he cured them.

25 And there followed him many multitudes from Galilee, and Decapolis, and Jerusalem, and Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

1 But seeing the multitudes, he went up into the mountain; and when he had sat down, his disciples came to him;

2 and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying:

3 Blessed are the poor in spirit; for theirs is the kingdom of the heavens.

4 Blessed are the meek; for they shall inherit the earth.

5 Blessed are they that mourn; for they shall be comforted.

6 Blessed are they that hunger and thirst for righteousness; for they shall be filled.

7 Blessed are the merciful; for they shall receive mercy.

8 Blessed are the pure in heart; for they shall see God.

9 Blessed are the peacemakers; for they shall be called sons of God.

10 Blessed are they that are persecuted for righteousness' sake; for theirs is the kingdom of the heavens.

11 Blessed are you when they shall reproach you, and persecute you, and say every evil thing against you falsely for my sake.

12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad; for great is your reward in the heavens; for so persecuted they the prophets that were before you.

13 You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt shall have become tasteless, by what means shall it be salted? It is then good for nothing but, after being cast out, to be trod upon by men.

14 You are the light of the world. A city that lies upon a mountain cannot be hid:

15 neither do men light a lamp and put it under the measure, but on the lampstand, and it gives light to all that are in the house.

16 So let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in the heavens.

17 Think not that I have come to destroy the law or the prophets: I have not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

18 For verily I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one yod or one point shall in no way pass from the law, till all be accomplished.

19 Whoever therefore shall make void one of the least of these commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of the heavens; but whoever shall do and teach, he shall be called great in the kingdom of the heavens,

20 For I say to you, that unless your righteousness shall be more abundant than that of the scribes and Pharisees, you can by no means enter into the kingdom of the heavens.

21 You have heard that it was said to the ancients: Thou shalt not kill; and whoever shall kill shall be liable to the judgment.

22 But I say to you, that whoever is angry with his brother shall be liable to the judgment; and whoever shall say to his brother.

Worthless fellow, shall be liable to the Sanhedrim; but whoever shall say: Thou fool, shall be liable to be cast into hellfire.

23 If therefore thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remember that thy brother has anything against thee,

24 leave there thy gift before the altar, and go, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thy opponent-at-law quickly, while thou art on the road with him, lest perhaps the opponent-at-law deliver thee to the judge, and the judge to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say to thee, thou shalt not come out thence, till thou shalt have paid the last farthing.

27 You have heard that it was said: Thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I say to you, That every one that looks on a woman to cherish desire, has already committed adultery with her in his heart.

29 But if thy right eye ensnares thee, pull it out, and throw it from thee; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members perish, and not that thy whole body be thrown into hell.

30 And if thy right hand ensnares thee, cut it off, and throw it from thee; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members perish, and not that thy whole body go away into hell.

31 And it has been said: Whoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a bill of divorce.

32 But I say to you, that whoever shalt put away his wife, unless on account of lewdness, causes her to commit adultery; and whoever shall marry her that is put away commits adultery.

33 Again: you have heard that it was said to the ancients: Thou shalt not swear falsely, but shalt pay to the Lord thy oaths.

34 But I say to you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is the throne of God;

35 nor by the earth, for it is his footstool; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King:

36 neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black.

37 But let your word be yes, yes; no, no; and that which is more than these is of the evil one.

38 You have heard that it was said: Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth.

39 But I say to you, that you resist not the injurious; but whoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also.

40 And to him that will go to law with thee, and take away thy coat, give up thy mantle also.

41 And whoever will impress thee to go one mile, go with him two.

42 Give to him that asks of thee, and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not away.

43 You have heard that it was said: Thou shalt love thy neighbor, and hate thy enemy.

44 But I say to you. Love your enemies, and pray for them that persecute you;

45 that you may become sons of your Father who is in the heavens; for he makes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends his rain on the just and the unjust.

46 For if you love them that love you, what reward have you? Do not even the publicans the same?

47 And if you salute your brethren only, what do you more? Do not even the heathen the same?

48 Be you therefore perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Matthew 6

1 But take heed that you do not your righteousness before men, to be seen by them: other wise you have no reward with your Father who is in the heavens.

2 When therefore thou wouldst do a charitable deed, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may be glorified by men. Verily I say to you: They have their reward in full.

3 But when thou doest a charitable deed, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand does;

4 that thy charitable deed may be in secret; and thy Father who sees in secret will reward thee.

5 And when you pray, you shall not be as the hypocrites; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Verily I say to you: They have their reward in full.

6 But thou, when thou prayest, go into thy closet; and having closed thy door, pray to thy Father who is in secret; and thy Father who sees in secret will reward thee.

7 But when you pray, use not vain repetitions as the heathens; for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not therefore like them; for your Father knows what things you have need of before you ask him.

9 In this way therefore pray you: Our Father who art in the heavens: hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done as in heaven also on earth.

11 Give us this day our needful bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors;

13 and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.

14 For if you forgive men their offenses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you;

15 but if you forgive not men, neither will your Father forgive your offenses.

16 And when you fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance; for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear to men to fast. Verily I say to you, They have their reward in full.

17 But do thou, when fasting, anoint thy head, and wash thy face,

18 that thou appear not to men to fast, but to thy Father who is in secret; and thy Father who sees in secret will reward thee.

19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures on the earth, where moth and rust consume, and where thieves break through and steal;

20 but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consumes, and where thieves do not break through nor steal.

21 For where thy treasure is, there will thy heart be also.

22 The lamp of the body is the eye. If thy eye be simple thy whole body shall be full of light;

23 but if thy eye be evil thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If then the light that is in thee is darkness, how great that darkness.

24 No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other or he will hold to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and Mammon.

25 For this reason I say to you: Be not anxious for your life what you shall eat, nor for your body what you shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the clothing?

26 Look at the birds of heaven, that they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into granaries; and yet your heavenly Father feeds them: are you not much better than they?

27 But which of you, by being anxious, can add one cubit to his age?

28 And why are you anxious about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they toil not, nor do they spin.

29 But I say to you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not clothed as one of these.

30 Now if God so clothes the herb of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?

31 Then, be not anxious, saying: What shall we eat, or what shall we drink, or with what shall we be clothed?

32 For after all these things do the Gentiles seek; for your heavenly Father knows that you need all these.

33 But seek first his kingdom and righteousness, and all these shall be given you in addition.

34 Be not therefore anxious for the morrow; for the morrow shall be anxious for itself. Sufficient for the day is its own evil.

Matthew 7

1 Judge not that you be not judged.

2 For with what judgment you judge, you shall be judged, and with what measure you measure, it shall be measured to you.

3 And why beholdest thou the splinter that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thy own eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother: Let me pull the splinter out of thy eye, and behold, the beam is in thy own eye.

5 Hypocrite, pull first the beam out of thy own eye, and then thou shalt see clearly to pull the splinter out of thy brother's eye.

6 Give not that which is holy to dogs, neither throw your pearls before swine, lest they trample them with their feet, and turn and tear you.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and you shall find: knock, and it shall be opened to you.

8 For every one that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, of whom should his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 or if he should also ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If then you being evil know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in the heavens give good gifts to those who ask him?

12 All things therefore whatever you would that men should do to you, even so do you to them; for this is the law and the prophets.

13 Enter in through the strait gate; for wide the gate and broad the way that leads to destruction; and many are they that go in through it;

14 for strait is the gate, and narrow the way that leads to life, and few are they that find it.

15 Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but within are ravenous wolves.

16 By their fruits you shall know them. Do men gather grapes from thorns, or figs from thistles?

17 So every good tree produces goodly fruit; but the corrupt tree produces evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot produce evil fruit; neither can a corrupt tree produce goodly fruit.

19 Every tree that does not produce goodly fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.

20 Therefore, by their fruits you shall know them.

21 Not every one that says to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of the heavens, but he that does the will of my Father who is in the heavens.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy by thy name, and by thy name cast out demons, and by thy name do many mighty works?

23 And then will I confess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity.

24 Every one therefore that hears these words of mine and does them, shall be likened to a wise man, who built his house on the rock.

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and they beat upon that house, and it fell not; for it was founded on the rock.

26 And every one that hears these words of mine, and does them not, shall be likened to a foolish man who built his house upon the sand.

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and they beat upon that house, and it fell; and great was its fall.

28 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these words, the multitudes were astonished at his teaching;

29 for he taught them as having authority and not as their scribes.

Matthew 8

1 And when he had come down from the mountain, many multitudes followed him.

2 And behold, a leper came and worshipped him, saying: Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And he stretched forth his hand and touched him, saying: I will, be clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

4 And Jesus said to him: See that thou tell no one; but go, show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.

5 And when he had entered into Capernaum, there came to him a centurion beseeching him,

6 and saying: Lord, my servant lies in my house palsied, fearfully tormented.

7 He says to him: I will come and cure him.

8 But the centurion answering said: Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof; but speak only in a word, and my servant shall be restored to health.

9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me; and I say to this one: Go, and he goes; and to another: Come, and he comes; and to my servant: Do this, and he does it.

10 And hearing it Jesus was filled with admiration, and said to those that followed: Verily I say to you, not even in Israel have I found so great faith.

11 But I say to you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall recline at tables with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of the heavens;

12 but the sons of the kingdom shall go forth into the darkness that is without: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said to the centurion: Go; as thou hast believed, be it done for thee. And the servant was restored to health in that hour.

14 And Jesus came into the house of Peter, and saw his mother-in-law lying and ill of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she arose and ministered to him.

16 But when evening had come, they brought to him many possessed with demons; and he cast out the spirits with a word, and cured all that were sick,

17 that it might be fulfilled that was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying: Himself took our infirmities and bore our diseases.

18 But Jesus seeing many multitudes about him, gave orders to depart to the other side.

19 And a scribe came and said to him: Teacher, I will follow thee wherever thou goest.

20 And Jesus said to him: The foxes have dens, and the birds of the heaven have roosts, but the Son of man has not where he may lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said to him: Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father.

22 But he said to him: Follow me, and let the dead bury their own dead.

23 And after he had entered the ship, his disciples followed him.

24 And behold, a great tempest arose in the sea, so that the ship was covered by the waves; but he was sleeping.

25 And they came and awoke him, saying: Lord, save, we perish.

26 And he says to them: Why are you fearful, O you of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 And the men were astonished, saying: What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

28 And when he had come to the other side, into the country of the Gadarenes, there met him two men possessed with demons, coming out of the tombs, very fierce, so that no one could pass by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying: What have we to do with thee, Son of God? Hast thou come hither before the time, to torment us?

30 And there was, at a distance from them, a herd of many swine feeding.

31 And the demons besought him saying: If thou dost cast us out, send us into the herd of swine.

32 And he said to them: Go. And they came out, and went away into the swine; and behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea, and died in the waters.

33 But those who fed them fled, and going away into the city told all things, and what had happened to those possessed with the demons.

34 And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and seeing him they besought that he would depart from their borders;

Matthew 9

1 And he entered a ship and passed over, and came into his own city.

2 And behold, they brought to him a palsied man lying on a bed. And Jesus seeing their faith, said to the palsied man: Take courage, son, thy sins are for given.

3 And behold, some of the scribes said within themselves: This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus perceiving their thoughts, said: Why think you evil in your hearts?

5 For which is easier, to say: Thy sins are forgiven; or to say: Arise and walk?

6 But that you may know that the Son of man on earth has authority to forgive sins, then he says to the palsied man: Arise, take up thy bed, and go to thy house.

7 And he arose and went away to his house.

8 And the multitudes saw and were afraid, and glorified God who had given such authority to men.

9 And Jesus passing by thence saw a man, called Matthew, sitting at the customhouse, and said to him: Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

10 And it came to pass that, as he reclined at tables in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and reclined at table with Jesus and his disciples,

11 And the Pharisees seeing it said to his disciples: Why does your teacher eat with the publicans and sinners?

12 But hearing it he said: Those who are in health have no need of a physician, but those who are sick.

13 But go and learn what "I desire mercy and not sacrifice" means. For I came not to call righteous men, but sinners.

14 Then came to him the disciples of John, saying: Why do we and the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said to them: Can the sons of the bride chamber mourn while the bride groom is with them? But days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast.

16 No one puts a piece of unfulled cloth on an old garment; for that which fills it up takes from the garment, and a worse rent is made.

17 Neither do they put new wine into old bottles; otherwise, the bottles break, and the wine runs out, and the bottles perish; but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved together.

18 While he was speaking these things to them, behold, a ruler came in and worshipped him, saying: My daughter just now died; but come and lay thy hand on her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 And behold, a woman, that had had an issue of blood for twelve years, came behind and touched the fringe of his mantle;

21 for she said within herself: If I may only touch his mantle, I shall be saved.

22 But he turned and saw her and said: Daughter, take courage; thy faith has saved thee. And the woman was saved from that hour.

23 And Jesus entered the house of the ruler and saw the pipers and the multitude making a noise, and said:

24 Withdraw, for the maid is not dead, but sleeps. And they derided him.

25 But when the multitude had been put out, he went in and took her hand, and the maid arose.

26 And the fame of this went forth into that whole land.

27 And as Jesus was passing by thence, two blind men followed him, crying out and saying: Have mercy on us, Son of David.

28 And after he had come into the house, the blind men came to him; and Jesus said to them: Believe you that I am able to do this? They said to him: Yes, Lord.

29 Then he touched their eyes, saying: According to your faith be it done to you.

30 And their eyes were opened. And Jesus charged them in a threatening manner, saying: See that no one know it.

31 But they went out and published him abroad in all that land.

32 But as they were going out, behold, they brought to him a man dumb possessed with a demon.

33 And after the demon had been cast out, the dumb man spoke. And the multitudes were astonished, saying: Never did it appear thus in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said: By the prince of the demons casts he out the demons.

35 And Jesus went about all the cities and the villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and curing every disease and every infirmity.

36 But seeing the multitudes he was moved with pity for them, because they were troubled and scattered as sheep that had no shepherd.

37 Then said he to his disciples: The harvest indeed is great, but the laborers few:

38 pray therefore the Lord of the harvest that he send forth laborers into his harvest.

Matthew 10

1 And he called to him his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits so that they could cast them out, and cure every disease and every infirmity.

2 But the names of the twelve apostles are these: the first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; and James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother;

3 Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus;

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot who also delivered him up.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth after he had charged them, saying: Into the road to the Gentiles go not, and into a city of the Samaritans enter not;

6 but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And as you go, preach saying: The kingdom of the heavens is at hand.

8 Cure the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out the demons: freely you received, freely give.

9 Provide not gold, neither silver, nor brass in your girdles;

10 no bag for the journey, neither two coats, nor sandals, nor a staff; for the laborer is worthy of his support.

11 Into whatever city or village you enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till you go forth.

12 And when you enter a house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it; but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 And whoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when you go out of that house or city, shake off the dust from your feet.

15 Verily, I say to you, it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, than for that city.

16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be come therefore wise as serpents, and guileless as doves.

17 But beware of men; for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they will scourge you;

18 and before governors also and kings shall you be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and the Gentiles.

19 But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what you shall speak; for there shall be given you in that hour what you shall speak;

20 for you are not the speakers, but it is the Spirit of my Father that speaks in you.

21 And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father the child; and children shall rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death.

22 And you shall be hated by all because of my name; but he that endures to the end shall be saved.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the other for verily I say to you, you shall not have made the circuit of the cities of Israel, till the Son of man shall have come.

24 A disciple is not above the teacher, nor a servant above his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he become as his teacher, and the servant as his lord. If they have surnamed the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more those of his household.

26 Be not then afraid of them; for nothing is concealed that shall not be revealed, and hid that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkness, speak in the light; and what you hear in the ear, proclaim on the housetops.

28 And be not afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? And yet not one of them shall fall to the ground without your Father.

30 But even the hairs of your head are all numbered.

31 Fear not therefore: you are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Every one therefore that shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father who is in the heavens.

33 But whoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in the heavens.

34 Think not that I came to send peace on the earth, I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I came to set a man in opposition to his father, and a daughter to her mother, and a daughter-in-law to her mother-in-law;

36 and a man's enemies shall be those of his household.

37 He that loves father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me, and he that loves son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me; 38 and he that does not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me.

39 He that finds his life shall lose it, and he that loses his life for my sake shall find it.

40 He that receives you receives me, and he that receives me receives him that sent me.

41 He that receives a prophet because he is a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receives a righteous man because he is a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward.

42 And whoever shall give one of these little ones only a cup of cold water to drink, because he is a disciple, verily I say to you, he shall not lose his reward.

Matthew 11

1 And it came to pass when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 But John, having heard in prison of the works of Christ, sent by his disciples,

3 and said to him: Art thou he that comes, or look we for another?

4 And answering, Jesus said to them: Go and tell John what things you hear and see;

5 the blind receive sight and the lame walk, lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised, and the poor have the gospel preached to them;

6 and blessed is he whoever shall not be offended at me.

7 But as these were going away, Jesus began to say to the multitudes concerning John: What went you out into the wilderness to see? a reed shaken by the wind?

8 But what went you out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.

9 But why did you go out? To see a prophet? Yes, I say to you, and more than a prophet.

10 This is he of whom it is written: Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say to you, among those born of women there has not arisen a greater than John the Baptist; but the least in the kingdom of the heavens is greater than he.

12 But from the days of John the Baptist till now, the kingdom of the heavens is taken by force, and men of force seize upon it eagerly.

13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied till John;

14 and if you will receive it, he is Elijah that was to come.

15 He that has ears, let him hear.

16 But to what shall I liken this generation? It is like children sitting in the markets, who call to the others,

17 and say: We piped to you, and you did not dance: we wailed, and you did not lament.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say: He has a demon.

19 The Son of man has come eating and drinking, and they say: Behold, a man, a glutton and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. And yet Wisdom is justified by her works.

20 Then he began to upbraid the cities in which most of his mighty works had been done, because they repented not.

21 Alas for thee, Chorazin; Alas for thee, Bethsaida; for if the mighty works which have been done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 Furthermore I say to you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted to heaven? Thou shalt be brought down to Hades; for if the mighty works which have been done in thee had been done in Sodom, it would have remained to this day.

24 Furthermore I say to you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee.

25 At that time Jesus answered and said: I thank thee, Father, Lord of heaven and of earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them to babes:

26 yes, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 All things have been delivered to me by my Father; and no one knows the Son but the Father: neither knows any one the Father but the Son, and he to whomever the Son will reveal him.

28 Come to me, all you that labor and are heavily burdened, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart, and you shall find rest for your souls.

30 For my yoke is good, and my burden is light.

Matthew 12

1 At that time Jesus went, on the sabbath, through the fields of grain: and his disciples were hungry, and they began to pull the ears of grain and to eat.

2 And the Pharisees seeing it said to him: Behold, thy disciples are doing what it is not lawful to do on the sabbath.

3 But he said to them: Have you not read what David did, when he was hungry, and they that were with him?

4 how he entered the house of God, and ate of the loaves of the presence, which it was not lawful for him to eat, nor for those who were with him, but for the priests only?

5 or have you not read in the law, that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless?

6 But I say to you, that something greater than the temple is here.

7 And if you had known what "I desire mercy and not sacrifice" means, you would not have condemned the blameless.

8 For the Son of man is Lord of the sabbath.

9 And he departed thence, and came into their synagogue.

10 And behold, a man had a withered hand; and they asked him, saying: Is it lawful to cure on the sabbath? that they might accuse him.

11 But he said to them: What man shall there be of you, who shall have one sheep; and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it up?

12 How much better then, a man is than a sheep: so then it is lawful to do well on the sabbath.

13 Then he says to the man: Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored to soundness as the other.

14 But the Pharisees went out and took counsel against him, that they might destroy him.

15 But Jesus perceived it and withdrew thence. And many folk followed him, and he cured them all,

16 and charged them that they should not make him known,

17 that it might be fulfilled that was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying:

18 Behold my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall declare judgment to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not contend nor cry out, neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and a smoking wick shall he not extinguish, till he send forth judgment to victory.

21 And in his name shall nations trust.

22 Then was brought to him a demoniac blind and dumb; and he cured him so that the dumb man spoke and saw.

23 And all the multitudes were astonished and said: Is this the Son of David?

24 But the Pharisees hearing it said: This man does not cast out the demons but by Beelzebub the prince of the demons.

25 And knowing their thoughts he said to them: Every kingdom divided against itself is made desolate; and no city or house divided against itself shall stand.

26 And if Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself: how then shall his kingdom stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out the demons, by whom do your sons cast them out? For this reason they shall be your judges.

28 But if I by the Spirit of God cast out the demons, then has the kingdom of God already come upon you.

29 Or how can any one enter the house of the strong man and seize on his instruments, unless he first bind the strong man, and then he will plunder his house?

30 He that is not with me is against me, and he that gathers not with me scatters.

31 For this reason I say to you: Every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven men, but the blasphemy of the Spirit shall not be forgiven.

32 And who ever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this age, nor in that to come.

33 Either make the tree goodly and its fruit goodly, or make the tree corrupt and its fruit corrupt; for by the fruit the tree is known.

34 Brood of vipers, how can you being evil speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.

35 The good man out of his good ; treasure brings forth good things; and the evil man out of his evil treasure brings forth evil things.

36 But I say to you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give an account of it in the day of judgment.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 Then answered him some of the scribes and Pharisees, saying: Teacher, we wish to see a sign from thee.

39 But he answered and said to them: A wicked and adulterous generation seeks for a sign and no sign shall be given it but the sign of Jonah the prophet.

40 For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the great fish so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and lo, something, greater than Jonah is here.

42 The queen of the south shall rise in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it, because she came from the most distant parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and lo, something greater than Solomon is here.

43 When the unclean spirit has gone out from the man, he goes through dry places seeking rest, and finds none.

44 Then he says: I will return into my house whence I came. And he comes and finds it unoccupied, and swept, and adorned.

45 Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first. So shall it be also with this wicked generation.

46 While he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brothers stood without seeking to speak to him.

47 And some one said to him: Behold, thy mother and thy brothers stand with out, seeking to speak to thee.

48 But he answered and said to him that told him: Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?

49 And stretching forth his hand over his disciples, he said: Behold my mother and my brothers;

50 for whoever shall have done the will of my Father who is in the heavens, this is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Matthew 13

1 In that day Jesus went out of the house, and sat by the sea.

2 And many multitudes came together to him so that he entered a ship and sat down, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spoke many things to them in parables, saying: Behold, the sower went forth to sow.

4 And, as he sowed, some fell by the way, and the birds came and ate them up.

5 But others fell on rocky places where they had not much earth; and they immediately sprung up because they had no depth of earth;

6 but when the sun had risen, they I were scorched, and because they had no root they withered.

7 But others fell on thorns, and the thorns grew up and choked them.

8 But others I fell on good ground, and brought forth fruit, one a hundredfold, one sixty, one thirty.

9 He that has ears, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came and said to him: Why speakest thou to them in parables?

11 And he answered and said: Because to you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of the heavens, but to them it is not given.

12 For whoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but whoever has not, even that which he has shall be taken from him.

13 For this reason I speak to them in parables, because when seeing they see not, and when hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah which says: By hearing you shall hear, and shall not understand, and seeing you shall see, and shall not perceive.

15 For the heart of this people has become fat, and with their ears they hear heavily, and their eyes they have closed, lest perhaps they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears and understand with their heart, and turn, and I should restore them to health.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear.

17 Verily I say to you: Many prophets and righteous men desired to see what you see, and saw not, and to hear what you hear, and heard not.

18 Hear you then the parable of him that sowed.

19 When any one hears the word of the kingdom, and understands it not, the wicked one comes and snatches away that which is sown in his heart. This is he that was sown by the way.

20 But he that was sown on the rocky places is he that hears the word, and immediately with joy receives it;

21 yet he has no root in himself, but endures for a while; and when affliction or persecution arises because of the word, he immediately takes offense.

22 But he that was sown among thorns is he that hears the word, and the care of the age and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful.

23 But he that was sown on good ground, is he that hears the word and understands it, who also bears fruit, and produces, one a hundred fold, one sixty, one thirty.

24 Another parable laid he before them, saying: The kingdom of the heavens is likened to a man that sowed good seed in his field.

25 But while the men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares over in the midst of the wheat and went away.

26 But when the blade sprung up and produced fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 And the servants of the master of the house came and said to him; Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? Whence then has it tares?

28 He said to them: An enemy did this. And the servants say to him: Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said: No, lest perhaps while gathering the tares you root up the wheat together with them.

30 Let both grow together till the harvest, and in time of harvest I will say to the reapers: Gather first the tares, and bind them into bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my granary.

31 Another parable laid he before them, saying: The kingdom of the heavens is like a grain of mustard, which a man took and sowed in his field:

32 which indeed is less than all the seeds; but when it has grown, is greater than the garden plants, and becomes a tree, so that the birds of heaven come and roost in its branches.

33 Another parable spoke he to them: The kingdom of the heavens is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of flour, till the whole was leavened.

34 All these things spoke Jesus to the multitudes in parables, and without a parable spoke he nothing to them,

35 that it might be fulfilled that was spoken through the prophet Isaiah, saying: I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things concealed from the foundation.

36 Then dismissing the multitudes he came into the house. And his disciples came to him, saying: Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 And he answered and said: He that sows the good seed is the Son of man:

38 the field is the world: the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; but the tares are the sons of the wicked one:

39 the enemy that sowed them is the devil: the harvest is the conclusion of the age, and the reapers are angels.

40 As then the tares are collected and burned in fire, so shall it be in the conclusion of the age.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause offense, and them that do iniquity,

42 and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that has ears, let him hear.

44 The kingdom of the heavens is like treasure hid in the field, which a man found and hid, and for joy over it he went and sold all that he had, and bought that field.

45 Again: the kingdom of the heavens is like a man, a merchant seeking goodly pearls:

46 when he had found one pearl of great value, he went and sold all that he had and bought it.

47 Again: the kingdom of the heavens is like a net that was cast into the sea and gathered of every kind:

48 which, when it was full, they drew to the shore, and sitting down they gathered the good into baskets, but threw the bad away.

49 So shall it be in the conclusion of the age: the angels shall come forth, and separate the wicked from among the righteous,

50 and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

51 Have you understood all these things? They say to him, Yes.

52 And he said to them: Therefore, every scribe instructed in the kingdom of the heavens is like a man, a master of a house, who brings forth out of his treasury things new and old.

53 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of these parables, he departed thence.

54 And he came into his own country, and taught them in their synagogue, so that they were astonished and said: Whence has this man this wisdom and the mighty works?

55 Is not this the son of the carpenter? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers, James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judah?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then has this man all these things?

57 And they were offended at him. But Jesus said to them, A prophet is not without honor unless in his own country and in his own house.

58 And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.

Matthew 14

1 At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

2 and said to his servants: This is John the Baptist: he has risen from the dead, and for this reason the powers are active within him.

3 For Herod having taken John, had bound him, and put him away in prison, because of Herodias the wife of Philip his brother.

4 For John said to him: It is not lawful for thee to have her.

5 And intending to kill him, he was afraid of the multitude, because they held him as a prophet.

6 But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced in the midst and pleased Herod:

7 wherefore he promised with an oath to give her whatever she would ask.

8 And she having been before instigated by her mother, said: Give me here in a dish the head of John the Baptist.

9 And the king though grieved, because of the oaths and the guests commanded it to be given,

10 and sent and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a dish and given to the maiden; and she carried it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came and took away the corpse and buried it, and came and told Jesus.

13 And when Jesus heard it, he withdrew thence in a ship to a desert place apart; and the multitudes hearing it followed him on foot from the cities.

14 And he came forth and saw a great multitude, and was moved with pity for them and cured their sick.

15 But when evening had come, the disciples came to him, saying: The place is desert, and the hour has already passed: therefore send the multitudes away, that they may go into the villages and buy themselves food.

16 But he said to them: They have no need to go away; do you give them to eat.

17 And they say to him: We have here nothing but five loaves and two fishes.

18 And he said: Bring them hither to me.

19 And after commanding the multitudes to recline on the grass, he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and having looked up to heaven he blessed, and broke, and gave the bread to the disciples, and the disciples gave it to the multitudes.

20 And all ate and were filled; and they took up what remained of the broken pieces twelve traveling baskets full.

21 And those who had eaten were about five thousand men besides women and children.

22 And he compelled the disciples to enter the ship, and go before him to the other side, till he should send the multitudes away.

23 And having sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray. And when evening had come he was there alone.

24 But the ship now in the midst of the sea was tossed by the waves; for the wind was against it.

25 And at the fourth watch of the night, he came to them walking over the sea.

26 And seeing him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying: It is a specter; and they cried out for fear.

27 But he immediately spoke to them, saying: Take courage, it is I: be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said: Lord, if it is thou, command me to come to thee over the waters.

29 And he said: Come. And going down from the ship Peter walked over the waters, and came to Jesus.

30 But seeing the wind he was afraid; and beginning to sink he cried out, saying: Lord, save me.

31 And Jesus immediately stretched forth his hand, and took hold of him, and said to him: O thou of little faith, why didst thou doubt?

32 And after they had come up into the ship the wind ceased.

33 And those in the ship worshipped him, saying: Truly thou art the Son of God.

34 And they passed over and came to the land of Gennesaret.

35 And when they had knowledge of him, the men of that place sent into that whole region round about, and brought to him all that were sick;

36 and they besought him that they might only touch the fringe of his mantle; and as many as touched were thoroughly restored to health.

Matthew 15

1 Then came to Jesus Pharisees and scribes from Jerusalem, saying:

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But answering he said to them: Why do you also transgress the commandment of God because of your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying: Honor thy father and thy mother; and he that curses father or mother let him surely die;

5 but you say: Whoever shall say to his father or his mother: That, by whatever thou mightest receive aid from me, is a gift, he shall no more honor his father or his mother.

6 And you have made the law of God of no effect because of your traditions.

7 Hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying: This people honors me with their lips, but their heart is far distant from me.

9 But in vain do they show devotion to me, teaching teachings the commandments of men.

10 And calling the multitude to him he said to them: Hear and understand;

11 not that which enters the mouth defiles the man; but that which comes forth out of the mouth, this defiles the man.

12 Then came the disciples and said to him: Knowest thou that the Pharisees, when they heard the saying, were offended?

13 But he answered and said: Every plant that my heavenly Father has not planted shall be rooted up.

14 Let them alone; they are blind leaders of the blind; and if a blind man lead a blind man, both shall fall into the pit.

15 But Peter answered and said to him: Explain to us the parable.

16 And he said; Are you also yet without understanding?

17 Do you not perceive that every thing that enters the mouth goes into the belly, and is cast out into the sink?

18 But the things that come forth from the mouth proceed from the heart; and these defile the man.

19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, lewdness, thefts, false testimonies, blasphemies.

20 These are the things that defile the man; but to eat with unwashed hands defiles not the man.

21 And Jesus went out thence and withdrew into the regions of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came forth from those borders and cried out, saying: Have mercy on me. Lord, Son of David: my daughter is grievously afflicted by a demon.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying: Dismiss her, for she cries after us.

24 But he answered and said: I have not been sent but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

25 And she came and worshipped him, saying: Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said: It is not right to take the children's bread and throw it to the little dogs.

27 And she said: Yes, Lord: and yet thou canst help me; for the little dogs eat of the crumbs that fall from their masters' table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said to her: O woman, great is thy faith: be it done for thee as thou wilt. And her daughter was restored to health from that hour.

29 And having departed thence Jesus came by the sea of Galilee; and going up into the mountain he sat there,

30 And there came to him many multitudes, having with them the lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others; and they threw them down at his feet; and he cured them,

31 so that the multitude was astonished when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, and the lame walking, and the blind seeing; and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 But Jesus called to him his disciples and said: I have pity on the multitude, because they have continued with me now three days, and have nothing to eat; and I am not willing to send them away fasting, lest perhaps they faint on the road.

33 And the disciples said to him: Whence have we in the desert as many loaves as can fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus said to them: How many loaves have you? They said: Seven, and a few little fishes.

35 And having commanded; the multitude to recline on the ground,

36 he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and after giving thanks he broke, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the multitudes.

37 And all ate and were filled; and they took up what remained of the broken pieces, seven provision baskets full.

38 And they that had eaten were four thousand men besides children and women.

39 And he sent the multitudes away, and entered the ship, and came into the borders of Magadan.

Matthew 16

1 And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting, asked him to show them a sign from heaven.

2 But he answered and said to them:

3 [no verse]

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeks for a sign, and no sign shall be given it but the sign of Jonah. And he left them and departed.

5 And the disciples having come to the other side had forgotten to take bread.

6 And Jesus said to them: Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying: Because we took no bread.

8 But Jesus perceiving it, said: Why reason among yourselves, O you of little faith, because you took no bread?

9 Do you not yet understand, and do you not remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many traveling baskets you took up?

10 nor the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many provision baskets you took up?

11 How is it that you do not understand that I spoke not to you of bread? But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

12 Then they understood that he did not bid them beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

13 And when Jesus had come into the regions of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying: Who do men say that the Son of man is?

14 They said: Some, John the Baptist, but others, Elijah, and yet others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.

15 He says to them: But who say you that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answering said: Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answering said to him: Blessed art thou, Simon son of Jonah, for flesh and blood did not reveal it to thee, but my Father who is in the heavens.

18 And I also say to thee, that thou art Peter, and on this rock I will build my church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

19 I will give to thee the keys of the kingdom of the heavens, and whatever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in the heavens; and whatever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in the heavens.

20 Then he charged the disciples to tell no one that he was the Christ.

21 From that time Jesus began to show to his disciples, that he must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and rise on the third day.

22 And Peter took him and began to rebuke him, saying: Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be to thee.

23 But he turned and said to Peter: Get behind me, Satan: thou art my stumbling block, for thou thinkest not the things of God, but the things of men.

24 Then Jesus said to his disciples: If any one will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

25 For whoever will save his life shall lose it; but whoever shall have lost his life for my sake shall find it.

26 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall have gained the whole world, but yet shall have lost his life? Or what will a man give as a ransom for his life?

27 For the Son of man will come in the glory of his Father with his angels, and then will he reward each one according to his work.

28 Verily I say to you: There are some of those standing here, who shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

Matthew 17

1 And after six days Jesus takes with him Peter and James and John his brother, and leads them up into a high mountain apart.

2 And he was transfigured before them; and his face shone as the sun, and his garments became white as light.

3 And behold, there appeared to them Moses and Elijah talking with him.

4 And Peter answered and said to Jesus: Lord, it is good that we are here; if thou wiltest I will make here three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

5 While he was yet speaking, behold, a cloud of light overshadowed them; and lo, a voice from the cloud saying: This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased: hear him.

6 And hearing it the disciples fell on their face and were greatly afraid.

7 And Jesus came forward, and touching them said: Arise and be not afraid.

8 But when they had lifted up their eyes they saw no one but Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying: Tell the vision to no one till the Son of man shall have risen from the dead.

10 And the disciples asked him, saying: Why then do the scribes say that Elijah must first come?

11 He answered and said: Elijah indeed comes; and he will restore all things.

12 But I say to you, that Elijah has already come, and they knew him not, but did to him what they pleased. So also shall the Son of man suffer by them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spoke to them of John the Baptist.

14 And when they came to the multitude, there came to him a man kneeling to him,

15 and saying, Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is a lunatic, and suffers grievously; for he often falls into the fire and often into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples and they were not able to cure him.

17 And Jesus answered and said, O generation unbelieving and perverse, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I bear with you; Bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked him, and the demon came out of him, and the child was cured from that hour.

19 Then the disciples came to Jesus privately and said: Why were we not able to cast it out?

20 He said to them: Because of your little faith; for verily I say to you, if you have faith as a grain of mustard, you shall say to this mountain: Be removed hence to that place, and it shall remove, and nothing shall be impossible for you.

21 [no verse]

22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said to them: The Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men,

23 and they shall kill him, and on the third day he shall arise. And they were very sad.

24 And when they came into Capernaum, they that collected the didrachma came to Peter and said: Does your teacher pay the didrachma?

25 He said: Yes. And after he had come into the house, Jesus anticipated him, saying: What think you, Simon? From whom do the kings of the earth collect tribute or custom? From their own sons, or from those of others?

26 And when he had said: From those of others; Jesus said to him: Then are the sons free.

27 But that we may not offend them, go to the sea, and throw in a hook, and take the fish that first comes up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a stater: take that and give it to them for me and thee.

Matthew 18

1 In that hour the disciples came to Jesus, saying: Who then is greatest in the kingdom of the heavens?

2 And calling a little child to him, he placed it in the midst of them,

3 and said: Verily I say to you, unless you turn and become as little children, you shall in no way enter into the kingdom of the heavens.

4 Whoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, he is greatest in the kingdom of the heavens.

5 And whoever shall receive one such little child in my name, receives me.

6 But whoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that an upper millstone were hung about his neck and he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 Alas for the world because of offenses; for it is necessary that offenses come, yet alas for the man through whom the offense comes.

8 But if thy hand or thy foot offends thee, cut it off and throw it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed or lame, than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal fire.

9 And if thy eye offends thee, pull it out and throw it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that you despise not one of these little ones; for I say to you, that their angels in the heavens do always behold the face of my Father who is in the heavens.

11 For the Son of man has come to save that which is lost.

12 What think you? If any man have a hundred sheep, and one of them go astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine on the mountains, and go and seek for that which went astray?

13 And if it happen that he find it, verily I say to you, that he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine that went not astray.

14 So it is not the will of your Father who is in the heavens that one of these little ones perish.

15 And if thy brother sin, go, tell him of his fault between thee and him alone; if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he hear thee not, take with thee one or two more, that by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

17 But if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church; and if he refuse to hear the church also, let him be to thee as a heathen and a publican.

18 Verily I say to you, whatever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again, I say to you that if two of you on earth shall agree concerning any thing what ever they will ask, it shall be done for them by my Father who is in the heavens.

20 For where there are two or three that have come together for my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 Then came Peter and said to him: Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him? Till seven times?

22 Jesus says to him: I say not to thee, till seven times, but till seventy times seven.

23 For this reason the kingdom of the heavens is likened to a man, a king, who wished to take up a settlement with his servants.

24 And when he had begun to settle, there was brought to him one that owed him ten thousand talents.

25 And as he was not able to pay, the lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and his children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 Falling down therefore, that servant worshipped him, saying: Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 And the lord of that servant moved with pity loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But that servant went out and found one of his fellow servants that owed him a hundred denarii; and laying hold on him he took him by the throat, saying: Pay, if thou owest any thing.

29 Falling down therefore, his fellow servant besought him, saying: Have patience with me, and I will pay thee.

30 But he would not; but went and threw him into prison till he should pay the debt.

31 Therefore his fellow servants seeing what had been done, were greatly grieved, and came and made known to their lord all that had been done.

32 Then his lord called him and said to him: Wicked servant, all that debt I forgave thee, because thou didst entreat me:

33 did it not behoove thee also to have mercy on thy fellow servant, as I also had mercy on thee?

34 And being angry his lord delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due him.

35 So also will my heavenly Father do to you, if you from your hearts forgive not each one his brother.

Matthew 19

1 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these words, he departed from Galilee and came into the borders of Judea beyond the Jordan.

2 And many multitudes followed him, and he cured them there.

3 And the Pharisees came to him, tempting him and saying: Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said: Have you not read that the Creator at the beginning made them male and female?

5 and said: For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and be joined to his wife, and the two shall be one flesh.

6 So then no longer are they two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say to him: Why then did Moses command to give a bill of divorce and put her away?

8 He said to them: Moses because of the hardness of your heart permitted you to put away your wives; but from the beginning it was not so.

9 But I say to you: Whoever puts away his wife unless for lewdness, and marries another, commits adultery.

10 The disciples say to him: If such is the case of the man with the wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said to them: All cannot receive this saying, but those to whom it is given.

12 For there are eunuchs who were born so from their mother's womb; and there are eunuchs who were made eunuchs by men; and there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of the heavens. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

13 Then were brought to him little children, that he might lay his hands on them and pray; but the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said to them: Let the little children alone and forbid them not to come to me; for to such belongs the kingdom of the heavens.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

16 And behold, one came to him and said: Teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?

17 And he said to him: Why dost thou ask me about the good? One is good. But if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

18 Which said he. And Jesus said: Thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not commit adultery, thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not bear false testimony.

19 honor thy father and thy mother, and, thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.

20 The young man says to him: All these have I kept; what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said to him: If thou wilt be perfect, go sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come follow me.

22 And hearing it, the young man went away grieved; for he had great possessions.

23 And Jesus said to his disciples: Verily I say to you, that a rich man will with difficulty enter into the kingdom of the heavens.

24 But again I say to you that it is easier for a camel to enter in through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of the heavens.

25 And the disciples hearing it were greatly astonished, saying: Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus looked on them and said to them: With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 Then Peter answered and said to him: Behold, we have left all and followed thee: what therefore shall we have?

28 And Jesus said to them: Verily I say to you that you who have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, you yourselves also shall sit on twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that has left brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or lands, or houses, for the sake of my name, shall receive many times more and shall inherit eternal life.

30 But many first shall be last and last first.

Matthew 20

1 For the kingdom of the heavens is like a man a master of a house, who went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the laborers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the market idle,

4 and he said to them: Go you also into the vineyard, and whatever may be right I will give you.

5 And they went. And again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did in like manner.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out and found others standing, and said to them: Why do you stand here all the day idle?

7 They said to him: Because no one has hired us. He said to them: Go you also into the vineyard.

8 And when evening had come the lord of the vineyard said to his steward: Call the laborers, and pay the hire, beginning from the last even to the first.

9 And when those came who had been hired about the eleventh hour, they received each one a denarius.

10 But when those came who had been hired first, they thought that they should receive more; and they also received each one a denarius.

11 But when they received it they murmured against the master of the house,

12 saying: These the last worked one hour, and thou hast made them equal to us who bore the burden of the day, and the heat.

13 But he answered one of them and said: Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst thou not agree with I me for a denarius?

14 Take that which is thine and go. But I will give to this the last even as to thee:

15 is it not allowed me to do what I will with my own? or is thy eye evil because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last.

17 And as Jesus went up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve aside privately, and on the way said to them:

18 Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered to the chief priests and scribes, and they will condemn him to death.

19 And they will deliver him to the Gentiles, to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify; and on the third day he shall rise.

20 Then came to him the mother of the sons of Zebedee with her sons, worshipping and asking something of him.

21 And he said to her: What wilt thou? She says to him: Command that these two sons of mine may sit, one on thy right hand and one on thy left in thy kingdom.

22 But Jesus answered and said: You know not what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I am about to drink? They say to him: We are able.

23 He says to them: My cup indeed you shall drink, but to sit on my right and on my left, it is not mine to give this, but it shall be given to those for whom it has been prepared, by my Father.

24 But when the ten heard it, they were displeased with the two brothers.

25 But Jesus called them to him and said: You know that the rulers of the Gentiles exercise lord ship over them, and the great exercise authority over them.

26 Not so shall it be among you; but who ever will become great among you shall be your minister;

27 and whoever will be first among you, shall be your servant;

28 as the Son of man came not to be ministered to, but to minister, and give his life a ransom for many.

29 And as they went out from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 And behold, two blind men sitting by the way, hearing that Jesus was passing by, cried out saying: Have mercy on us, son of David.

31 But the multitude rebuked them that they should be silent; and they cried out the more, saying: Lord, have mercy on us, son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said: What will you that I should do for you?

33 They say to him: Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 And moved with pity Jesus touched their eyes; and they immediately received sight, and followed him.

Matthew 21

1 And when they were near to Jerusalem, and had come to Bethphage to the mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples,

2 saying to them: Go into the village that is opposite to you, and you will immediately find an ass tied and a colt with her; loose and bring them to me.

3 And if any one say anything to you, you shall say that the Lord has need of them; and he will immediately send them.

4 And this was done that it might be fulfilled that was spoken through the prophet, saying:

5 Say to the daughter of Zion: Behold, thy King comes to thee meek and mounted on an ass, yes, on a colt the foal of a beast of burden.

6 And the disciples went and did as Jesus had commanded them,

7 and brought the ass and the colt, and put their mantles on them, and he sat upon them.

8 And the most of the multitude spread their mantles in the road, but others cut branches from the trees, and spread them in the road.

9 And the multitudes that went before him, and those that followed cried out, saying: Hosanna to the Son of David, blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

10 And as he entered into Jerusalem, the whole city was moved, saying: Who is this?

11 And the multitudes said: This is the prophet Jesus, who is from Nazareth of Galilee.

12 And Jesus entered into the temple of God, and cast out all that sold and bought in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers, and the seats of those that sold doves,

13 and said to them: It is written: My house shall be called a house of prayer; but you make it a den of robbers.

14 And there came to him the blind and the lame in the temple, and he cured them.

15 And the chief priests and the scribes seeing the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying out in the temple and saying: Hosanna to the Son of David, they were displeased,

16 and said to him: Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus says to them: Yes; have you never read that out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast prepared praise?

17 And he left them and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

18 But in the morning as he returned to the city he was hungry.

19 And seeing a fig tree on the road, he went to it, and found nothing on it, but leaves only; and he said to it: Let fruit grow from thee no more for ever. And the fig tree immediately withered.

20 And the disciples seeing it were astonished, saying: How did the fig tree immediately wither?

21 But Jesus answered and said to them: Verily I say to you, if you have faith and doubt not, you shall do not only this of the fig tree, but if you say even to this mountain: Be taken up, and be thrown into the sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatever you shall ask in prayer believing, you shall receive.

23 And when he had come into the temple, as he was teaching, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to him, saying: By I what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

24 But Jesus answered and said to them: I also will ask you one word, which if you tell me, I also will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The baptism of John, whence was it? Of heaven or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying:

26 If we say: Of heaven, he will say to us: Why then did you not believe him? but if we say: Of men, we fear the multitude; for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus and said: We know not. And he said to them: Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

28 But what think you? A man had two sons; coming to the first he said: Son, go, work today in the vineyard.

29 But he answered and said: I will not; afterward he regretted it and went.

30 And coming to the other he said in like manner. And he answered and said: I go, sir; and went not.

31 Which of the two did the will of the father? They say: The first. Jesus says to them: Verily I say to you that the publicans and the harlots go before you into the kingdom of God.

32 For John came to you in the way of righteousness, and you believed him not; but the publicans and the harlots believed him; and you, when you saw it, afterwards felt no regret that you might believe him.

33 Hear another parable. A man was master of a house, and he planted a vineyard, and put a hedge around it, and dug in it a wine press and built a tower, and let it out to vinedressers, and went into another country.

34 But when the season of the fruits drew near, he sent his servants to the vine dressers, to receive his fruits.

35 And the vinedressers took his servants and scourged one, and killed another, and threw stones at another.

36 Again he sent other servants more than the first, and they did to them in like manner.

37 But at last he sent to them his son, saying: They will reverence my son.

38 But the vinedressers seeing the son said among themselves: This is the heir; come, let us kill him and have his inheritance.

39 And they took him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him.

40 When therefore the lord of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vinedressers?

41 They say to him: The wretches he will wretchedly destroy them, and the vineyard he will let out to other vinedressers, who will render to him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus says to them: Did you never read in the Scriptures: A stone which the builders rejected, this became the head of the corner: this was from the Lord, and it is wondrous in our eyes?

43 Wherefore I say to you that the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth its fruits.

44 And he that falls upon this stone shall be dashed to pieces; but him on whom it shall fall, it will make like chaff for the wind.

45 But when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they knew that he spoke of them;

46 and seeking to lay hold of him they feared the multitudes, because they held him as a prophet.

Matthew 22

1 And answering, Jesus again spoke to them in parables, saying:

2 The kingdom of the heavens is likened to a man, a king, who made a marriage for his son.

3 And he sent forth his servants to call those that had been called to the marriage; and they would not come.

4 Again he sent forth other servants, saying: Tell those who have been called: Behold, I have prepared my dinner, my oxen and the fallings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage.

5 But they were careless and went away, one to his farm, another to his merchandise.

6 But the rest, laying hold on his servants, outraged and slew them.

7 And the king was angry, and sending his armies, he destroyed those murderers, and their city he set on fire.

8 Then said he to his servants: The marriage indeed is ready, but those who were called were not worthy.

9 Go therefore to the crossroads, and whoever you find call to the marriage.

10 And those servants went out into the roads, and brought together all as many as they found, both bad and good, and the bride chamber was filled with guests.

11 But when the king came in to look upon the guests, he saw there a man that had not a wedding garment.

12 And he said to him: Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? But he was silent.

13 Then the king said to the waiters: Bind his feet and hands and cast him into the darkness that is without: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few chosen.

15 Then went the Pharisees and took counsel that they might entrap him in a word.

16 And they send to him their disciples with the Herodians, saying: Teacher, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, and thou carest for no one, for thou lookest not on the person of men:

17 tell us therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar or not?

18 But Jesus knowing their wickedness said: Why tempt me, hypocrites?

19 Show me the tribute money. And they brought him a denarius.

20 And Jesus says to them: Whose image is this, and the superscription?

21 They say: Caesar's. Then says he to them: Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.

22 And hearing they wondered, and leaving him they went away.

23 In that day came to him Sadducees who say that there is no resurrection; and they asked him,

24 saying: Teacher, Moses said: If any one die not having children, his brother shall marry his wife and raise up offspring for his brother.

25 Now there were with us seven brothers; and the first married and died; and not having offspring he left his wife to his brother.

26 In like manner also the second and the third, to the seventh.

27 But last of all, the woman died.

28 In the resurrection, therefore, of which of the seven shall she be the wife? for all had her.

29 But Jesus answered and said to them: You err, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as angels of God in heaven.

31 But, concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read that which was spoken to you by God, saying:

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And the multitudes hearing it were astonished at his teaching.

34 But the Pharisees, hearing that he had put the Sadducees to silence, came together to the same place;

35 and one of them, a lawyer, asked a question, tempting him:

36 Teacher, what commandment is great in the law?

37 And he said to him: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart, and with thy whole soul, and with thy whole mind.

38 This is the great and first commandment.

39 A second is like it: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.

40 On these two commandments hang the whole law and the prophets.

41 But as the Pharisees had come together, Jesus asked them a question,

42 saying: What think you of the Christ? Whose son is he? They say to him: David's.

43 He says to them: How then does David in spirit call him Lord, saying:

44 The Lord said to my Lord: Sit at my right hand till I put thy enemies under thy feet.

45 If thus David calls him, Lord, how is he his son?

46 And no one was able to answer him a word, nor did any one from that day venture to ask him another question.

Matthew 23

1 Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes and to his disciples,

2 saying: The scribes and Pharisees have sat down in Moses' seat.

3 All things therefore whatever they bid you, do and observe; but do not according to their works; for they say and do not.

4 And they bind heavy burdens and lay them on the shoulders of men; but themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.

5 And all their works they do to be seen by men; for they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge their fringes;

6 and they love the first reclining places at suppers and the first seats in the synagogues,

7 and the salutations in the markets, and to be called by men Rabbi.

8 But be you not called Rabbi; for one is your teacher, and you all are, brethren.

9 And call no one on earth your father; for one is your Father, the heavenly.

10 Neither be called leaders; for one is your leader, the Christ.

11 And the greatest of you shall be your minister.

12 For whoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and who ever shall humble himself shall be exalted.

13 But alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you eat up the houses of widows, and for a pretext make long prayers. For this reason you shall receive the greater condemnation.

14 But alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men; for you go not in, neither do you permit those who are entering, to go in.

15 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, you make him twofold more a child of hell than yourselves.

16 Alas for you, blind guides, who say: Whoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, is a debtor.

17 Fools and blind; for which is greater, the gold or the temple that sanctifies the gold?

18 And, Whoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever shall swear by the gift that is on it, is a debtor.

19 Blind! for which is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifies the gift?

20 Therefore, he that swears by the altar swears by it, and by all that is on it;

21 and he that swears by the temple swears by it, and by him that dwells in it;

22 and he that swears by heaven swears by the throne of God, and by him that sits upon it.

23 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you pay tithes of mint and dill and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law, the justice, and the mercy, and the faithfulness: these ought you to have done, and those you ought not to have left undone.

24 Blind guides, who strain out the gnat, but swallow the camel.

25 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you cleanse the outside of the cup and the dish, but within they are full of rapine and incontinence.

26 Blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of it the cup, that its outside also may become clean.

27 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you are like whitened sepulchers, which outwardly indeed appear beautiful, but within are full of the bones of the dead and of all uncleanness.

28 So also you outwardly indeed appear to men to be righteous, but within are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.

29 Alas for you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the sepulchers of the righteous,

30 and say: If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 So then you testify for yourselves that you are the sons of those who murdered the prophets.

32 Do you also fill up the measure of your fathers?

33 Serpents, brood of vipers, how can you escape the condemnation of hell?

34 Wherefore, behold, I send to you prophets and wise men and scribes: of them you will kill and crucify, and of them you will scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city:

35 that there may come on you all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous to the blood of Zachariah son of Barachiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say to you, all these things shall come on this generation.

37 Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killest the prophets, and stonest them that have been sent to thee, how often have I desired to gather thy children, as a hen gathers her young under her wings, and you refused.

38 Behold, your house is left to you deserted.

39 For I say to you, you shall no more see me henceforth till you say: Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord.

Matthew 24

1 And going out Jesus was departing from the temple; and his disciples came to him to point out to him the buildings of the temple.

2 And he answered and said to them: See you not all these things? Verily I say to you, there shall not be left here a stone upon a stone that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, his disciples came to him privately, saying: Tell us, when shall these things be, and what the sign of thy coming and of the conclusion of the age?

4 And Jesus answered and said to them: See that no one deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying: I am the Christ, and shall deceive many.

6 But you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars; see that you be not troubled; for they must be, but not yet is the end.

7 For nation shall rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines and earthquakes in various places.

8 But all these are the beginning of pains.

9 Then they shall deliver you up to affliction, and shall kill you, and you shall be hated by all nations because of my name.

10 And then shall many be offended, and deliver one another up, and hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall arise and deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of many shall grow cold.

13 But he that endures to the end, he shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a testimony to all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 When therefore you see the abomination* of desolation, that was spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place, let the reader understand,

* The Roman eagle causing desolation.

16 then let those that are in Judea flee to the mountains;

17 he that is on the housetop, let him not come down to take the goods out of his house;

18 and he that is in the field, let him not turn back to take his garment.

19 But alas for them that are with child, and them that give suck in those days.

20 And pray that your flight may not be in winter nor on a sabbath.

21 For there shall be great affliction, such as has not been from the beginning of the world till now, nor shall ever be.

22 And unless those days had been shortened, no flesh should be saved; but because of the elect those days shall be shortened.

23 Then if any one say to you: Lo, here is the Christ, or there, believe it not.

24 For false Christs and false prophets shall arise, and shall give great signs and wonders, so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect.

25 Behold, I have told you beforehand.

26 If then they say to you: Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth; behold, he is in the secret chambers, believe not.

27 For as the lightning comes forth from the east and shines even to the west, so shall the coming of the Son of man be.

28 Wherever the carcass is, there will the eagles come together.

29 But immediately after the affliction of those days the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from the heavens, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven, and all the tribes of the land shall wail, and shall see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

31 And he shall send his angels with a great trumpet, and they shall gather his elect from the four winds from the ends of the heavens to the ends of them.

32 But from the fig tree learn the parable. When its branch has now become tender and put forth leaves, you know that summer is near;

33 so also you, when you see all these things, know that it is near at the doors.

34 Verily I say to you, this generation shall not pass away till all these things take place.

35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

36 But of that day and hour no one knows, neither the angels of the heavens, nor the Son, but the Father only.

37 But as the days of Noah, so shall the coming of the Son of man be.

38 For as they were in the days that were before the flood, eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, till the day in which Noah entered the ark,

39 and knew not till the flood came and took them all away; so also shall the coming of the Son of man be.

40 Then shall two men be in the field, one shall be taken and one left:

41 two women shall be grinding at the mill, one shall be taken and one left.

- 42 Watch therefore: for you know not in what day your Lord comes.
- 43 But know this: that if the master of the house had known at what watch the thief would come, he would have kept awake and not have permitted his house to be broken through.
- 44 Wherefore be you also ready, for at an hour at which you think not the Son of man comes.
- 45 Who is then is the faithful and wise servant, whom the lord has set over his household servants, to give them their food in season?
- 46 Blessed is that servant whom his lord on coming shall find so doing.
- 47 Verily I say to you that he will set him over all his goods.
- 48 But if the wicked servant shall say in his heart: My lord delays,
- 49 and shall begin to smite his fellow servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken:
- 50 the lord of that servant shall come in a day which he looks not for, and at an hour that he knows not,
- 51 and shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Matthew 25

- 1 Then shall the kingdom of the heavens be likened to ten virgins, who took their lamps and went forth to meet the bridegroom.
- 2 And five of them were foolish and five were wise.
- 3 For the foolish took the lamps and took no oil with themselves;
- 4 but the wise took oil in the vessels with their own lamps.
- 5 But while the bridegroom delayed they all nodded and fell asleep.
- 6 And at midnight a cry was made: Behold the bridegroom; go out to meet him.
- 7 Then arose all those virgins and adorned their lamps.
- 8 And the foolish said to the wise: Give us of your oil, for our lamps are going out.
- 9 But the wise answered, saying: Lest perhaps there be not enough for us and you, go rather to those that sell and buy for yourselves.
- 10 And while they were going to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.
- 11 But afterwards came also the other virgins, saying: Lord, Lord, open for us.
- 12 But he answered and said: Verily I say to you, I know you not.
- 13 Watch therefore, for you know not the day nor the hour.
- 14 For as a man, on leaving home, called his servants, and delivered to them his goods;

15 and to one he gave five talents, to another two, to another one, to each according to his own ability, and left home.

16 Immediately he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made other five talents.

17 In like manner he that had received the two gained other two.

18 But he that had received the one went and dug in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

19 But after a long time the lord of those servants comes and takes up a settlement with them.

20 And he that had received the five talents came and brought other five talents, saying: Lord, five talents thou didst deliver to me: see, other five talents have I gained.

21 His lord said to him: Well done, good and faithful servant; thou wast faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many: enter into the joy of thy lord.

22 And he that had received the two talents came and said: Lord, two talents thou didst deliver to me: see, other two talents have I gained.

23 His lord said to him: Well done, good and faithful servant; thou wast faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many: enter into the joy of thy lord.

24 And he that had received the one talent came and said: Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering whence thou didst not scatter;

25 and being afraid I went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast thy own.

26 But his lord answered and said to him: Wicked and slothful servant, didst thou know that I reap where I did not sow, and gather whence I did not a scatter?

27 It behooved thee then to put my money with the bankers, and on coming I could have received my own with interest.

28 Take then from him the talent and give it to him that has the ten talents.

29 For to every one that has shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that has a not, even that which he has shall be taken from him.

30 And cast the unprofitable servant into the darkness that is without: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 But when the Son of man shall have come in his glory, and all the angels with him, then shall he sit on the throne of his glory;

32 and there shall be gathered before him all the nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats;

33 and he shall place the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the king say to those on his right: Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom that has been prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 For I was hungry, and you gave me to eat; I was thirsty, and you gave me drink; I was a stranger, and you took me to your homes;

36 I was naked, and you clothed me; I was sick, and you visited me; I was in prison, and you came to me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying: Lord, when saw we thee hungry and fed thee? or thirsty and gave thee drink?

38 And when saw we thee a stranger and took thee to our homes? or naked and clothed thee?

39 And when saw we thee sick or in prison and came to thee?

40 And the King shall answer and say to them: Verily I say to you, Inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these my brethren, you did it to me.

41 Then shall, he say to those also on the left: Depart from me, you cursed, into the eternal fire that is prepared for the devil and his angels.

42 For I was hungry, and you gave me not to eat; I was thirsty, and you gave, me no drink;

43 I was a stranger, and you took me not to your homes; naked, and you clothed me not: sick and in prison, and you visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying: Lord, when saw we thee hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and ministered not to thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying: Verily I say to you, Inasmuch as you did it not to one of the least of these, you did it not to me.

46 And these shall go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.

Matthew 26

1 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished all these words, he said to his disciples:

2 You know that after two days the Passover is kept, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified.

3 Then came together the chief priests and the elders of the people into the court of the chief priest who is called Caiaphas;

4 and they took counsel that they might take Jesus by craft and kill him.

5 But they said: Not during the feast, lest a tumult arise among the people.

6 And while Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 there came to him a woman having an alabaster box of very costly ointment, and she poured it on his head as he reclined at table.

8 And the disciples seeing it were displeased, saying: Why was this waste?

9 for this could have been sold for much and given to the poor.

10 But Jesus perceiving it said to them: Why trouble the woman? for she has wrought a good work on me.

11 For the poor you have always with you, but me you have not always.

12 For she, in pouring this ointment on my body, has done it to prepare me for burial.

13 Verily I say to you, Wherever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, this also which she has done shall be told for a memorial of her.

14 Then went one of the twelve that was called Judas Iscariot, to the chief priests

15 and said: What will you give me, and I will deliver him to you? And they weighed to him thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought an opportunity that he might deliver him up.

17 And on the first day of the unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying: Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the Passover?

18 And he said: Go into the city to a certain man, and say to him: The Teacher says: My time is at hand, with thee I keep the Passover with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had commanded them, and made ready the Passover.

20 But when evening had come, he reclined at table with the twelve disciples.

21 And as they were eating he said; Verily I say to you that one of you shall deliver me up.

22 And being very sad they began each one to say to him: Lord, is it I?

23 But he answered and said: He that dips the hand with me into the dish, he shall deliver me up.

24 The Son of man indeed goes as it is written of him. But alas for that man, by whom the Son of man is delivered up: good were it for that man if he had not been born.

25 And Judas who delivered him up answered and said: Rabbi, is it I? He says to him: Thou hast said.

26 But as they were eating, Jesus took bread and having blessed he broke, and giving to the disciples he said: Take, eat: This is my body.

27 And he took the cup, and having given thanks he gave to them, saying: Drink of it, all of you;

28 for this is my blood of the New Covenant, that is shed for many for remission of sins.

29 But I say to you, I will not henceforth drink of this fruit of the vine, till that day when I drink it with you new in the kingdom of my Father.

30 And they sung a hymn and went out into the mount of Olives.

31 Then Jesus says to them: All of you shall be offended at me this night. For it is written: I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered.

32 But after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

33 And Peter answered and said to him: Though all should be offended at thee, I will never be offended.

34 Jesus said to him: Verily I say to thee that on this night, before a cock shall have crowed, thou wilt deny me three times.

35 Peter says to him: Though it should be necessary for me to die with thee, I will not deny thee. In like manner also said all the disciples.

36 Then Jesus comes with them to a place called Gethsemane, and ii says to the disciples: Sit here till I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be in grief and anguish.

38 Then he says to them: My soul is encompassed with sorrow even to death: remain here and watch with me.

39 And going forward a little he fell upon his face in prayer, and saying: Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me; and not as I will, but as thou.

40 And he comes to his disciples and finds them sleeping, and says to Peter: So you had not strength to watch with me one hour?

41 Watch and pray that you enter not into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

42 Again a second time he went away and prayed, saying: My Father, if this cannot pass away unless I drink it, thy will be a done.

43 And he came again and found them sleeping; for their eyes were heavy.

44 And leaving them he again went away, and prayed the third time, saying the same word again.

45 Then comes he to the disciples and says to them: Sleep the remaining time and rest. Behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is delivered into the hands of sinners.

46 Arise, let us go: behold, he is at hand that delivers me up.

47 And as he was yet speaking, behold. Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and clubs, came from the chief priests and elders of the people,

48 He that delivered him up had given them a sign, saying: The one that I shall kiss is he; hold him fast.

49 And immediately he came to Jesus, and said: Hail, Rabbi! and kissed him.

50 Jesus said to him: Friend, for what purpose have you come? Then they came, and laid hands on Jesus, and held him fast.

51 And behold, one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his ear.

52 Then Jesus said to him: Put back your sword into its place; for all that take the sword shall perish by the sword.

53 Do you think that I cannot now call upon my Father, and he would cause more than twelve legions of angels to stand by me?

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

55 At the same time Jesus said to the multitudes: Have you come out as against a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I sat daily with you in the temple and taught, and you did not take me.

56 All this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples left him and fled.

57 And those who took Jesus led him away to Caiaphas the chief priest, where the scribes and elders had come together.

58 But Peter followed him, at a distance, to the palace of the chief priest, and went in and sat with the attendants, to see the end.

59 And the chief priests and the elders, and the whole Sanhedrim, sought false testimony against Jesus, that they might put him to death,

60 and found none. Though many false witnesses came, yet they found none. At last two false witnesses came,

61 and said: This man said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

62 And the chief priest arose, and said to him: Do you make no answer? What do these testify against you?

63 But Jesus remained silent. And the chief priest answered and said to him: I adjure you, by the living God, that you tell us whether you are the Christ, the Son of God?

64 Jesus said to him: You have said. Moreover, I say to you, Here after you shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming upon the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the chief priest rent his clothes, and said: He has spoken impiously; what further need have we of witnesses? See now, you have heard his impious words:

66 What think you? They answered and said: He is a subject for death.

67 Then did they spit in his face, and strike him with their fists; some struck him with the open hand,

68 and said: Give an answer to us, Christ: Who is he that struck you?

69 But Peter was sitting without in the court; and a maidservant came to him, and said: You also I were with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying: I know not what you say.

71 And when he went out into the entrance, another maidservant saw him, and said to those who were there: This man was also with Jesus the Nazarene.

72 And again he denied, with an oath: I know not the man.

73 After a little while, those who stood by came and said to Peter: Of a truth you also are one of them, for your speech betrays you.

74 Then he began to curse and to swear: I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembered the word which Jesus had spoken to him: Before the cock crows, you will deny me three times. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

Matthew 27

1 When the morning came, all the chief priests and elders of the people held a consultation against Jesus, that they might put him to death.

2 And they bound him and led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

3 Then Judas, who had delivered him up, when he saw that he was condemned, stung by remorse, brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 saying: I have sinned in having delivered up innocent blood. But they said: What is it to us? Thou wilt see to it.

5 And throwing the pieces of silver into the temple, he withdrew, and went and hanged himself.

6 But the chief priests took the pieces of silver and said: It is not lawful to put them into the sacred treasury, because they are the price of blood.

7 But they took counsel and bought with them the potter's field as a burial place for strangers.

8 Wherefore, that field has been called the field of blood to this day.

9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet, saying: And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him who had a price set upon him, on whom they of the sons of Israel set a price,

- 10 and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord commanded me,
- 11 But Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor asked him, saying: Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said: Thou sayest.
- 12 And while he was accused by the chief priests and elders he answered nothing.
- 13 Then says Pilate to him: Hearest thou not how many things they testify against thee?
- 14 And he answered him to not even one word, so that the governor was greatly astonished.
- 15 But at every feast the governor had been accustomed to release to the multitude one prisoner, whom they chose.
- 16 And they had then a notorious prisoner, called Barabbas.
- 17 When therefore they had come together Pilate said to them: Whom will you that I release to you, Barabbas or Jesus who is called Christ?
- 18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him up.
- 19 And while he sat on the judgment seat, his wife sent to him, saying: Have nothing to do with that just man; for I have suffered much this day in a dream because of him.
- 20 But the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitudes that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.
- 21 And the governor answered and said to them: Which of the two will you that I release to you? They said: Barabbas.
- 22 Pilate says to them: What then shall I do with Jesus who is called Christ? They all say: Let him be crucified.
- 23 But he said: Why, what evil has he done? They cried out the more, saying: Let him be crucified.
- 24 And Pilate seeing that nothing avails, but rather that a tumult is rising, took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying: I am innocent of the blood of this man: see you to it.
- 25 And all the people answered and said: His blood be upon us and upon our children.
- 26 Then he released to them Barabbas, but Jesus, after he had scourged him, he delivered up that he might be crucified.
- 27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace and brought together to him the whole band.
- 28 And having stripped him they put on him a purple cloak,
- 29 and having plaited a crown of thorns they put it on his head, and a reed in his right hand, and bowing the knee before him they mocked him, saying: Hail, King of the Jews;
- 30 and having spit upon him they took the reed and struck upon his head.

31 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the cloak and put his own garments on him, and led him away to crucify him.

32 And going out they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they impressed to carry his cross.

33 And when they had come to a place called Golgotha, which is called the place of a skull,

34 they gave him to drink wine mingled with gall; and when he had tasted, he would not drink.

35 But when they had crucified him, they divided his garments, casting the lot;

36 and sitting down they watched him there.

37 And they placed over his head his accusation written: THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were crucified with him two robbers, one on the right and one on the left.

39 And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads

40 and saying: Thou that destroyest the temple and buildest it in three days, save thyself, if thou art the Son of God, and come down from the cross.

41 In like manner the chief priests mocking with the scribes and elders said:

42 Others he saved, himself he cannot save; King of Israel is he, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him;

43 he trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he delights in him; for he said: I am the Son of God.

44 And the robbers that were crucified with him uttered the same reproaches against him.

45 But from the sixth hour darkness came over all the land till the ninth hour. 46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying: Elei, Elei, lema sabachtha nei? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 And some of them that stood there hearing it said: This man calls for Elijah.

48 And immediately one of them ran and took a sponge, and having filled it with vinegar and put it on a reed, gave it to him to drink.

49 But the rest said: Wait, let us see if Elijah is coming to save him.

50 But Jesus again cried out with a loud voice, and gave up the spirit.

51 And behold, the veil of the temple was rent into two from top to bottom, and the earth quaked, and the rocks were rent,

52 and the sepulchres were opened, and many bodies of the saints that slept awoke;

53 and they came out of their sepulchres after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared to many.

54 And the centurion and those who were with him watching Jesus, seeing the earthquake and what things had taken place, were greatly afraid, saying: Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there looking on from a distance, who had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering to him:

56 among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of Zebedee.

57 But when evening had come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was a disciple of Jesus:

58 this man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded it to be given.

59 And taking the body Joseph wrapped it in clean linen,

60 and laid it in his new sepulcher which he had hewn in the rock; and having rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulcher he departed.

61 And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting opposite to the tomb.

62 But on the morrow, which is after the preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees came together to Pilate,

63 saying: Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while yet alive: After three days, I shall arise.

64 Command therefore that the tomb be made safe till the third day, lest perhaps the disciples come and steal him and say to the people: He has risen from the dead, and the last deception shall be worse than the first.

65 Pilate said to them: You have a guard: go, make it as safe as you know how.

66 And they went and made the tomb safe, sealing the stone and setting the guard.

Matthew 28

1 But after the sabbath, as it began to dawn into the first of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the tomb.

2 And lo, there had been a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord having descended from heaven and come, had rolled away the stone and had sat upon it.

3 And his appearance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake and became as dead men.

5 But the angel answered and said to the women: Fear not you; for I know that you seek Jesus who was crucified;

6 he is not here; for he has risen as he said: Come, see the place where he lay.

7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he has risen from the dead; and behold, he goes before you into Galilee: there you shall see him. Lo, I have told you.

8 And going away quickly from the sepulcher with fear and great joy, they ran to bring his disciples word.

9 And behold, Jesus met them, saying: Hail. And they came and laid hold of his feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then says Jesus to them: Fear not: go, tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 But as they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city and told the chief priests all that had been done.

12 And having come together with the elders, and taken counsel, they gave much money to the soldiers,

13 saying: Say that his disciples came by night and stole him while we slept.

14 And if this be heard before the governor, we will persuade him and make you secure.

15 And they took the money and did as they were taught; and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews to this day.

16 But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to a mountain where Jesus had appointed them;

17 and when they saw him they worshipped, but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying : All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.

19 Go, make disciples of all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit.

20 teaching them to observe all things whatever I commanded you. And lo, I am with you, all the days, to the conclusion of the age.

According to Mark

Mark 1

1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ,

2 As it is written in Isaiah the prophet: Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way:

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness: Make ready the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 It was John who baptized in the wilderness and preached the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.

5 And there went out to him all the country of Judea and all they of Jerusalem and were baptized by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camel's hair and a girdle of leather around his loins, and he ate locusts and wild honey.

7 And he preached, saying: After me comes he that is mightier than I, the strap of whose sandals I am not worthy to stoop down and loose.

8 I have baptized you in water, but he shall baptize you in the Holy Spirit.

9 And it came to pass in those days that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee and was baptized in the Jordan by John.

10 And immediately going up out of the water he saw the heavens rent, and the Spirit like a dove coming down upon him.

11 And there was a voice from the heavens: Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

12 And immediately the Spirit drives him into the wilderness.

13 And he was in the wilderness forty days tempted by Satan; and he was with the wild beasts, and the angels ministered to him.

14 But after John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of God,

15 that the time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand: Repent and believe in the gospel.

16 And passing along by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew the brother of Simon throwing a net about in the sea; for they were fishers.

17 And Jesus said to them: Come after me, and I will make you become fishers of men.

18 And immediately leaving the nets they followed him.

19 And going forward a little he saw James the son of Zebedee and John his brother, who were also in the ship mending the nets.

20 And he immediately called them; and leaving their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants they went away after him.

21 And they entered into Capernaum; and immediately, on the sabbath, he taught in the synagogue.

22 And they were astonished at his teaching; for he taught them as having authority, and not as the scribes.

23 And immediately there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out,

24 Saying: What have we to do with thee, Jesus the Nazarene? thou hast come to destroy us. We know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him: Be silent, and come out of him.

26 And the unclean spirit threw him into convulsions, and having cried out with a loud voice came out of him.

27 And all were amazed, so that they inquired one of another, saying: What means this? A new teaching according to authority: he also commands the unclean spirits, and they obey him.

28 And his fame immediately went forth everywhere into the whole surrounding country of Galilee.

29 And immediately on going out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew with James and John.

30 And the mother-in-law of Simon lay ill of a fever and they immediately tell him of her.

31 And he came to her and raised her up, taking her by the hand. And the fever left her, and she ministered to them.

32 But after evening had come, when the sun went down, they brought to him all that were sick, and those possessed with demons;

33 And the whole city was collected together at the door.

34 And he cured many that were sick with various diseases, and cast out many demons, and permitted not the demons to speak, because they knew him.

35 And very early while yet night, he rose up and went out, and went away to a desert place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon and they that were with him followed after him.

37 And found him, and said to him: All seek for thee.

38 And he said to them: Let us go elsewhere to the next towns, that I may preach there also; for to this end came I forth.

39 And he went through the whole of Galilee, preaching in their synagogues, and casting out demons.

40 And there came to him a leper, entreating him and kneeling, saying to him: If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And moved with pity he stretched forth his hand and touched him and said: I will; be clean.

42 And the leprosy immediately departed from him, and he was made clean.

43 And after charging him in a threatening manner, he immediately sent him forth,

44 and said to him: See that thou say nothing to any one, but go, show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing the things that Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.

45 But he went out and began to proclaim it much, and publish the matter abroad, so that he could no longer openly enter into a city, but was without in desert places; and they came to him from every quarter.

Mark 2

1 And entering again into Capernaum after some days, it was reported that he was in a house.

2 And many came together, so that the house could no longer contain them, nor the space about the door; and he spoke the word to them.

3 And they came bringing to him a palsied man borne by four.

4 And not being able to bring him near to him on account of the multitude, they took off the roof where he was, and digging through, they let down the bed on which the palsied man lay.

5 And Jesus seeing their faith says to the palsied man: Son, thy sins are forgiven.

6 But some of the scribes were sitting there and reasoning in their hearts:

7 Why speaks this man thus? He blasphemeth: who can forgive sins but one, God?

8 And Jesus immediately perceiving by his spirit that they thus reasoned in themselves, said to them: Why reason these things in your hearts?

9 Which is easier, to say to the palsied man: Thy sins are forgiven, or to say: Rise and take up thy bed and go?

10 But that you may know that the Son of man on earth has authority to forgive sins, he says to the palsied man:

11 I say to thee, rise, take up thy bed and go to thy house.

12 And he arose and immediately taking up his bed, he went out before all, so that they all were astonished, and glorified God, saying: Thus never saw we.

13 And he went forth again to the sea; and all the multitude came to him, and he taught them

14 And passing by he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the customs-house, and said to him: Follow me And he rose up and followed him.

15 And it came to pass that he was reclining at table in his house, and many publicans and sinners reclined at table with Jesus and his disciples; for there were many, and there followed him,

16 also the scribes of the Pharisees. And seeing that he ate with the publicans and sinners, they said to his disciples: Why does he eat and drink with the publicans and sinners?

17 And hearing it Jesus says to them: They that are in health have no need of a physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call righteous men, but sinners.

18 And the disciples of John and the Pharisees were fasting. And they come and say to him: Why do the disciples of John and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jesus said to them: Can the sons of the bride-chamber fast while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they can not fast.

20 But days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in that day.

21 No one sews a piece of unfulled cloth on an old garment: otherwise, that which fills up takes from it, the new from the old, and a worse rent is made.

22 And no one puts new wine into old bottles: otherwise, the wine bursts the bottles, and the wine and bottles are lost.

23 And it came to pass that he was going on the sabbath through the fields of grain; and his disciples began to go on the way pulling the ears of grain.

24 And the Pharisees said to him: See, why are they doing on the sabbath that which is not lawful?

25 And he said to them: Did you never read what David did, when he had need and was hungry, he and those who were with him?

26 how he entered into the house of God, in the days of Abiathar the chief priest, and ate the loaves of the presence, which it is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave to those also that were with him?

27 And he said to them: The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

28 So then the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

Mark 3

1 And he entered again into a synagogue; and a man was there that had a withered hand;

2 And they watched him if he would cure him on the sabbath, that they might accuse him.

3 And he says to the man that had the withered hand: Rise and come into the midst.

4 And he says to them: Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good or to do evil, to save life or to kill? But they were silent.

5 And looking around on them with anger, being grieved at the hardness of their heart, he says to the man: Stretch forth the hand. And he stretched it forth, and his hand was restored to health.

6 And the Pharisees went out immediately with the Herodians, and took counsel against him, that they might destroy him.

7 And Jesus withdrew with his disciples to the sea; and a great multitude followed from Galilee and from Judea,

8 And from Jerusalem and from Idumea and beyond the Jordan and about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, hearing what things he did, came to him.

9 And he spoke to his disciples that a small ship should wait upon him because of the multitude, that they might not throng him;

10 For he cured many, so that they fell upon him, that they might touch him, as many as had scourges.

11 And the unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him and cried out, saying: Thou art the Son of God.

12 And he charged their minds that they should not make him known.

13 And he went up into the mountain, and called to him whom he would; and they came to him.

14 And he appointed twelve that they might be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach,

15 and to have authority to cast out the demons.

16 And he appointed the twelve; and Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And James the son of Zebedee and John the brother of James; and these he surnamed Boanerges, which is sons of thunder;

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 and Judas Iscariot, who also delivered him up, and he came into a house;

20 And a multitude again came together, so that they were able not even to eat bread.

21 And his relatives hearing it came forth to take him; for they said: He is beside himself.

22 And the scribes that came down from Jerusalem said: He has Beelzebub, and by the prince of the demons he casts out the demons.

23 And he called them to him and spoke to them in parables: How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom can not stand.

25 And if a house be divided against itself, that house can not stand.

26 And if Satan rise up against himself, he is divided; and he can not stand, but has an end.

27 But no one is able, on entering into the house of the strong man, to seize upon his instruments, unless he first bind the strong man, and then he will plunder his house.

28 Verily I say to you that all shall be forgiven the sons of men, the sins and the blasphemies, whatever things they shall blasphemously utter;

29 But whoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, has forgiveness never, but is guilty of an eternal sin.

30 Because they said: He has an unclean spirit.

31 And his mother and his brothers came, and standing without sent to him calling him.

32 And a multitude sat about him; and they said to him: Behold, thy mother, and thy brothers, and thy sisters without seek thee.

33 And he answered and said to them: Who is my mother, and who are my brothers?

34 And looking around on those sitting round about him, he says: Behold my mother and my brothers.

35 Whoever shall have done the will of God, this is my brother and sister and mother.

Mark 4

1 And again he began to teach by the sea. And there came together to him a very great multitude, so that he entered into a ship and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said to them in his teaching:

3 Hear; Behold, the sower went forth to sow.

4 And it came to pass while he sowed some fell by the way, and the birds came and ate it up.

5 And other fell on the rocky place, where it had not much earth; and it immediately sprung up because it had not depth of earth;

6 And when the sun had risen, it was scorched; and because it had no root it withered.

7 And other fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up and choked it and it produced no fruit.

8 And others fell on good ground and yielded fruit, growing up and increasing, and produced to thirty and to sixty and to a hundred.

9 And he said: He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, those about him with the twelve asked him about the parables.

11 And he said to them: To you is given the mystery of the kingdom of God but to them that are without all things are done in parables;

12 that seeing they may see and may not perceive; and hearing they may hear and not understand; lest perhaps they should turn and it; should be forgiven them.

13 And he says to them: Know you not this parable, and how will you know all parables?

14 The sower sows the word.

15 But these are they that are by the way side where the word is sown; and when they hear, Satan immediately comes and takes away the word that is sown in them.

16 And these are they in like manner that were sown on the rocky places; who when they hear the word immediately with joy receive it;

17 And yet they have no root in themselves, but endure for a time: then when affliction or persecution arises because of the word they immediately take offense.

18 And others are they that were sown over the thorns: these are they that hear the word,

19 And the cares of the age, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires about other things entering in choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful.

20 And they that were sown on good ground are those who hear the word and receive it, and bring forth fruit in thirties, and in sixties, and in hundreds.

21 And he said to them: Is a lamp brought that it may be put under the measure or under the bed? Is it not brought that it may be put on the lampstand?

22 For there is nothing hid, unless that it may be made manifest: nor was any thing concealed, but that it might come into open view.

23 If any one has ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said to them: Take heed what you hear. With what measure you measure it shall be measured to you, and more shall be given to you.

25 For he that has, to him shall be given; and he that has not, even that which he has shall be taken from him.

26 And he said: So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should sow seed upon the earth,

27 And should sleep and awake night and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he knows not how.

28 The earth of its own accord brings forth fruit, first the blade, then the ear, then the full grain in the ear.

29 But when the fruit shall have presented itself, immediately he sends forth the sickle, because the harvest is ready.

30 And he said: How shall we liken the kingdom of God, or with what parable shall we set it forth?

31 It is like a grain of mustard, which, when it is sown on the earth, is less than all the seeds that are on the earth;

32 And yet when it is sown, it springs up and becomes greater than all garden-plants, and; makes great branches, so that the birds of heaven can lodge under its shadow.

33 And with many such parables spoke he the word to them, as they were able to hear;

34 But without a parable spoke he not to them; but privately he explained all things to his disciples.

35 And on that day when it was evening he says to them: Let us pass over to the other side.

36 And leaving the multitude they took him as he was in the ship, and there were also other ships with him.

37 And there came a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that the ship was now full.

38 And he was sleeping in the prow on the boat-cushion; and they awoke him and said to him: Teacher, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he awoke and rebuked the wind and said to the sea: Peace be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he said to them: Why are you so fearful? How have you no faith?

41 And they were afraid with great fear, and said one to another: Who then is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

Mark 5

1 And they came to the other side of the sea to the, country of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he had come out of the ship, immediately there met him a man from the tombs with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs; and not even with a chain was any one any longer able to bind him,

4 Because he had often been bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been pulled asunder by him and the fetters had been broken; and no one was able to subdue him;

5 And always night and day among the tombs and in the mountains he was crying out and cutting himself with stones.

6 And seeing Jesus at a distance he ran and worshipped him;

7 and crying out with a loud voice, he said: What have I to do with thee, Jesus, Son of God most high? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 For he said to him: Unclean spirit, come out of the man.

9 And he asked him: What is thy name? And he said to him: My name is legion, for we are many.

10 And they besought him much that he would not send them out of the country.

11 But there was there near the mountain a great herd of swine feeding;

12 And they besought him, saying: Send us to the swine that we may enter into them.

13 And he permitted them. And the unclean spirits came out and entered into the swine; and the herd, about two thousand, rushed down the steep into the sea, and were choked in the sea.

14 And those who fed them fled, and told it in the city and in the country; and they came I to see what it was that had been done.

15 And they come to Jesus and see him that had the demon, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, him that had had the legion, and they were afraid.

16 And they that had seen told them how it had happened to the demon and concerning the swine.

17 And they began to beseech him to depart from their borders.

18 And as he was entering the ship, he that had been possessed with the demon besought him that he might be with him.

19 And he permitted him not, but said to him: Go to thy house to thy own, and tell them what things the Lord has done for thee, and has had mercy on thee.

20 And he went away, and began to proclaim in Decapolis what things Jesus had done for him; and all were astonished.

21 And when Jesus had again passed over in the ship to the other side, a great multitude came together to him, and he was by the sea.

22 And there comes one of the rulers of the synagogue, named Jairus; and seeing him he falls at his feet,

23 and beseeches him much, saying: My little daughter is at the point of death, I pray that thou wouldst come and lay thy hand on her, that she may be saved and live.

24 And he went away with him; and a great multitude followed him, and they pressed upon him.

25 And a woman that had had an issue of blood for twelve years,

26 And had suffered many things under many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was in no way benefited, but rather grew worse.

27 Hearing of the things concerning Jesus, came behind in the multitude, and touched his clothes;

28 For she said: If I may touch even his clothes, I shall be saved.

29 And immediately the fountain of her blood dried up, and she knew in her body that she was restored to health from that scourge.

30 And Jesus immediately perceiving in himself that power had gone forth from him, turned about in the multitude and said: Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said to him: Seest thou the multitude thronging thee and sayest thou: Who touched me?

32 And he looked around to see her that had done this.

33 But the woman being afraid and trembling, knowing what had been done for her, came and fell before him and told him all the truth.

34 And he said to her: Daughter, thy faith has saved thee: go in peace, and be well of thy scourge.

35 While he was yet speaking there came some from the house of the ruler of the synagogue, saying: Thy daughter is dead, why trouble the Teacher further?

36 But Jesus, disregarding the word that was spoken, said to the ruler of the synagogue: Fear not, only believe.

37 And he permitted no one to follow with him but Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And they come to the house of the ruler of the synagogue; and he sees a tumult, and those who wept and bewailed much;

39 And entering in he says to them: Why make a tumult and weep? The child is not dead, but sleeps.

40 And they derided him. But he, having put them all out, takes the father of the child, and the mother, and those with him, and goes in where the child was.

41 And he took the child by the hand and said to her: Talitha kumi, which is translated: Maiden, I say to thee, arise.

42 And the maiden immediately rose up and walked; for she was twelve years old. And they were immediately astonished with great astonishment.

43 And he charged them much that no one should know this and commanded that there should be given her to eat.

Mark 6

1 And he went out thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples followed him.

2 And when the sabbath had come he began to teach in the synagogue; and many hearing were astonished, saying: Whence has this man these things, and what the wisdom that is given to this man? and are such mighty deeds done through his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and brother of James and Joses and Judah and Simon? And are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 And Jesus said to them: A prophet is not without honor, unless in his own country, and among his relatives, and in his own house.

5 And he was able to do no mighty work there, except that he laid his hands on a few sick persons and cured them.

6 And he wondered because of their unbelief. And he went about the villages round about teaching.

7 And he called to him the twelve, and began to send them forth two and two; and gave them authority over unclean spirits;

8 And charged them to take nothing for the journey but a staff only; no bread, no bag, no brass in the girdle,

9 But be shod with sandals: and put not on two coats.

10 And he said to them: Wherever you enter a house, there abide till you go forth thence.

11 And whatever place shall not have received you nor heard you, when you go out thence, shake off the dust that is under your feet, for a testimony against them.

12 And they went forth and preached that men should repent;

13 and they cast out many demons, and anointed with oil many sick and cured them.

14 And Herod the king heard, for his name had become known, and said: John the Baptist has risen from the dead, and for this reason the powers are active within him.

15 But others said: It is Elijah; but others said: He is a prophet like one of the prophets.

16 But Herod, when he heard, said: John whom I beheaded, he has risen.

17 For Herod himself had sent and taken John, and bound him in prison because of Herodias the wife of his brother Philip, for he had married her.

18 For John said to Herod: It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

19 And Herodias was angry with him, and desired to kill him, and was not able.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing him to be a righteous and holy man, and he kept him in safety, and hearing him he was much perplexed, and heard him with pleasure.

21 And a suitable time having come, when Herod on his birthday had made a supper for his great men, and the officers of thousands, and the first men of Galilee;

22 and the daughter of the same Herodias having come in and danced, she pleased Herod and those that reclined with him at table; and the king said to the maiden: Ask of me whatever thou wilt, and I will give thee.

23 And he swore to her: Whatever thou shalt ask I will give thee to the half of my kingdom.

24 And she went out and said to her mother: What shall I ask? And she said: The head of John the Baptist.

25 And coming in immediately with haste to the king, she asked, saying: I will that thou at once give me in a dish the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king though he became very sad, because of the oaths and; those that reclined at table with him would not reject her.

27 And the king immediately sent an executioner and ordered to bring his head.

28 And he went and beheaded him in the prison, and brought his head in a dish, and gave it to the maiden; and the maiden gave it to her mother.

29 And his disciples heard it and came and took away his corpse, and laid him in a sepulcher.

30 And the apostles came together to Jesus, and told him all things that they had done and taught.

31 And he says to them: Do you yourselves come apart to a desert place, and rest a little. For many were coming and going, and they had leisure not even to eat.

32 And they went away by ship to a desert place apart.

33 And many saw them going and knew them, and ran thither on foot from all the cities, and outwent them.

34 And coming out he saw a great multitude, and was moved with pity for them, because they were as sheep that had no shepherd, and began to teach them many things.

35 And as much time had already passed, his disciples came and said: The place is desert, and already much time is spent:

36 dismiss them, that they may go into the country and villages round about and buy for themselves what they may eat.

37 But he answered and said to them: Do you give them to eat. And they say to him: Shall we go and buy two hundred denarii worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 But he says to them: How many loaves have you? Go, see. And having learned they say: Five and two fishes.

39 And he ordered them that all should recline by table-parties on the green grass.

40 And they reclined in oblong squares, by hundreds and by fifties.

41 And having taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven and blessed; and broke the loaves, and gave to the disciples to set before them; and the two fishes he divided among all.

42 And all ate and were filled:

43 And they took up of the broken pieces twelve provision-baskets full, and of the fishes.

44 And those that had eaten the loaves were five thousand men.

45 And he immediately constrained his disciples to enter the ship, and go before him to the other side to Bethsaida till he himself should send away the multitude.

46 And having sent them away he went into the mountain to pray.

47 And when evening had come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and himself alone on the land.

48 And seeing them toiling in rowing, for the wind was against them, about the fourth watch of the night he came to them walking on the sea. And he intended to pass by them.

49 But seeing him walking on the sea they thought that it was a specter, and cried out;

50 for they all saw him and were alarmed. But he immediately talked with them, and said to them: Take courage, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up to them into the ship and the wind ceased. And they were greatly astonished in themselves beyond measure.

52 For they had not learned by means of the loaves, but their heart was hardened.

53 And when they had passed over to the land they came to Gennesaret, and drew to shore.

54 And when they had come out of the ship, they immediately knew him,

55 And ran about that whole country, and began to carry the sick about in beds where they heard that he was.

56 And wherever he went into villages, or cities, or the country, they laid the sick in the markets, and besought him that they might touch even the fringe of his mantle; and as many as touched him were saved.

Mark 7

1 And there came together to him the Pharisees and some of the scribes that had come from Jerusalem.

2 And seeing some of his disciples that they ate bread with common, that is, with unwashed hands,

3 for the Pharisees and all the Jews, unless they wash their hands often, eat not. Holding the tradition of the elders;

4 And when they come from market, unless they immerse themselves, they eat not; and there are many other things that they received to hold, the immersion of cups and pitchers and brazen vessels:

5 And the Pharisees and the scribes asked him: Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with common hands?

6 And he said to them: Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written. This people honor me with their lips, but their heart is far distant from me;

7 but in vain do they offer reverence to me, teaching teachings the commandments of men.

8 Leaving the commandment of God you hold the tradition of men.

9 And he said to them: Well do you set aside the commandment of God, that you may keep your tradition.

10 For Moses said: Honor thy father and thy mother, and: He that curses father or mother let him surely die.

11 But you say: If a man shall say to his father or mother: That, by whatever thou mightest receive aid from me, is corban, which is a gift.

12 You no longer permit him to do any thing for his father or mother,

13 Making the word of God of no effect by your tradition which you have delivered. And many things like these you do.

14 And again calling the multitude to him he said to them: Hear me, all of you, and understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him; but the things that proceed from a man are they that defile a man.

16 [no verse]

17 And when he had entered the house apart from the multitude, his disciples asked him about the parable.

18 And he said to them: So even you are without understanding? Do you not perceive that nothing from without by entering into a man can defile him?

19 because it goes not into his heart, but into his belly, and is cast out into the sink, making all meats clean.

20 But he said: That which proceeds from a man, that defiles a man.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, lewdness, thefts, murders,

22 Adulteries, covetousness, wicked counsels, deceit, wantonness, an evil eye, blasphemy, haughtiness, folly:

23 All these wicked things proceed from within, and defile a man.

24 But he arose and went away thence into the borders of Tyre. And entering a house he desired that no one should know it, and was not able to escape notice;

25 But a woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit, immediately heard of him, and came in and fell at his feet;

26 The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation; and she asked him to cast the demon out of her daughter.

27 And he said to her: Let the children first be filled; for it is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the little dogs.

28 But she answered and said to him: Yes, Lord; and yet the little dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.

29 And he said to her: Because of this saying go, the demon has gone out of thy daughter.

30 And she went away to her house, and found the little child lying on the bed, and the demon gone out.

31 And again going forth out of the borders of Tyre, he came through Sidon to the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the borders of Decapolis.

32 And they bring to him one deaf and that spoke with difficulty; and they beseech him to lay his hand on him.

33 And taking him aside from the multitude, he put his fingers into his ears, and spit, and touched his tongue.

34 and looking up to heaven he sighed, and said to him: Ephphatha, which is, Be opened.

35 And his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was immediately loosed, and he spoke plainly.

36 And he charged them to tell no one; but as much as he charged them, the more abundantly they proclaimed it.

37 And they were exceedingly amazed, saying: He has done all things well: he makes both the deaf to hear and the dumb to speak,

Mark 8

1 In those days, the multitude again being great, and they having nothing to eat, he called his disciples to him and said to them:

2 I have pity on the multitude, because they have now continued with me three days, and have nothing to eat.

3 And if I send them away to their homes fasting, they will faint on the way; and some of them have come from far.

4 And his disciples answered him: Whence shall any one be able to satisfy these with bread here in the wilderness?

5 And he asked them: How many loaves have you? They said: Seven.

6 And he commanded the multitude to recline on the ground; and taking the seven loaves, he gave thanks, broke, and gave to his disciples to set before them; and they set them before the multitude.

7 And they had a few little fishes; and he blessed and set them before them.

8 And they ate and were satisfied, and took up what remained of the broken pieces, seven provision-baskets.

9 And they were about four thousand; and he sent them away.

10 And immediately entering the ship with his disciples, he came into the regions of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisees came out and began to dispute with him, seeking from him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And sighing deeply in his spirit, he said: Why does this generation seek for a sign? Verily I say to you: No sign shall be given to this generation.

13 And leaving them he again embarked, and went to the other side.

14 And they had forgotten to take bread, and except one loaf they had nothing with them in the ship.

15 And he charged them, saying: Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned one with another: Because we have no bread.

17 And perceiving it he said to them: Why reason because you have no bread? Do you not yet perceive, neither understand? Have you your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes see you not, and having ears hear you not, and do you not remember,

19 when I broke the five loaves among the five thousand, and how many traveling-baskets full of broken pieces you took up? They say to him: Twelve.

20 When the seven also among the four thousand, how many provision-baskets full of broken pieces did you take up? And they say: Seven.

21 And he said to them: Do you not yet understand?

22 And they come to Bethsaida And they bring to him a blind man, and beseech him to touch him.

23 And taking the blind man by the hand, he brought him out of the village; and having spit on his eyes, he laid his hands on him, and asked him if he saw anything.

24 And he looked up and said: I behold men, for I perceive them as trees walking.

25 Then he again laid his hands on his eyes; and he saw clearly and was restored, and beheld all things distinctly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying: Go not into the village.

27 And Jesus and his disciples went forth into the villages of Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples, saying to them: Who do men say that I am?

28 They answered him, saying: John the Baptist, and others, Elijah, but others, One of the prophets.

29 And he asked them: But you, who say you that I am? Peter answering said to him: Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them to tell no one concerning him.

31 And he began to teach them that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be put to death, and rise after three days.

32 And he uttered this saying plainly. And Peter took him and began to rebuke him.

33 But turning and looking on his disciples he rebuked Peter and said: Get behind me, Satan, for thou thinkest not the things of God, but the things of men.

34 And calling the multitude to him with his disciples, he said to them: Whoever will follow after me, let him deny himself and take up his cross, and follow me.

35 For whoever will save his life shall lose it; but whoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man to gain the whole world and to lose his life?

37 For what would a man give as a ransom for his life?

38 For whoever shall have been ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of man shall also be ashamed of him, when, he shall come in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

Mark 9

1 And he said to them: Verily I say to you that there are some of those standing here, who shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God coming in power.

2 And after six days Jesus took with him Peter, and James, and John, and led them up into a high mountain apart by themselves; and he was transfigured before them;

3 And his clothing became shining, very white, as no fuller on earth can whiten.

4 And there appeared to them Elijah with Moses; and they were conversing with Jesus.

5 And Peter answering said to Jesus: Rabbi, it is good that we are here, and let us make three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

6 For he knew not what he should answer; for they were greatly afraid.

7 And there came a cloud overshadowing them; and there came a voice from the cloud: This is my beloved Son, hear him.

8 And suddenly looking around they no longer saw any one but Jesus alone with themselves.

9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no one what things they had seen, unless when the Son of man should have risen from the dead.

10 And they kept the saying among themselves, inquiring what to rise from the dead is.

11 And they asked him, saying: Why say the Pharisees and the scribes that Elijah must first come?

12 And he said to them: Elijah coming first restores all things. And how is it written of the Son of man? that he must suffer many things, and be set at naught.

13 But I say to you that Elijah also has come, and they have done to him what things they wished, as it is written of him.

14 And coming to the disciples, they saw a great multitude about them, and scribes disputing with them.

15 And immediately all the multitude seeing him were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him.

16 And he asked them: Why are you disputing with them?

17 And one from the multitude answered him: Teacher, I brought to thee my son that has a dumb spirit.

18 And wherever he seizes him he throws him down; and he foams and gnashes with his teeth and pines away; and I spoke to thy disciples that they would cast him out, and they were not able.

19 And he answered and said to them: O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? Bring him to me.

20 And they brought him to him. And when he saw him, the spirit immediately threw him into convulsions, and he fell upon the ground, and rolled foaming.

21 And he asked his father: How long is it since this came on him? He replied: From a child;

22 And he has often thrown him into the fire and into the water, to destroy him; but if in any way thou canst, have pity on us and help us.

23 But Jesus said to him: What is this "If thou canst"? All things are possible to him that believes.

24 The father of the child immediately crying out said: I believe; help thou my unbelief.

25 But Jesus, seeing that the multitude was running together, rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to him: Dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And after crying out and throwing him into strong convulsions he came out; and he became like one dead, so that many said: He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when he came into the house, his disciples asked him privately: Why were we not able to cast him out?

29 And he said to them: This kind can come out by nothing but by prayer.

30 And going out thence they passed along through Galilee, and he wished that no one should know it;

31 For he taught his disciples and said to them that the Son of man is to be delivered into the hands of men, and they will kill him, and when he has been killed he will rise after three days.

32 But they understood not the saying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 And they came into Capernaum. And when he was in the house he asked them: About what were you disputing on the way?

34 But they were silent; for they had disputed one with another on the way who was greatest.

35 And he sat down and called the twelve, and said to them: If any one will be first, he shall be last of all and minister of all.

36 And he took a little child and set him in the midst of them, and took him in his arms and said to them:

37 Whoever shall receive one of these little children in my name, receives me; and whoever shall receive me, receives not me, but him that sent me.

38 John said to him: Teacher, we saw one casting out demons in thy name, and he follows not us; and we forbade him, because he follows not us.

39 But Jesus said: Forbid him not; for there is no one who shall do a mighty deed in my name, and be able hastily to speak evil of me;

40 For he that is not against us, is for us.

41 For whoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because you are Christ's, verily I say to you, he shall not lose his reward.

42 And whoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe, it were better for him if an upper millstone were hung about his neck, and he were thrown into the sea.

43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go away into hell, into the unquenchable fire.

44 [no verse]

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life lame, than having two feet to be thrown into hell.

46 [no verse]

47 And if thy eye offend thee, pull it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be thrown into hell,

48 Where their worm dies not and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire.

50 Salt is good; but if the salt become saltless, by what means will you season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

Mark 10

1 And rising up he came thence into the borders of Judea and beyond the Jordan; and multitudes came together again to him; and as he was accustomed he again taught them.

2 And the Pharisees came and asked him if it is lawful for a man to put away his wife, tempting him.

3 But answering he said to them: What did Moses command you?

4 They replied: Moses permitted to write a bill of divorce and put her away.

5 But Jesus said to them: Because of the hardness of your heart he wrote for you this commandment.

6 But from the beginning of creation, male and female made he them;

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and his mother,

8 And the two shall be one flesh: so no longer are they two, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house the disciples again asked him about this matter.

11 And he said to them: Whoever puts away his wife and marries another commits adultery against her;

12 And if she puts away her husband and marries another, she commits adultery.

13 And they brought to him little children that he might touch them. But the disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 And Jesus seeing it was displeased, and said to them: Let the little children come to me; forbid them not; for to such belongs the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say to you: Whoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no way enter into it.

16 And he took them in his arms and blessed them much, putting his hands upon them.

17 And as he went forth into the road, one ran to him, and kneeling to him asked him: Good teacher, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

18 But Jesus said to him: Why callest thou me good? None is good but one, God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments: Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not

bear false testimony. Thou shalt not defraud, Honor thy father and thy mother.

20 And he said to him: Teacher, all these have I kept from my youth.

21 And Jesus looking upon him loved him, and said to him: One thing thou lackest: go, sell whatever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come follow me.

22 But becoming sad at that saying he went away sorrowful; for he had great possessions.

23 And looking around, Jesus says to his disciples: How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God.

24 And the disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus again answering says to them: Children, how hard it is to enter into the kingdom of God:

25 it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 But they were more amazed, saying among themselves: Who then can be saved?

27 Looking on them, Jesus says: With men, impossible, but not with God; for all things are possible with God.

28 Peter began to say to him: Behold, we have left all things and followed thee.

29 Jesus replied: Verily I say to you, there is no one that has left house, or brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my sake and for the sake of the gospel,

30 But he shall receive a hundred fold now at this time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land with persecutions, and in the age to come eternal life.

31 But many first shall be last, and last first.

32 And they were in the road going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus was going before them, and they were amazed; and as they followed they were afraid. And taking the twelve aside again he began to tell them the things that were about to befall him:

33 Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered to the chief of priests and the scribes, and they will condemn him to death, and deliver him to the Gentiles,

34 And they shall mock him, and spit upon him, and scourge him, and put him to death, and after three days he shall rise.

35 And there came to him James and John, the sons of Zebedee, saying to him: Teacher, we wish that thou wouldst do for us whatever we ask of thee.

36 And he said to them: What will you that I should do for you?

37 And they said to him: Grant to us that we may sit, one on thy right hand and the other on thy left, in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said to them: You know not what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, or be baptized with the baptism with which I am baptized?

39 They said to him: We are able. Jesus said to them: The cup that I drink you shall drink, and with the baptism with which I am baptized you shall be baptized;

40 but to sit on my right hand or on my left is not mine to give, but it shall be given to those for whom it has been prepared.

41 And when the ten heard they began to be displeased with James and John.

42 And calling them to him, Jesus says to them: You know that those who are accounted to rule the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and their great men exercise authority over them.

43 Not so however is it among you; but whoever will become great among you, shall be your minister,

44 And whoever of you will become first, shall be servant of all.

45 For the Son of man came not to be ministered to, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

46 And they come to Jericho. And as he went out from Jericho with his disciples and a great multitude, Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the road.

47 And hearing that it was Jesus the Nazarene, he began to cry out and say: Son of David, Jesus, have mercy on me.

48 And many rebuked him that he should be silent; but he cried much more: Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood and said: Call him. And they called the blind man, saying to him: Take courage, rise, he calls thee.

50 And throwing aside the mantle, he sprang up and came to Jesus.

51 And answering him, Jesus said: What wilt thou that I shall do for thee? And the blind man said to him: Rabboni, that I may receive sight.

52 Jesus said to him: Go, thy faith has saved thee. And he immediately received sight, and followed him in the way.

Mark 11

1 And when they drew near to Jerusalem, and to Bethany at the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples

2 And said to them: Go into the village that is opposite to you, and, immediately on entering it, you shall find a colt tied, on which no man has ever yet sat: loose and bring him.

3 And if any one say to you: Why do you this? say: The Lord has need of him, and he will immediately send him hither again.

4 And they went and found the colt tied at the door without at the turn of the street, and they loosed him.

5 And some of those standing there said to them: What do you loosing the colt?

6 And they answered them as Jesus' had said; and they gave them permission.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and threw their clothes upon him, and he sat on him.

8 And many spread their mantles in the road, but others, bundles of straw, having cut them from the fields.

9 And those that went before, and those that followed, cried: Hosanna, blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord:

10 blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David: Hosanna in the highest.

11 And he went into Jerusalem into the temple; and having looked around on all things, the hour being now late, he went out to Bethany with the twelve.

12 And, on the morrow, as they came out from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 And seeing a fig-tree at a distance having leaves, he came if perhaps he might find anything on it; and when he came to it he found nothing but leaves; for it was not the season for figs.

14 And answering he said to it: No more for ever may any one eat fruit from thee. And his disciples heard him.

15 And they came to Jerusalem. And entering into the temple he began to drive out those that sold and those that bought in the temple, and he overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of those that sold doves,

16 And permitted no one to carry a vessel through the temple;

17 and taught and said to them: Is it not written that my house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations? But you have made it a den of robbers.

18 And the chief priests and the scribes heard, and sought how they might destroy him; for they feared him, for all the multitude were astonished at his teaching.

19 And when it became late he went forth out of the city.

20 And as they passed by in the morning they saw the fig-tree withered from the roots.

21 And Peter calling it to mind said to him: Rabbi, See, the fig-tree that thou cursedst has withered.

22 And Jesus answered and said to them: Have faith in God.

23 Verily I say to you that whoever shall say to this mountain: Be taken up and thrown into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that what he says shall take place, it shall be done for him.

24 Wherefore I say to you, all things whatever you pray for and ask, believe that you receive, and you shall have them.

25 And when you stand praying, forgive if you have any thing against any one, that your Father who is in the heavens may forgive you your offenses.

26 [no verse]

27 And they came again into Jerusalem. And as he was walking in the temple, there came to him the chief priests and the scribes and the elders,

28 and said to him: By what authority doest thou these things? Or who gave thee this authority that thou shouldst do these things?

29 But Jesus said to them: I will ask you one word, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these, things.

30 The baptism of John, was it of heaven or of men? Answer me.

31 And they reasoned among themselves, saying: If we say: Of heaven, he will reply: Why then did you not believe him?

32 but shall we say: Of men, they feared the people; for all held John that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered Jesus and said: We know not. And Jesus said to them: Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

Mark 12

1 And he began to speak to them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and put a hedge about it, and dug an under winevat and built a tower, and let it out to vinedressers and went into another country.

2 And at the time he sent to the vinedressers a servant, that he might receive from the vinedressers of the fruits of the vineyard.

3 And they took him and scourged him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent to them another servant; and they wounded him in the head and dishonored him.

5 And he sent another; and him they killed, and many others, scourging some, and killing some.

6 Yet one had he, a son beloved: he sent him to them last, saying: They will reverence my son.

7 But those vinedressers said among themselves: This is the heir: come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What will the lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the vinedressers, and give the vineyard to others.

10 Have you not read this scripture? A stone that the builders rejected, this became the head of the corner:

11 this was from the Lord, and it is wondrous in our eyes?

12 And they sought to lay hold on him and feared the multitude: for they knew that he had Spoken the parable against them. And leaving him they went away.

13 And they send to him some of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they may entrap him in a word.

14 And they come and say to him: Teacher, we know that thou art true, and thou carest for no one; for thou lookest not on the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth. Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar or not? Must we give or not give?

15 But he, perceiving their hypocrisy, said to them: Why tempt me? Bring me a denarius that I may see it.

16 They brought it. And he said to them: Whose image is this, and the superscription? They said to him: Caesar's.

17 And Jesus said to them: Return to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they were astonished at him.

18 And the Sadducees, who say that there is no resurrection, came to him, and questioned him, saying:

19 Teacher, Moses wrote for us that, if any one's brother die, and leave a wife, and leave no child, his brother shall take his wife, and raise up offspring for his brother.

20 There were seven brothers; and the first took a wife, and dying left no offspring.

21 And the second took her, and died leaving no offspring; and the third in like manner;

22 and the seven left no offspring. Last of all the woman also died.

23 In the resurrection, when they rise, of which of them shall she be the wife? For the seven had her as a wife.

24 Jesus said to them: Do you not therefore err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God?

25 For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as angels in the heavens.

26 But concerning the dead, that they do rise. Have you not read in the book of Moses, at the Bush, how God spoke to him, saying: I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but of the living. You greatly err.

28 And one of the scribes came forward as he had heard them disputing, and seeing that he had answered them well, he asked him: Which is the first commandment of all?

29 Jesus answered him: The first is: Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord;

30 and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart, and with thy whole soul, and with thy whole mind, and with thy whole strength.

31 The second is this: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. There is no other commandment greater than these.

32 And the scribe said to him: Teacher, in truth hast thou well said that there is One, and there is no other beside him.

33 And to love him with the whole heart, and with the whole understanding, and with the whole strength, and to love one's neighbor as himself is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And Jesus, seeing him that he had answered with understanding, said to him: Not far art thou from the kingdom of God. And no one any more ventured to ask him a question.

35 And Jesus answered and said, while teaching in the temple: How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?

36 David himself said in the Holy Spirit: The Lord said to my Lord: Sit at my right hand till I make thy enemies thy footstool.

37 David himself calls him Lord; and whence is he his son? And the great multitude heard him with pleasure.

38 And in his teaching he said; Beware of the scribes, who delight to walk about in robes, and love salutations in the markets,

39 And the first seats in the synagogues, and the first reclining places at suppers:

40 Who eat up widow's houses and for a pretext make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation.

41 And as he sat opposite the treasury, he was observing how the multitude threw money into the treasury; and many rich men threw in much;

42 And there came one poor widow and threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And calling his disciples to him, he said to them: Verily I say to you that this poor widow has thrown in more than all that are throwing into the treasury;

44 For all have thrown in out of their abundance; but she out of her poverty has thrown in all that she had, her whole living.

Mark 13

1 And as he was going out of the temple, one of his disciples said to him: Teacher, see what manner of stones, and what manner of buildings.

2 And Jesus said to him: Seest thou these great buildings? There shall not be left a stone upon a stone that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives opposite to the temple. Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately:

4 Tell us, when shall these things be? And what the sign when all these things shall be accomplished?

- 5 And Jesus began to say to them: See that no one deceive you.
- 6 Many shall come in my name, saying: I am he, and shall deceive many.
- 7 But when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, be not troubled: they must take place, but not yet the end.
- 8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: there shall be earthquakes in various places, there shall be famines.
- 9 These are the beginning of pains. But see you to yourselves: they shall deliver you up to councils, and in synagogues you shall be beaten, and before governors and kings shall you stand for my sake, for a testimony to them.
- 10 And among all nations shall the gospel first be preached.
- 11 And when they lead you delivering you up, be not anxious beforehand what you shall speak; but whatever shall be given you in that hour, this speak; for you are not the speakers, but the Holy Spirit.
- 12 And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father the child, and children shall rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death.
- 13 And you shall be hated by all because of my name; but he that endures to the end, he shall be saved.
- 14 But when you see the abomination of desolation standing where it ought not (let the reader understand), then let those in Judea flee to the mountains:
- 15 And he that is on the housetop let him not come down nor go in to take any thing from his house:
- 16 And he that is in the field let him not turn back to take his mantle.
- 17 But alas for them that are with child, and them that give suck in those days.
- 18 But pray that it may not take place in winter.
- 19 For those days shall be affliction, such as has not been from the beginning of the creation, which God created, till now, and shall not be.
- 20 And unless the Lord had shortened the days, no flesh would have been saved; but because of the elect whom he has chosen he has shortened the days.
- 21 And then, if any one say to you: Lo, here is Christ, lo there; believe not.
- 22 But false Christs, and false prophets shall arise, and shall do signs and wonders in order to deceive, if possible, the elect.
- 23 But do you beware: I have told you all things beforehand.
- 24 But in those days after that affliction the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

25 And the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers which are in the heavens shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in clouds with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send the angels and gather the elect from the four winds, from the end of earth to the end of heaven.

28 But learn the parable from the fig-tree. When its branch has now become tender and put forth leaves, you know that summer is near:

29 So also you, when you see these things taking place, know that it is near, at the doors.

30 Verily I say to you that this generation shall not pass away, till all these things shall have been accomplished.

31 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

32 But of that day or the hour no one knows, neither the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father.

33 Beware, watch; for you know not when the time is.

34 As a man, going to another country, left his house, and gave to his servants authority, to each one his work, and commanded the doorkeeper to watch.

35 Watch therefore; for you know not when the lord of the house comes, whether in the evening, or at midnight, or at cock-crowing, or in the morning:

36 Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping.

37 But what I say to you, I say to all. Watch.

Mark 14

1 But after two days came the passover and the unleavened bread; and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft and put him to death;

2 For they said: Not on the feast, lest there be a tumult of the people.

3 And while he was in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, as he reclined at table there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of pure spikenard, very costly: after breaking the box she poured it on his head.

4 But some expressed displeasure among themselves: Why was this waste of the ointment made?

5 For this ointment could have been sold for more than three hundred denarii and given to the poor; and they murmured against her.

6 But Jesus said: Let her alone: why give her trouble? a good work has she wrought on me.

7 For the poor you have always with you, and when you will you can do them good; but me you have not always.

8 What she could she has done: she has come beforehand to anoint my body for the burial.

9 And verily I say to you, wherever the gospel shall be preached in the whole world, this also that she has done shall be told for a memorial of her.

10 And Judas Iscariot, who was one of the twelve, went away to the chief priests that he might deliver him up to them.

11 And when they heard it they were glad, and promised to give him money; and he sought how he might conveniently deliver him up.

12 And on the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples say to him: Where wilt thou that we go and make ready that thou mayest eat the passover?

13 And he sends two of his disciples and says to them: Go into the city, and there shall meet you a man carrying a pitcher of water; follow him,

14 and wherever he enters, say to the master of the house that the Teacher says: Where is my guest-chamber where I may eat the passover with my disciples?

15 And he will show you a large upper room furnished, ready: there prepare for us.

16 And the disciples went out, and came into the city, and found as he had said to them, and made ready the passover.

17 And when it was evening he comes with the twelve.

18 And as they reclined at table and ate, Jesus said: Verily I say to you that one of you shall deliver me up, he that eats with me.

19 They began to be sad and to say to him one by one: Is it I?

20 But he said to them: one of the twelve, he that dips with me into the dish.

21 For the Son of man goes, as it is written of him; but alas for that man by whom the Son of man is delivered up: good were it for that man if he had not been born.

22 And as they ate, having taken bread and blessed, he broke and gave to them and said: Take: this is my body.

23 And having taken the cup and given thanks, he gave to them; and they all drank of it.

24 And he said to them: This is my blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many.

25 Verily I say to you that I will no more drink of the fruit of the vine, till that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

26 And they sung a hymn and went out into the mount of Olives.

27 And Jesus says to them: You all shall be offended; for it is written: I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after I have risen I will go before you into Galilee.

29 But Peter said to him: Though all should be offended, yet not I.

30 And Jesus says to him: Verily I say to thee that thou, this day, on this night, before a cock shall have crowed twice, thou shalt deny me three times.

31 But he said with vehemence: Though it should be necessary for me to die with thee, I will in no way deny thee. And in like manner also said they all.

32 And they come to a place, the name of which is Gethsemane; and he says to his disciples: Sit here till I pray.

33 And he took with him Peter and James and John, and began to be greatly amazed and in anguish,

34 And said to them: My soul is encompassed with sorrow even to death: remain here and watch.

35 And going forward a little he fell on the ground, and prayed that if it was possible the hour might pass away from him;

36 And he said: Abba, Father, all things are possible for thee; remove this cup from me: yet not what I will, but what thou.

37 And he comes and finds them sleeping, and says to Peter: Simon, sleepest thou? hadst thou not strength to watch one hour?

38 Watch and pray, lest you enter into I temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away and prayed, saying the same word.

40 And he returned and found them sleeping again; for their eyes were heavy; and they knew not what they should answer him.

41 And he comes the third time and says to them: Sleep the remaining time, and rest; it is enough; the hour has come: behold, the Son of man is delivered into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise, let us go: behold, he that delivers me up is at hand.

43 And immediately while he was yet speaking, comes Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, and with him a multitude with swords and clubs, from the chief priests and the scribes and elders.

44 But he that delivered him up had given them a sign, saying: Whomever I shall kiss, he it is: hold him fast, and lead him away securely.

45 And when he had come he immediately came forward and said to him: Rabbi, and kissed him;

46 And they laid hands on him and held him fast.

47 But some one of those standing by drew a sword, and smote the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jesus answered and said to them: As against a robber you have come out with swords and clubs to take me.

49 Daily was I with you in the temple teaching, and you did not lay hold on me; but that the scriptures might be fulfilled.

50 And all left him and fled.

51 And one, a young man, followed him, having a linen cloth thrown around his naked body; and they laid hold of him;

52 But he left the linen cloth and fled naked.

53 And they led Jesus away to the chief priests; and all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes came together.

54 And Peter followed him at a distance, till within the court of the chief priests; and he was sitting with the attendants, and warming himself at the fire.

55 And the chief priests and the whole Sanhedrim sought testimony against Jesus, to put him to death, and found none;

56 For many testified falsely against him, and their testimony did not agree.

57 And some arose and testified falsely against him, saying:

58 We heard him say that I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and in three days build another made without hands.

59 And not even thus did their testimony agree.

60 And the chief priest arose in the midst and asked Jesus, saying: Answerest thou nothing? What do these testify against thee?

61 But he was silent and answered nothing. Again the chief priest asked him and said to him: Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?

62 And Jesus said: I am; and you shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of Power, and coming with the clouds of heaven.

63 And the chief priest rent his clothes and said: What further need have we of witnesses?

64 You have heard the blasphemy: what think you? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

65 And some began to spit upon him, and to cover his face, and to strike him with the fist, and say to him: Prophecy; and the attendants, striking him with the open hand, took him into custody.

66 And while Peter was below in the court, there came one of the maidservants of the chief priest,

67 And seeing Peter warming himself, she looked on him and said: Thou also wast with Jesus the Nazarene.

68 But he denied, saying: I neither know nor understand what thou sayest. And he went forth without into the entrance, and a cock crew.

69 And the maidservant saw him and began again to say to those standing by: This man is of them.

70 But he again denied. And after a little while again they that stood by said to Peter: Truly thou art of them; for thou art a Galilean.

71 But he began to call down curses on himself, and to swear: I know not this man of whom you speak.

72 And immediately a second time a cock crew. And Peter remembered the word as Jesus spoke to him: Before a cock shall have crowed twice, thou shalt deny me three times. And when he thought on it he wept.

Mark 15

1 And immediately in the morning, the chief priests, with the elders and the scribes, and the whole Sanhedrim having prepared counsel, bound Jesus and led him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him: Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered and said to him: Thou sayest.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things.

4 And Pilate again asked him: Answerest thou nothing? See of how many things they accuse thee,

5 But Jesus no longer answered any thing: so that Pilate wondered.

6 But at every feast he released to them one prisoner whom they chose.

7 And there was one called Barabbas bound with the insurgents who, in the insurrection, had committed murder.

8 And the multitude coming up began to ask that he would do as he was accustomed to do for them.

9 And Pilate answered them, saying: Will you that I release to you the King of the Jews?

10 For he knew that because of envy the chief priests had delivered him up.

11 But the chief priests instigated the multitude that he should rather release Barabbas to them.

12 And Pilate again answered and said to them: What then will you that I shall do with him whom you call King of the Jews?

13 They again cried out: Crucify him.

14 But Pilate said to them: Why, what evil has he done? But they cried out vehemently: Crucify him.

15 And Pilate, willing to satisfy the multitude, released to them Barabbas, and delivered Jesus, after he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the soldiers led him away within the court, which is the Pretorium, and called together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him in purple, and having plaited a crown of thorns they put it on him:

18 And began to salute him: Hail, King of the Jews.

19 And they struck his head with a reed, and spit upon him, and bowing the knees they worshipped him.

20 And when they had derided him, they took off from him the purple, and put on him his own clothes. And they led him out to crucify him,

21 And they impressed one, Simon a Cyrenian, as he passed by coming from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

22 And they bring him to the place Golgotha, which is, when translated, the place of a skull.

23 And they gave him wine mingled with myrrh; but he did not receive it.

24 And they crucified him, and divided his garments among them, casting a lot on them what each should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation written on him was, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

28 [no verse]

27 And with him they crucify two robbers, one on his right and one on his left.

29 And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads and saying: Aha, thou that destroyest the temple and buildest it in three days,

30 Save thyself by coming down from the cross.

31 In like manner also the chief priests deriding among themselves with the scribes said: Others he saved, himself he cannot save.

32 Christ the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified with him reproached him.

33 And when the sixth hour had come, there came a darkness over the whole land till the ninth hour.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice: Eloi, Eloi, lema sabachthanei, which is, translated: My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of those that stood by, hearing it, said: Lo, he calls for Elijah.

36 But someone ran and filled a sponge with vinegar, and putting it on a reed, gave him to drink, saying: Wait, let us see if Elijah is coming to take him down.

37 But Jesus having uttered a loud cry expired.

38 And the veil of the temple was rent in two from top to bottom.

39 And the centurion that stood by opposite to him, seeing that he thus expired, said: Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 And there were women also looking on from a distance, among whom were Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the younger, and the mother of Jesus, and Salome;

41 Who, when he was in Galilee, followed him and ministered to him; and many others came up with him to Jerusalem.

42 And evening having now come, because it was the preparation, which is sabbath-eve,

43 Came Joseph who was of Arimathea, an honorable counselor, who also himself was looking for the kingdom of God, and went in boldly to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.

44 But Pilate wondered if he were already dead; and calling to him the centurion, he inquired if he had been dead any time;

45 And learning from the centurion, he gave the corpse to Joseph.

46 And he bought linen, took him down, wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulcher that had been hewed out of a rock, and rolled a stone to the door of the sepulcher.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Jesus saw where he was laid.

Mark 16a

1 And when the sabbath had passed, Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 And very early on the first of the week they came to the sepulcher, the sun having risen.

3 And they said among themselves: Who shall roll away for us the stone from the door of the sepulcher?

4 And looking up they see that the stone had been rolled away; for it was very great.

5 And they entered the sepulcher and saw a young man, sitting at the right side, clothed in a white robe; and they were amazed.

6 But he says to them: Be not amazed. You seek Jesus the Nazarene who was crucified; he has risen, he is not here: see the place where they laid him.

7 But go, tell his disciples, especially Peter, that he goes before you into Galilee: there you shall see him, as he said to you.

8 And going out they fled from the sepulcher; for trembling and astonishment had seized them; and they said nothing to any one, for they were afraid.

Note:

According to Tischendorf, the remaining twelve verses were not written by Mark. Codex Sinaiticus and Vaticanus have them not. The learned reader can see the proof as given by Tischendorf. See, also, Tregelles and Alford.

**The Longer Recension of Mark
According to the American Standard Version (1901)**

(These verses do not appear in the Codex Sinaiticus)

Mark 16b

9. Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons.

10. She went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11. And they, when they heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, disbelieved.

12. And after these things he was manifested in another form unto two of them, as they walked, on their way into the country.

13. And they went away and told it unto the rest: neither believed they them.

14. And afterward he was manifested unto the eleven themselves as they sat at meat; and he upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them that had seen him after he was risen.

15. And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation.

16. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned.

17. And these signs shall accompany them that believe: in my name shall they cast out demons; they shall speak with new tongues;

18. they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19. So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken unto them, was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God.

20. And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word by the signs that followed. Amen.

According to LukeLuke 1

1 Since many have undertaken to draw up a narrative of the matters that have been fully accomplished among us,

2 as those, who, from the beginning became eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, delivered them to us,

3 it seemed good to me also, after having accurately traced all things from the first, to write them in order for thee, most noble Theophilus,

4 that thou mightst know the certainty of the words concerning which thou hast been instructed.

5 There was in the days of Herod king of Judea a priest, named Zachariah, of the class of Abijah, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizebeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

7 And they had no child, because Elizebeth was barren, and both were advanced in their days.

8 But it came to pass while he acted as priest, in the order of his class, before God,

9 according to the custom of the priesthood his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord;

10 and all the multitude of the people were praying without at the hour of incense.

11 And there appeared to him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And Zachariah was troubled when he saw him, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said to him: Fear not, Zachariah, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizebeth shall bear thee a son; and thou shalt call his name John;

14 and thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth.

15 For he shall be great before the Lord, and wine and strong drink he shall by no means drink, and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit even from his mother's womb;

16 and many of the sons of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God;

17 and he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of fathers to children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready for the Lord a people prepared.

18 And Zachariah said to the angel: By what means shall I know this? for I am an aged man, and my wife is advanced in her days.

19 And the angel answered and said to him: I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and I am sent to speak to thee, and bring thee these good tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumb and not able to speak, till the day in which these things shall be accomplished, because thou didst not believe my words, which shall be fulfilled in their time.

21 And the people were waiting for Zachariah, and wondered that he stayed so long in the temple.

22 But when he came out he was not able to speak to them; and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; and he made signs to them, and remained speechless.

23 And it came to pass when the days of his service were completed, he departed to his house.

24 And after those days his wife Elizebeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying:

25 Thus has the Lord dealt with me in the days in which he looked on me to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 to a virgin betrothed to a man, whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the name of the virgin was Mary.

28 And coming in to her, the angel said: Hail, highly favored, the Lord is with thee.

29 But she was troubled at the word, and was reasoning what manner of salutation this could be.

30 And the angel said to her: Fear not, Mary; for thou hast found favor with God.

31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in the womb and bear a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus.

32 He shall be great, and Son of the Highest shall he be called; and the Lord God shall give him the throne of David his father,

33 and he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

34 But Mary said to the angel: How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered and said to her: The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: wherefore also the holy one that is born shall be called the Son of God.

36 And behold, thy relative Elizebeth, she also has conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her that is called barren:

37 for no word from God shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said: Behold the handmaid of the Lord: let it be done for me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those days and went into the mountainous country with haste to a city of Judah,

40 and entered the house of Zachariah, and saluted Elizebeth.

41 And it came to pass when Elizebeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe in her womb leaped. And Elizebeth was filled with the Holy Spirit,

42 and spoke out with a loud cry, and said: Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.

43 And whence is this to me that the mother of my Lord should come, to me?

44 For behold, as the voice of thy salutation came into my ears, the babe in my womb leaped with joy.

45 And blessed is she who believed that there shall be a fulfillment of the things spoken to her from the Lord.

46 And Mary said: My soul magnifies the Lord,

47 and my spirit rejoiced in God my Saviour,

48 because he looked upon the lowly condition of his handmaid. For behold, from this time shall all generations call me blessed,

49 because the mighty One has done great things for me. And holy is his name;

50 and his mercy is from generation to generation on them that fear him.

51 He has shown might with his arm; he has scattered the proud in the understanding of their heart:

52 he has cast down the mighty from thrones, and exalted the lowly:

53 the poor has he filled with good things and the rich has he sent empty away.

54 He has helped Israel his servant, by remembering mercy,

55 (as he spoke to our fathers), to Abraham and to his posterity forever.

56 And Mary remained with her about three months, and returned to her house.

57 But the time for Elizebeth to bring forth was completed, and she bore a son.

58 And her neighbors and relatives heard that the Lord had magnified his mercy to her and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to pass on the eighth day that they came to circumcise the child, and they called it by the name of its father, Zachariah.

60 And its mother answered and said: No; but it shall be called John.

61 And they said to her: There is no one of thy kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signs to his father what he would have him called.

63 And having asked for a writing tablet, he wrote, saying: His name is John. And they all wondered.

64 But his mouth was immediately opened and his tongue loosed, and he spoke, blessing God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt about them; and all these things were much talked of in all the mountainous country of Judea;

66 and all that heard laid them up in their heart, saying: What then will this child be? for the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And Zachariah his father was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying:

68 Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel, because he has visited and redeemed his people;

69 and has raised up for us, in the house of David his servant, a horn of salvation,

70 as he spoke through the mouth of his holy prophets of ancient times,

71 salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us,

72 to show mercy to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant,

73 the oath that he swore to Abraham our father, to grant to us

74 that being delivered from the hand of enemies we might serve him without fear,

75 in holiness and righteousness before him all our days.

76 And thou also, O child, shalt be called prophet of the Highest; for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways,

77 to give to his people the knowledge of salvation in remission of their sins,

78 through the tender mercies of our God, in which the dawn from on high has visited us,

79 to give light to them that sit in darkness and the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the child grew and became strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his manifestation to Israel.

Luke 2

1 But it came to pass in those days, there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the habitable land should be enrolled.

2 This enrollment took place first when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.

3 And all went to be enrolled, each one to his own city.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and family of David,

5 to be enrolled with Mary who was betrothed to him, being with child.

6 And it came to pass while they were there, the days for her to bring forth were completed;

7 and she brought forth her son the firstborn, and swathed him, and laid him in a stall, because there was no place for them in the inn.

8 And there were in the same country shepherds living in the fields, and keeping guard over their flock during the watches of the night.

9 And an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were afraid with great fear.

10 And the angel said to them: Fear not; for behold, I bring you glad tidings of great joy, which shall be for all the people;

11 for there is born to you this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, who is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a sign to you: you shall find a babe swathed in a stall.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying:

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace among men of his good pleasure.

15 And it came to pass when the angels had gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another: Let us go now to Bethlehem, and see this thing that has come to pass, which the Lord has made known to us.

16 And they came in haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in the stall.

17 And when they had seen it, they made known concerning this thing that had been told them of this child.

18 And all that heard were astonished at the things told to them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these words, pondering them in her heart.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all things that they had heard and seen as it had been told to them.

21 And when eight days had been completed for circumcising him, his name was also called Jesus, as it had been called by the angel before he had been conceived in the womb.

22 And when the days of their purification had been completed, according to the law of Moses, they brought him up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord,

23 as it is written in the law of the Lord: Every male that opens the womb shall be called holy to the Lord;

24 and to offer a sacrifice according to what is said in the law of the Lord, a pair of doves or two young pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel, and the Holy Spirit was upon him:

26 and it had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he should not see, death, before he had seen the Lord's anointed.

27 And he came in the Spirit into the temple; and when the parents brought in the child Jesus that they might do for him according to the custom of the law,

28 he also took him into his arms, and blessed God and said:

29 Now, Lord, lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word, 30 for my eyes have seen thy salvation,

31 which thou hast prepared before the face of all the people,

32 a light for a revelation to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And his father and his mother were wondering at the things spoken concerning him.

34 And Simeon blessed them and said to Mary his mother: Behold, this is set for the fall and rise of many in Israel, and for a sign to be spoken against.

35 And a sword shall pass through thy soul also that thoughts may be revealed out of many hearts.

36 There was also Anna a prophetess, a daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher: she was advanced in many days, having lived with a husband seven years from her virginity,

37 and she was a widow till eighty-four years, who departed not from the temple, serving day and night with fastings and prayers.

38 And coming in at the same hour, she gave thanks to God, and spoke of him to all that looked for the redemption of Jerusalem.

39 And when they had accomplished all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee to their own city Nazareth.

40 And the child grew and became strong, being filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was upon him.

41 And his parents went yearly to Jerusalem at the feast of passover.

42 And when he was twelve years of age, they having gone up according to the custom of the feast,

43 and having completed the days, on their return the child Jesus remained in Jerusalem, and his parents knew it not.

44 But supposing that he was in the company, they went a day's journey, and sought for him among the relatives and the acquaintances,

45 and not finding him, they returned to Jerusalem seeking for him.

46 And it came to pass after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both hearing them and asking them questions;

47 and all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

48 And when they saw him they were amazed, and his mother said to him: Child, why hast thou dealt with us thus? Behold, thy father and I have sought thee, sorrowing.

49 And he said to them: Why is it that you sought me? Did you not know that I must be about my Father's business?

50 And they understood not the word that he spoke to them.

51 And he went down with them and came to Nazareth, and was subject to them. And his mother kept all the words in her heart.

52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and age, and in favor with God and men.

Luke 3

1 But in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod tetrarch of Galilee, and Philip his brother tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene,

2 in the days of the chief priest Annas and of Caiaphas, the word of God came to John the son of Zachariah in the wilderness;

3 and he came into all the region round about the Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins,

4 as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet: The voice of one crying in the wilderness: Prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths straight:

5 every ravine shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low, and the crooked places shall be made straight, and the rough ways smooth,

6 and all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

7 He said therefore to the multitudes that came out to be baptized by him: Brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the coming wrath?

8 Bring forth then fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves: We have Abraham as a father; for I say to you that God is able from these stones to raise up children for Abraham.

9 And now also the ax is lying at the root of the trees: every tree therefore that brings not forth good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.

10 And the multitudes asked him, saying: What then shall we do?

11 And he answered and said to them: He that has two coats let him give to him that has none, and he that has food let him do in like manner.

12 And publicans also came to be baptized, and said to him: Teacher, what shall we do?

13 And he said to them: Exact no more than that which has been appointed to you.

14 And soldiers also asked, saying: What shall we also do? And he said to them: Do violence to no one, accuse no one falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 But while the people were in expectation, and all were reasoning in their hearts concerning John, whether he were the Christ or not,

16 John answered, saying to them all: I indeed baptize you in water; but there comes he that is mightier than I, the strap of whose sandals I am not worthy to loose; he shall baptize you in the Holy Spirit and fire:

17 whose winnowing-shovel is in his hand to thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor, and gather the grain into his granary; but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

18 With many other exhortations then indeed preached he the gospel to the people;

19 but Herod the tetrarch being reproached by him concerning Herodias the wife of his brother, and concerning all the wicked things which Herod had done,

20 added this also to them all; he shut up John in prison.

21 But it came to pass that while all the people were baptized, Jesus also having been baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,

22 and the Holy Spirit came down, in a bodily form like a dove, upon him, and a voice came from heaven: Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased,

23 And Jesus himself was, when he began his ministry, about thirty years old, being, as was supposed, the son of Joseph, son of Heli,

24 son of Matthat, son of Levi, son: of Malchi, son of Jannai, son of Joseph,

25 son of Mattithiah, son: of Amos, son of Nahum, son of Esli, son of Naggai,

26 son of Maath, son of Mattithiah, son of Shimei, son of Joseph, son of Joda,

27 son of Jonan, son of Rhesa, son of Zerubbabel, son of Shealtiel, son of Neri,

28 son of Malchi, son of Addi, son of Cosam, son of Elmaam, son of Er,

29 son of Jesus, son of Eliezer, son of Jorim, son of Matthat, son of Levi,

30 son of Symeon, son of Judah, son of Joseph, son of Jonam, son of Eliakim,

31 son of Melea, son of Menna, son of Mattatha, son of Nathan, son of David,

32 son of Jesse, son of Obed, son of Boaz, son of Salmon, son of Nahshon,

33 son of Aminadab, son of Admin, son of Ami, son of Hezron, son of Pharez, son of Judah,

34 son of Jacob, son of Isaac, son of Abraham, son of Terah, son of Nahor,

35 son of Serug, son of Reu, son of Peleg, son of Heber, son of Shelah,

36 son of Kenan, son of Arphaxad, son of Shem, son of Noah, son of Lamech,

37 son of Methusaleh, son of Enoch, son of Jared, son of Mahalaleel, son of Kenan,

38 son of Enos, son of Seth, son of Adam, son of God.

Luke 4

1 But Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and was led in the Spirit into the wilderness forty days, tempted by the devil. And he ate nothing in those days, and when they were ended he was hungry.

3 And the devil said to him: If thou art the Son of God, speak to this stone that it may become bread.

4 And Jesus answered to him: It is written that not by bread alone shall man live.

5 And having led him up, he showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said to him: To thee will I give all this authority and the glory of them, for to me it is delivered; and to whomever I will I give it:

7 if therefore thou wilt worship before me, all shall be thine.

8 And Jesus answered and said to him: It is written: Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve,

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on the wing of the temple, and said to him: If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down hence;

10 for it is written that he shall give his angels charge concerning thee to guard thee safely;

11 and in their hands they shall take thee up, lest perhaps thou strike thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answered and said to him: It is said: Thou shalt not put the Lord thy God to the proof.

13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation he departed from him for a time.

14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee; and a fame concerning him went forth through all that surrounding country.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, glorified by all.

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and went, according to his custom, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read.

17 And there was given to him the book of the prophet Isaiah; and having unrolled the book he found the place where it is written:

18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he has sent me

19 to preach deliverance to the captives and recovering of sight to the blind; to set at liberty the bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

20 And having rolled up the book and given it back to the attendant, he sat down; and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fixed upon him.

21 And he began to say to them: This day is fulfilled this Scripture in your ears.

22 And all applauded him and wondered at the words of grace that proceeded out of his mouth, and said: Is not this the son of Joseph?

23 And he said to them: You will surely speak this parable to me: Physician, heal thyself; whatever things we heard were done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country.

24 But he said: Verily I say to you, that no prophet is accepted in his own country.

25 And I tell you in truth that there were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up for three years and six months, when there came a great famine on the whole land:

26 and to no one of them was Elijah sent but to Sarepta of Sidon, to a woman a widow.

27 And there were many lepers in Israel in the days of Elisha the prophet, and no one of them was cleansed but Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all in the synagogue, on hearing these things, were filled with anger,

29 and rose up and thrust him out of the city, and brought him to the brow of the mount on which their city was built, so as to cast him down headlong;

30 but passing through the midst of them, he went away.

31 And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbaths;

32 and they were amazed at his teaching, for his word was with authority.

33 And in the synagogue there was a man that had a spirit of an unclean demon, and he cried out with a great voice:

34 Aha, what have we to do with thee, Jesus the Nazarene? Hast thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying: Be silent and come out of him. And the demon threw him into the midst and came out of him, and hurt him in no way.

36 And amazement came upon all, and they spoke one to another, saying: What a word is this, that with authority and power he commands the unclean spirits, and they come out?

37 And there went forth a rumor concerning him into every place of the surrounding country.

38 And rising up from the synagogue, he entered into the house of Simon. And Simon's mother-in-law was confined with a great fever; and they besought him for her.

39 And standing over her he rebuked the fever, and it left her; and she immediately rose and ministered to them.

40 But when the sun had gone down, all, as many as had any sick with various diseases, brought them to him; and he laid his hands on each one of them and cured them.

41 And demons also went forth from many, crying out and saying: Thou art the Son of God. And rebuking them, he permitted them not to speak, for they knew that he was the Christ.

42 But when it was day he went out and departed to a desert place; and the multitudes sought for him: and they came to him, and endeavored to detain him that he might not go away from them.

43 But he said to them: I must preach the kingdom of God to the other cities also, because for this was I sent.

44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

Luke 5

1 But it came to pass while the multitude pressed upon him and heard the word of God, he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret,

2 and saw two ships standing by the lake; but the fishermen had gone out of them and had washed the nets.

3 And entering into one of the ships, which was Simon's, he asked him to put out a little from the land; and sitting down in the ship he taught the multitudes.

4 But when he ceased speaking, he said to Simon: Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answered and said: Master, through the whole night have we toiled and taken nothing; yet at thy word I will let down the nets.

6 And when they had done this, they enclosed a great number of fishes; and their nets began to break.

7 And they made signs to the partners in the other ship that they should come and help them; and they came, and filled both ships, so that they began to sink.

8 But Simon Peter, seeing it, fell at the knees of Jesus, saying: Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord.

9 For amazement had seized on him and all that were with him, at the draught of fishes that they had taken;

10 and in like manner also on James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said to Simon: Fear not: from this time thou shalt catch men.

11 And they drew the ships to land, left all and followed him.

12 And it came to pass while he was in one of the cities, behold, a man full of leprosy; and seeing Jesus, he fell on his face and besought him, saying: Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

13 And he, stretched forth his hand and touched him, saying: I will; be clean. And immediately the leprosy departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no one; but go, show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing as Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.

15 But the more there went abroad the report concerning him; and many multitudes came together to hear, and to be cured of their infirmities.

16 But he withdrew into the deserts, and prayed.

17 And it came to pass on one of the days that he was teaching, and there were sitting Pharisees and teachers of the law, who had come out of every village of Galilee and Judea, and from Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was present that he might heal.

18 And behold, men bringing on a bed a man who was a paralytic; and they sought to bring him in and lay him before him.

19 And not finding by what way they could bring him in because of the multitude, they went up on the housetop, and through the tiling let him down with the bed into the midst before Jesus.

20 And seeing their faith he said: Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying: Who is this that speaks blasphemies? Who is able to forgive sins but God alone?

22 But Jesus perceiving their reasonings, answered and said to them: Why reason in your hearts?

23 Which is easier, to say: Thy sins are forgiven thee, or to say: Arise and walk?

24 But that you may know that the Son of man has authority on earth to forgive sins, he said to the paralytic: I say to thee, Rise, and take up thy bed, and go to thy house.

25 And he immediately rose up before them, took up that on which he had lain, and went away to his house glorifying God.

26 And astonishment seized on them all; and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying: We have seen strange things today.

27 And after these things he went out, and saw a publican named Levi sitting at the custom-house, and said to him: Follow me.

28 And leaving all, he arose and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his house; and there was a great multitude of publicans and others who were reclining at table with them.

30 And the Pharisees and their scribes murmured against his disciples, saying: Why do you eat and drink with publicans and sinners?

31 And Jesus answered and said to them: They that have health have no need of a physician, but they that are sick;

32 I have not come to call righteous men, but sinners, to repentance.

33 And they said to him: The disciples of John fast often and make prayers; likewise also those of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink.

34 But Jesus said to them: Can you make the sons of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But days will come; and when the bridegroom shall have been taken away from them, then shall they fast in those days.

36 And he spoke also a parable to them: No one tears a piece from a new garment and puts it on an old garment; otherwise, both the new makes a rent, and the piece that is from the new agrees not with the old.

37 And no one puts new wine into old bottles; otherwise, the new wine bursts the bottles, and itself is spilled, and the bottles perish;

38 but new wine must be put into new bottles.

39 And no one after drinking old, desires new; for he says: The old is good.

Luke 6

1 And it came to pass, on the first sabbath after the second day of the feast, that he went through the fields of grain, and his disciples pulled the ears of grain and ate, rubbing them in their hands.

2 But some of the Pharisees said: Why do you that which it is not lawful to do on the sabbath?

3 And Jesus answered and said to them: Have you not read this that David did, when he was hungry, himself and those that were with him?

4 How he entered into the house of God, and took the loaves of the presence, and ate and gave also to those that were with him, which it is not lawful to eat but for the priests alone?

5 And he said to them: The Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 And it came to pass on another sabbath that he went into the synagogue and taught. And a man was there, and his right hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him if he would cure on the sabbath, that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts; and he said to the man that had the withered hand: Rise and stand in the midst. And he arose and stood.

9 And Jesus said to them: I ask you if it is lawful on the sabbath to do good or to do evil, to save life or to destroy.

10 And looking around on them all, he said to him: Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored.

11 But they were filled with madness, and conferred one with another what they should do to Jesus.

12 And it came to pass in these days that he went into the mountain to pray; and he spent the night in prayer to God.

13 And when day had come, he called to him his disciples, and having chosen from among them twelve, whom he also named apostles,

14 Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew,

15 and Matthew and Thomas, and James son of Alphaeus, and Simon who is called Zealot,

16 and Judas brother of James, and Judas Iscariot who became a traitor;

17 and having come down with them he stood in a plain; and a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the seacoast of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him and to be cured of their diseases;

18 and those oppressed by unclean spirits were cured;

19 and all the multitude sought to touch him, for power went forth from him and cured all.

20 And he lifted up his eyes upon his disciples and said: Blessed are you poor, for yours is the kingdom of God.

21 Blessed are you that hunger now, for you shall be filled. Blessed are you that weep now, for you shall laugh.

22 Blessed are you when men shall hate you, and when they shall shut you out from their society, and shall reproach you, and cast your name out as evil for the sake of the Son of man.

23 Rejoice in that day and leap for joy; for behold, your reward is great in heaven; for so did their fathers to the prophets.

24 But alas for you that are rich, for you have your consolation in full.

25 Alas for you that are filled now, for you shall be hungry. Alas for you that laugh now, for you shall mourn and weep.

26 Alas when all men shall speak well of you; for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 But I say to you that hear: Love your enemies: do good to them that hate you,

28 bless them that curse you; pray for them that insult you.

29 To him that smites thee on the cheek offer the other also; and from him that takes from thee thy mantle, thy coat also withhold not.

30 Give to every one that asks of thee; and from him that takes away thy goods ask them not again.

31 And as you would that men should do to you, do you also to them in like manner.

32 And if you love them that love you, what thanks have you? for sinners love those that love them.

33 For if you do good to those that do good to you, what thanks have you? even sinners do the same.

34 And if you lend to those of whom you hope to receive, what thanks have you? even sinners lend to sinners that they may receive the same.

35 But love your enemies and do good and lend, hoping for nothing in return; and your reward shall be great, and you shall be sons of the Highest; for he is kind to the unthankful and the evil.

36 Become merciful, as your Father is merciful.

37 And judge not, and you shall not be judged; and condemn not, and you shall not be condemned. Release, and you shall be released;

38 give, and it shall be given to you; good measure, pressed down, shaken together, running over, shall they give into your lap; for with what measure you measure it shall be measured to you again.

39 And he spoke also a parable to them: Can a blind man lead a blind man? will not both fall into a pit?

40 A disciple is not above the teacher; but every one thoroughly instructed shall be as his teacher.

41 And why beholdest thou the splinter that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thy own eye?

42 How canst thou say to thy brother: Brother, let me pull out the splinter that is in thy eye, thyself not beholding the beam in thy eye? Hypocrite, pull first the beam out of thy eye, and then thou shalt see clearly to pull out the splinter that is in thy brother's eye.

43 For there is no good tree that produces corrupt fruit; nor again a corrupt tree that produces good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by its own fruit; for not from thorns collect they figs, neither from a bramble bush gather they grapes.

45 The good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, brings forth that which is good; and the evil man, out of the evil treasury, brings forth that which is evil. For out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaks.

46 But why call me: Lord, Lord, and do not the things that I say?

47 Every one that comes to me and hears my words and does them, I will show you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man building a house, who dug and deepened, and laid a foundation on the rock; and when a flood came, the stream dashed against that house, and had not strength to shake it; because it was well built.

49 But he that hears and does not, is like a man that without a foundation built a house on the earth, against which the stream dashed, and it immediately fell in heaps; and the ruin of that house was great.

Luke 7

1 After he had finished all his sayings in the ears of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurion's servant that was dear to him, being sick, was about to die.

3 But hearing of Jesus, he sent to him elders of the Jews, asking him that he would come and save his servant.

4 And they came to Jesus and asked him earnestly, saying: He is worthy for whom thou shalt do this:

5 for he loves our nation, and has himself built for us the synagogue.

6 And Jesus went with them. But when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends, saying: Lord, trouble not thyself; for I am not worthy that thou shouldst come in under my roof;

7 wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come to thee; but say in a word, and let my servant be restored to health.

8 For I am a man placed under authority, having soldiers under me; and I say to this one: Go, and he goes; and to another: Come, and he comes; and to my servant: Do this, and he does it.

9 And when Jesus heard these things he was astonished at him; and turning, he said to the multitude that followed him: I say to you, not even in Israel have I found so great faith.

10 And those that had been sent returned to the house and found the servant well.

11 And it came to pass on the following day he went to a city called Nain; and there went with him many of his disciples and a great multitude.

12 And when he came near the gate of the city, behold, there was carried out dead an only-born son of his mother, and she was a widow; and a great multitude of the city was with her.

13 And seeing her, the Lord had pity on her, and said to her: Weep not.

14 And coming forward he touched the bier; and those that bore it stopped; and he said: Young man, I say to thee. Arise.

15 And the dead man sat up and began to speak; and he gave him to his mother.

16 And fear seized them all, and they glorified God, saying: A great prophet has risen among us; and, God has visited his people.

17 And this saying concerning him went forth into the whole of Judea, and all the region round about.

18 And his disciples told John of all these things.

19 And having called some two of his disciples, John sent to the Lord, saying: Art thou he that comes, or look we for another?

20 And coming to him the men said: John the Baptist has sent us to thee, saying: Art thou he that comes, or look we for another?

21 In that hour he cured many of diseases and scourges and evil spirits, and to many blind he gave to see.

22 And he answered and said to them: Go tell John what things you have seen and heard, that the blind receive sight, the lame walk, lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, the poor have the gospel preached to them;

23 and blessed is he whoever is not offended at me.

24 But when the messengers of John had departed, he began to say to the multitudes concerning John: What went you out into the wilderness to see? a reed shaken by the wind?

25 But what went you out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft clothing and live in luxury are in kings' houses.

26 But what went you out to see? a prophet? Yes, I say to you, and more than a prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written: Behold, I send my messenger before thy face who shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 I say to you, among those born of women there is no prophet greater than John; but the least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

29 And all the people that heard and the publicans justified God, having been baptized with the baptism of John;

30 but the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, not having been baptized by him.

31 To what then shall I liken the men of this generation, and to what are they like?

32 They are like children that sit in the market and call one to another, saying: We piped to you and you did not dance, we mourned and you did not lament.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine, and you say: He has a demon.

34 The Son of man has come eating and drinking, and you say: Behold, a man, a glutton and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners.

35 And yet wisdom is justified on the part of all her children.

36 And some one of the Pharisees asked him to eat with him; and he went into the house of the Pharisee, and reclined at table.

37 And behold, a woman, who was in the city, a sinner, and had learned that he reclined at table in the house of the Pharisee, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 and stood behind at his feet weeping, and began to moisten his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 But the Pharisee that had invited him seeing it, spoke within himself, saying: This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that touches him, that she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answered and said to him: Simon, I have something to say to thee. He replied: Teacher, say on.

41 A certain creditor had two debtors: the one owed him five hundred denarii, the other, fifty.

42 As they had nothing to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them then would love him the more?

43 Simon answered and said: I suppose that he to whom he forgave the more. He said to him: Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And turning to the woman, he said to Simon: Seest thou this woman? I entered thy house; water for my feet thou gavest not; but she with her tears has moistened my feet, and with her hair has wiped them.

45 A kiss thou gavest me not; but she from the time I came in has not ceased to kiss my feet.

46 With oil my head thou didst not anoint; but she with ointment has anointed my feet.

47 Wherefore, I say to thee, her sins which are many are forgiven, because she loved much; but he to whom little is forgiven, loves little.

48 And he said to her: Thy sins are forgiven.

49 And they that reclined at table began to say within themselves: Who is this that also forgives sins?

50 But he said to the woman: Thy faith has saved thee, go in peace.

Luke 8

1 And it came to pass afterward that he went through every city and village, preaching and telling the glad tidings of the kingdom of God; and the twelve were with him,

2 and some women who had been cured of evil spirits and diseases; Mary called Magdalene, out of whom had gone seven demons,

3 and Joanna wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who ministered to him of their goods.

4 But as a great multitude had come together, and they were coming to him from every city, he spoke by a parable:

5 The sower went forth to sow his seed. And as he sowed, some fell by the way, and was trod down, and the birds of heaven ate it up;

6 and other fell upon the rock, and springing up it withered because it had no moisture;

7 and other fell in the midst of thorns, and the thorns grew with it and choked it;

8 and other fell on the good ground, and springing up it produced fruit a hundredfold. Saying these things, he cried: He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him what the parable might be.

10 And he said: To you is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; but to the rest in parables; that seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand.

11 But the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

12 And they by the way are they that hear; then comes the devil and takes away the word from their heart, lest having believed they should be saved.

13 And they on the rock are they who when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, who believe for a time, and in time of temptation apostatize.

14 But that which fell among thorns, are they that hear, and, going forth, are choked by the cares and riches and pleasures of life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they that in a good and honest heart having heard the word keep it, and bring forth fruit in patience.

16 But no one after lighting a lamp covers it with a vessel or puts it under a bed, but puts it on a lampstand, that they who come in may see the light.

17 For there is nothing concealed that shall not become manifest, neither hid which shall not be known and come into open view.

18 Take heed therefore how you hear; for whoever has, to him shall be given; and whoever has not, even that which he seems to have shall be taken from him.

19 And his mother and his brothers were coming to him, and were not able to approach him because of the multitude.

20 And it was told him: Thy mother and thy brothers stand without desiring to see thee.

21 But he answered and said to them: My mother and my brothers are they that hear the word of God and do it.

22 And it came to pass on one of the days that he himself entered a ship, and his disciples; and he said to them: Let us go over to the other side of the lake; and they put to sea.

23 But as they were sailing he fell asleep; and a squall of wind came down on the lake, and they were filled and were in danger.

24 And coming forward, they waked him, saying: Master, Master, we perish. But he awoke and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water; and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said to them: Where is your faith? But being afraid they were astonished, saying one to another: Who then is this, that he commands both the winds and the water, and they obey him?

26 And they sailed down to the country of the Gergesenes, which is opposite to Galilee.

27 And when he had come forth to land, there met him from the city a man that had demons; and for a long time he wore no clothing, and abode not in a house, but in the tombs.

28 But seeing Jesus, he cried out and fell before him, and with a loud voice said: What have I to do with thee, Jesus, Son of God Most High? I beseech thee, torment me not.

29 For he commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man; for at many times it had seized him, and he was bound with chains and fetters, being imprisoned; and breaking the bonds he was driven by the demon into the deserts.

30 And Jesus asked him, saying: What is thy name? And he said: Legion, for many demons had entered into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go away into the abyss.

32 But there was a herd of many swine feeding in the mountain; and they besought him that he would permit them to enter into them. And he permitted them.

33 And the demons having come out of the man entered into the swine; and the herd rushed down the steep into the lake and were choked.

34 But those who fed them, seeing what had been done, fled and told it in the city and in the country.

35 And they came out to see what had been done, and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the demons had gone, sitting,

clothed and in his right mind, at the feet of Jesus; and they were afraid.

36 And those that saw told them how the possessed with demons had been saved.

37 And all the multitude of the surrounding country of the Gergesenes asked him to depart from them; for they were seized with great fear; and he entered a ship and returned.

38 And the man out of whom the demons had gone besought him, that he might be with him; but he sent him away, saying:

39 Return to thy house, and tell how great things God has done for thee. And he departed, proclaiming throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done for him.

40 And it came to pass when Jesus had returned, the multitude received him gladly; for all were looking for him.

41 And behold, there came a man whose name was Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue; and falling at the feet of Jesus, he besought him to come into his house,

42 for he had a daughter, an only child, about twelve years old, and she was dying. But as he was going, the multitudes thronged him.

43 And a woman, who had had an issue of blood for twelve years, who had spent her whole living on physicians and could be cured by none,

44 came behind and touched the fringe of his mantle; and immediately the flow of her blood stopped.

45 And Jesus said: Who is it that touched me? And as all denied, Peter and those with him said: Master, the multitudes press on thee and crowd about thee.

46 But Jesus said: Some one touched me; for I perceived power going forth from me.

47 And the woman, seeing that she had not escaped notice, came trembling, and having fallen before him told before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she had been immediately restored to health.

48 But he said to her: Daughter, thy faith has saved thee; go in peace.

49 While he was yet speaking, there comes some one from the house of the ruler of the synagogue, saying: Thy daughter is dead: trouble the Teacher no more.

50 But Jesus hearing it answered him: Fear not; only believe, and she shall be saved.

51 And when he had come to the house, he permitted no one to go in with him but Peter and John and James, and the father and the mother of the child.

52 And all wept, and lamented her. But he said: Weep not: she is not dead, but sleeps.

53 And they derided him, knowing that she was dead.

54 And taking her by the hand, he called, saying: Child, awake.

55 And her spirit returned, and she immediately arose; and he commanded that food should be given to her.

56 And her parents were astonished; but he charged them to tell no one what had been done.

Luke 9

1 And having called together the twelve, he gave them power and authority over all the demons, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal,

3 and said to them: Take nothing for the journey, neither staff, nor bag, nor bread, nor silver, nor have two coats apiece.

4 And whatever house you enter, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And as many as may not receive you, when going out from that city shake off even the dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

6 And they went out and passed through every village, preaching the gospel and curing everywhere.

7 But Herod the tetrarch heard of all things that were done, and was perplexed because it was said by some that John had risen from the dead,

8 and by some that Elijah had appeared, and by others that a prophet, some one of the ancients, had risen.

9 But Herod said: John I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he sought to see him.

10 And the apostles returned and told him all things that they had done. And he took them with him and withdrew privately to a city called Bethsaida.

11 But the multitudes knew it and followed him; and he received them and spoke to them of the kingdom of God, and healed those that had need of healing.

12 But the day began to decline; and the twelve came and said to him: Send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages and country round about, and lodge and find food; for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said to them: Do you give them to eat. They replied: We have not more than five loaves and two fishes, unless we should go and buy food for all this people.

14 And they were about five thousand men. But he said to his disciples: Make them recline in table-parties of fifty each.

15 And they did so, and made them all recline.

16 And taking the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, blessed them and broke, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And all ate and were filled; and there was taken up what remained to them of broken pieces, twelve traveling-baskets.

18 And it came to pass as he was praying alone, the disciples were with him; and he asked them, saying: Who do the multitude say that I am?

19 And they answered and said; John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; and others, that a prophet, some one of the ancients, has risen.

20 But he said to them: But who say you that I am? And Peter answered and said: The Christ of God.

21 And charging them strictly, he commanded them to tell this to no one,

22 saying that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be put to death, and rise the third day.

23 And he said to all: If any one will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

24 For whoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whoever may lose his life for my sake, he shall save it.

25 For what is a man profited if he gain the whole world, but destroy himself or be lost?

26 For whoever shall have been ashamed of me and my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his glory, and that of the Father, and of the holy angels.

27 But I tell you truly, there are some of these standing here that shall not taste of death till they shall have seen the kingdom of God.

28 And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings, that he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

29 And it came to pass as he prayed that the appearance of his face was changed, and his clothing was white and glittering.

30 And behold, two men conversed with him, who were Moses and Elijah;

31 who appearing in glory spoke of his departure, which he was about to accomplish in Jerusalem.

32 But Peter and those with him were heavy with sleep; but keeping awake they saw his glory and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to pass as they were separated from him Peter said to Jesus: Master, it is good that we are here, and let us make three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah, not knowing what he said.

34 And as he spoke these things there came a cloud and overshadowed them; and they were afraid as they entered the cloud.

35 And a voice came from the cloud, saying: This is my Son, the elect; hear him.

36 And when the voice had passed, Jesus was found alone. And they kept silence, and told no one, in those days, any of the things that they had seen.

37 And it came to pass on the next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a great multitude met him.

38 And behold, a man from the multitude cried, saying: Teacher, I beseech thee, look upon my son, for he is my only born;

39 and lo, a spirit seizes him, and suddenly cries out, and convulses him so that he foams, and after bruising him hardly departs from him.

40 And I requested thy disciples that they would cast him out; and they were not able.

41 And Jesus answered and said: O generation faithless and perverse, how long shall I be with you, and bear with you? Bring thy son hither.

42 But while he was yet coming, the demon threw him down and convulsed him; and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and restored the child to health, and gave him again to his father.

43 And all were amazed at the majesty of God. But while all were wondering at all things that he did, he said to his disciples:

44 Put you into your ears these words; for the Son of man is about to be delivered into the hands of men.

45 But they comprehended not this saying, and it was concealed from them that they could not perceive it; and they were afraid to ask him concerning this saying.

46 And there arose a reasoning among them as to which of them was greatest.

47 But Jesus, knowing the reasoning of their heart, took a little child and set it by him,

48 and said to them: Whoever shall receive this child in my name receives me; and whoever shall receive me, receives him that sent me; for he that is least among you all, he is great.

49 And John answered and said: Master, we saw one casting out demons in thy name, and we forbade him, because he follows not with us.

50 And Jesus said to him: Forbid not, for he that is not against us is for us.

51 But it came to pass as the days of his being received up were completing, he steadfastly fixed his face to go to Jerusalem,

52 and sent messengers before his face. And they went and entered a city of the Samaritans, so as to make ready for him;

53 and they received him not, because his face was going to Jerusalem.

54 And the disciples James and John, seeing it, said: Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them?

55 But he turned and rebuked them.

56 And they went to another village.

57 And as they were going on the way, some one said to him: I will follow thee wherever thou goest.

58 And Jesus said to him: The foxes have dens, and the birds of the heavens have roosts, but the Son of man has not where he may lay his head.

59 And he said to another: Follow me. He replied: Permit me first to go and bury my father.

60 But he said to him: Let the dead bury their own dead: but go thou and proclaim the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said: I will follow thee, Lord; but first permit me to take leave of those at my house.

62 And Jesus said to him: No one that puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for the kingdom of God.

Luke 10

1 But after these things the Lord appointed seventy others also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place whither he himself was about to come.

2 And he said to them: The harvest indeed is great, but the laborers are few: pray therefore the Lord of the harvest that he send laborers into his harvest.

3 Go; behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves.

4 Carry no purse, no bag, no sandals: salute no one by the way.

5 Whatever house you enter, first say: Peace to this house.

6 And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it; but if not, it shall return upon you.

7 And abide in the same house, eating and drinking such things as they have; for the laborer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And whatever city you enter and they receive you, eat what is set before you,

9 and cure those in it that are sick, and say to them: The kingdom of God has come near to you,

10 But whatever city you enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets of it and say:

11 Even the dust of your city that cleaves to us on our feet we wipe off against you: yet know this that the kingdom of God is near.

12 And I say to you that it shall be more tolerable for Sodom in that day than for that city.

13 Alas for thee, Chorazin; alas for thee, Bethsaida; for if the mighty works which have been done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Furthermore, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgment, than for you.

15 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted to heaven? Thou shalt be brought down to hades.

16 He that hears you hears me; and he that rejects you rejects me; and he that rejects me rejects him that sent me.

17 And the seventy returned with joy, saying: Lord, even the demons are subjected to us in thy name.

18 And he said to them: I beheld Satan like lightning from heaven fallen.

19 Behold, I have given you authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall in any way hurt you.

20 Yet in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subjected to you; but rejoice that your names are written in the heavens.

21 In that hour he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit and said: I give thee thanks, Father, Lord of heaven and of earth, because thou hast concealed these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them to babes; yes, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 And turning to the disciples, he said: All things have been delivered to me by my Father, and no one knows who the Son is but the Father, and who the Father is but the Son, and he to whomever the Son will reveal him.

23 And turning to the disciples he said privately: Blessed are the eyes that see what you see.

24 For I say to you that many prophets and kings desired to see what you see, and did not see, and to hear what you hear, and did not hear.

25 And behold, a lawyer stood up tempting him, saying: Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

26 And he said to him: What is written in the law? How readest thou?

27 And he answered and said: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart, and with thy whole soul, and with thy whole strength, and with thy whole mind, and thy neighbor as thyself.

28 And he said to him: Thou hast rightly answered: do this, and thou shalt live.

29 But he, willing to justify himself, said to Jesus: And who is my neighbor?

30 Jesus replying said: A man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among robbers, who stripped him and wounded him, and went away, leaving him half dead.

31 And by chance a priest went down on that road, and seeing him, passed by on the other side.

32 And in like manner also a Levite, having come to the place, went and looked on and passed by on the other side.

33 But a Samaritan on a journey came opposite to him, and seeing him, was moved with pity;

34 and going to him, he bound up his wounds, pouring on oil and wine; and setting him on his own beast, took him to an inn and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow, taking out two denarii, he gave them to the innkeeper and said: Take care of him, and whatever thou spendest more. I on my return will repay thee.

36 Which of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbor to him that fell among the robbers?

37 He replied: He that showed mercy to him. And Jesus said to him: Go, and do thou in like manner.

38 And it came to pass as they journeyed that he went into a certain village; and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, who also sat at the feet of the Lord and heard his word.

40 But Martha was perplexed about much service; and she stood by him and said: Lord, carest thou not that my sister has left me to serve alone? Bid her therefore that she help me.

41 But the Lord answered and said to her: Martha, Martha, thou art anxious and troubled about many things;

42 of one however there is need; for Mary has chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

Luke 11

1 And it came to pass as he was in a certain place praying, when he had ceased, some one of his disciples said to him: Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said to them: Whenever you pray, say: Father, thy name be hallowed: thy kingdom come:

3 give us day by day our needful bread;

4 and forgive us our sins, for we also forgive every one indebted to us; and lead us not into temptation.

5 And he said to them: Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go to him at midnight and say to him: Friend, lend me three loaves,

6 because a friend of mine has come from a journey to me, and I have not what I may set before him.

7 And he from within shall answer and say: Trouble me not; the door is now closed, and my children with me are in bed: I cannot rise to give thee.

8 I say to you, though he will not give him, having risen because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needs.

9 And I say to you: Ask, and it shall be given to you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you.

10 For every one that asks receives, and he that seeks finds, and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

11 But should a son ask bread of any one of you that is a father, would he give him a stone? or also a fish, would he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 or should he also ask an egg, would he give him a scorpion?

13 If therefore you being evil know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the Father who is from heaven give the Holy Spirit to those that ask him.

14 And he was casting out a demon, and it was dumb; but it came to pass when the demon had gone out the dumb man spoke. And the multitudes wondered;

15 but some of them said: By Beelzebub, the prince of the demons, he casts out the demons.

16 And others tempting sought of him a sign from heaven.

17 But he knowing their thoughts said to them: Every kingdom divided against itself is made desolate, and house falls against house.

18 And if Satan also has been divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? for you say, that I cast out the demons by Beelzebub.

19 But if I cast out the demons by Beelzebub, by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges.

20 But if I by the finger of God cast out the demons, then has the kingdom of God already come upon you.

21 When the strong man armed keeps guard over his palace, his goods are in peace.

22 But when a stronger than he comes upon him and overcomes him, he takes away all his armor in which he has trusted, and distributes his spoils.

23 He that is not with me is against me, and he that gathers not with me

scatters*.

* lit. "scatters me" in Sinaiticus, according to Ehrman.

24 When the unclean spirit has gone out of the man, he goes through dry places seeking rest, and finding none, he says: I will return to my house whence I came.

25 And he comes and finds it swept and set in order.

26 Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and entering in, they dwell there; and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first.

27 And it came to pass as he said these things, a woman from the multitude lifted up her voice and said to him: Blessed is the womb that bore thee, and the breasts that thou didst suck.

28 But he said: Yes rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it.

29 And while the multitudes crowded together, he began to say: This generation is an evil generation: it seeks a sign, and no sign shall be given to it but the sign of Jonah.

30 For as Jonah was a sign to the Ninevites, so shall the Son of man also be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation and condemn them; for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, something greater than Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and behold, something greater than Jonah is here.

33 No one after lighting a lamp puts it in a secret place, nor under the measure, but upon the lamp-stand, that those who come in may see the light.

34 The lamp of the body is thy eye. When thy eye is simple, thy whole body also is full of light; but whenever it is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.

35 Take heed therefore lest the light that is in thee is darkness.

36 If thus thy whole body is full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the lamp by its brightness gives thee light.

37 But while he spoke, a Pharisee asked him to dine with him; and he went in and reclined at table.

38 And the Pharisee seeing it wondered that he had not first immersed himself before dinner.

39 But the Lord said to him: Now, you Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the dish, but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness.

40 Senseless men; did not he that made the outside make the inside also?

41 But give the contents as charity, and behold, all things are clean to you.

42 But alas for you Pharisees, for you pay tithes of mint and rue and every herb, and pass by the judgment and the love of God: these ought you to have done and not leave those undone.

43 Alas for you Pharisees, for you love the chief seat in the synagogues and salutations in the markets.

44 Alas for you, for you are as graves that appear not, and the men that walk over them know it not.

45 And some one of the lawyers answering said to him: Teacher, saying these things, thou reproachest us also.

46 He replied: Alas for you lawyers also, for you burden men with burdens hard to be borne, and yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

47 Alas for you, for you build the sepulchers of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Therefore you are witnesses and you consent to the deeds of your fathers, for they indeed killed them, but you build.

49 Wherefore also the wisdom of God said: I will send to them prophets and apostles, and of them they will kill and persecute,

50 that the blood of all the prophets, which has been shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;

51 from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the house: yes, I say to you, it shall be required of this generation.

52 Alas for you lawyers, for you have taken away the key of knowledge: you went not in yourselves, and those that were entering you hindered.

53 And when he had gone out thence the scribes and the Pharisees began to be very angry, and to press him to speak of many things,

54 lying in wait to catch something I from his mouth.

Luke 12

1 In the meantime, when myriads of the multitude had come together, so that they trod one upon another, he began to say to his disciples first: Beware you of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

2 But nothing is concealed which shall not be revealed, and hid which shall not be made known.

3 Wherefore, whatever things you have said in darkness, shall be heard in the light, and what you have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed on the housetops.

4 But I say to you, my friends, be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after this have no more that they can do.

5 But I will show you whom you shall fear: Fear him who after he has killed has authority to cast into hell. Yes, I say to you, fear him.

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? And yet not one of them is forgotten before God.

7 But even the hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: you are of more value than many sparrows.

8 But I say to you: Whoever confesses me before men, him also shall the Son of man confess before the angels of God;

9 but he that denies me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And every one that shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but to him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven.

11 But when they bring you before synagogues, and rulers, and authorities, be not anxious how or what you shall answer in defense or what you shall say;

12 for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in the same hour what things you ought to say.

13 But someone from the multitude said to him: Teacher, speak to my brother that he divide with me the inheritance.

14 But he said to him: Man, who appointed me a judge or a divider over you?

15 And he said to them: Take heed and beware of all covetousness, for no one has his life in the abundance of the things which he possesses.

16 And he spoke a parable to them, saying: The ground of a certain rich man brought forth abundantly.

17 And he reasoned within himself, saying: What shall I do, for I have not where I shall gather in my fruits?

18 And he said: This will I do; I will pull down my barns and build greater, and there will I gather in all my produce and my good things;

19 and I will say to my soul: Soul, thou hast many good things laid up for many years: rest, eat, drink, be merry.

20 But God said to him: Senseless man, this night shall they require thy soul of thee: but the things that thou hast prepared, whose shall they be?

21 So is he that lays up treasure for himself and is not rich toward God.

22 And he said to his disciples: Therefore, I say to you, be not anxious for your life what you shall eat, neither for your body what you shall put on.

23 Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the clothing?

24 Consider the ravens, that they neither sow nor reap, which have neither storehouse nor granary, and yet God feeds them: how much better you are than the birds.

25 But which of you by being anxious can add to his age one cubit?

26 If then you can do not even the least, why are you anxious about the rest?

27 Consider the lilies, how they neither spin nor weave; yet I say to you, not even Solomon in all his glory was clothed like one of these.

28 And if God so clothes the grass that to-day is in the field, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, how much more will he clothe you, O you of little faith.

29 And you, seek not what you shall eat and what you shall drink, and be not of doubtful mind;

30 for all these things the nations of the world seek after; but your Father knows that you need these.

31 But seek his kingdom, and these things shall be given you in addition.

32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

33 Sell your possessions and give charity: make for yourselves purses that grow not old, a treasury unfailing in the heavens, where no thief comes near, neither moth corrupts.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let your loins be girded and your lamps burning;

36 and be you like men awaiting their lord, when he shall return from the marriage, that when he comes and knocks they may immediately open to him.

37 Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he comes shall find watching: verily I say to you that he will gird himself and make them recline at table, and coming forth he will serve them.

38 And if in the second, and if in the third watch, he shall come and find them so, blessed are they.

39 But know this, that if the master of the house had known at what hour the thief would come, he would not have permitted his house to be broken through.

40 And you, be ready, for at an hour at which you think not the Son of man comes.

41 But Peter said to him: Lord, to us dost thou speak this parable or also to all?

42 And the Lord said: Who then is the faithful steward, the prudent, whom the lord shall appoint over his company of servants to give the measure of food in season?

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord on coming shall find so doing.

44 Truly I say to you that he will set him over all his goods.

45 But if that servant shall say in his heart: My lord delays to come, and shall begin to smite the menservants and the maidservants, to eat also and to drink and to be drunken:

46 the lord of that servant will come in a day that he looks not for, and at an hour that he knows not, and will cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful.

47 But that servant that knew his lord's will, and did not prepare or do according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes;

48 but he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few. And every one to whom much has been given, of him much shall be required, and to whom much has been committed, of him will they ask the more.

49 A fire came I to throw upon the earth, and what would I if it were already kindled?

50 A baptism have I to be baptized with, and how am I in pain till it be accomplished.

51 Think you that I came to give peace on earth? I tell you no, but rather division.

52 For there shall be, from this time, five in one house divided; three against two and two against three

53 shall they be divided, father against son and son against father; mother against daughter and daughter against mother; mother-in-law against daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against mother-in-law.

54 And he said also to the multitudes: When you see a cloud rising in the west, immediately you say that a shower is coming, and so it comes to pass;

55 and when you see the south wind blowing, you say that there will be heat, and it comes to pass.

56 Hypocrites, you know how to judge of the face of the earth and of the heaven, but how do you not judge of this time?

57 And why also do you not of yourselves judge that which is right?

58 For as thou goest with thy opponent-at-law to the ruler, on the way endeavor to be delivered from him, lest perhaps he drag thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the collector, and the collector throw thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt not come out thence till thou shalt have paid even the last farthing.

Luke 13

1 And there were present at that time some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And he answered and said to them: Think you that these Galileans had become sinners above all the Galileans because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you no; but unless you repent, you shall all in like manner perish.

4 Or those eighteen, on whom fell the tower in Siloam and killed them, think you that they had become debtors above all the men that dwell in Jerusalem?

5 I tell you no; but unless you repent, you shall all in like manner perish.

6 And he spoke this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came seeking fruit on it, and found none.

7 And he said to the vinedresser: Behold, for three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree and find none: cut it down; why also spoils it the ground?

8 But he answered and said to him: Sir, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it and throw in manure;

9 and if afterward it produce fruit; but if not, thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath.

11 And behold, a woman that had had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years; and she was bowed together and was not able to lift herself up at all.

12 And seeing her, Jesus called to her and said to her: Woman, thou art loosed from thy infirmity;

13 and he laid his hands on her; and she immediately stood erect, and glorified God.

14 But the ruler of the synagogue answered, being angry because Jesus had cured on the sabbath, and said to the multitude: There are six days in which work ought to be done: on them therefore come and be cured, and not on the sabbath day.

15 But the Lord answered him and said: Hypocrites, does not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall and lead him away and give him water?

16 But this woman, who is a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound lo, eighteen years, ought she not to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed, and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that had been done by him.

18 He said therefore: To what is the kingdom of God like, and to what shall I liken it?

19 It is like a grain of mustard that a man took and threw into his garden; and it grew and became a tree, and the birds of the heaven roosted in its branches.

20 And again he said: To what shall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of flour, till the whole was leavened.

22 And he passed through the cities and villages teaching and making the journey to Jerusalem.

23 And some one said to him: Lord, are they few that are saved? But he said to them:

24 Strive to enter in through the strait gate; for many, I say to you, will seek to enter in and shall not be able.

25 From whatever time the master of the house shall have risen up and closed the door and you shall have begun to stand without and to knock at the door, saying: Lord, open to us, and he shall answer and say to you: I know you not whence you are:

26 then shall you begin to say: We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and in our streets hast thou taught.

27 And he will say: I tell you, I know you not whence you are: depart from me, all workers of iniquity.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when you shall see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, but yourselves cast out.

29 And they shall come from east and west and north and south, and shall recline at table in the kingdom of God.

30 And behold, there are last that shall be first, and there are first that shall be last.

31 At that hour came to him some Pharisees, saying to him: Get out and depart hence, for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said to them: Go and tell this fox: Behold, I cast out demons and perfect cures today and tomorrow, and on the third day I make an end.

33 But I must journey today and to-morrow and the day following; for it is not possible that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killest the prophets and stonest them that are sent to thee, how often have I desired to gather thy children together as a hen her young under her wings, and you refused.

35 Behold, your house is left to you. I say to you that you shall not see me till the time come when you shall say: Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord.

Luke 14

1 And it came to pass that he entered on a sabbath into the house of some one of the chief men of the Pharisees to eat bread, and they were watching him.

2 And behold, there was before him a man that had the dropsy.

3 And Jesus answered and spoke to the lawyers and Pharisees, saying: Is it lawful to cure on the sabbath, or not? But they were silent.

4 And he took him and restored him to health and let him go.

5 And answering, he said to them: Shall a son or ox of any one of you fall into a pit and will he not immediately draw him out on the sabbath day?

6 And they were not able to answer him to these things.

7 But when he observed how they chose out the chief places, he spoke a parable to those that were called saying to them:

8 When thou art called by any one to a marriage, do not recline on the chief place, lest a more honorable than thou may have been called by him,

9 and he that called thee and him shall come and say to thee: Give this man place, and then thou begin with shame to occupy the last place.

10 But when thou art called, go and recline on the last place; that when he that called thee come, he shall say to thee: Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have honor in the presence of those that recline with thee.

11 For every one that exalts himself shall be humbled, and he that humbles himself shall be exalted.

12 And he said also to him that had called him: When thou wouldst make a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brothers, nor thy relatives, nor rich neighbors, lest they also call thee in turn, and a recompense be made thee.

13 But when thou wouldst make a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind,

14 and thou shalt be blessed: for they cannot recompense thee; but thou shalt have recompense in the resurrection of the just.

15 And some one of those that reclined with him, hearing these things, said to him: Blessed is he that eats bread in the kingdom of God.

16 But he said to him: A certain man made a great supper and called many;

17 and sent his servant at the hour of supper to say to those that had been called: Come, for it is now prepared.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said to him: I have bought a field, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee, have me excused.

19 And another said: I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to prove them: I pray thee, have me excused.

20 And another said: I have married a wife and therefore I cannot come.

21 And the servant came back and reported these things to his lord. Then the master of the house, being angry, said to his servant: Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and the poor and maimed and blind and lame bring in hither.

22 And the servant said: Lord, what thou didst command has been done, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said to the servant: Go out into the roads and hedges; and compel them to come in, that my house may be full;

24 for I say: to you that not one of those men that have been called shall taste of my supper.

25 And many multitudes journeyed with him; and he turned and said to them:

26 If any one comes to me and hates not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brothers and sisters, and even his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

27 Whoever does not bear his cross and come after me cannot be my disciple.

28 For what one of you intending to build a tower sits not down first and counts the cost, if he has enough to finish it?

29 lest perhaps, after he has laid the foundation and is not able to finish, all that see begin to deride him,

30 saying: This man began to build and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to engage in battle with another king, will not sit down first and deliberate whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that comes against him with twenty thousand?

32 But if not, while he is yet far off, he sends an embassy and asks conditions of peace.

33 So then, no one of you that forsakes not all that he has can be my disciple.

34 Salt then is good; but if the salt become tasteless, by what means shall it be seasoned?

35 It is fit neither for earth nor for manure: they cast it out. He that has ears, let him hear.

Luke 15

1 And all the publicans and the sinners were drawing near to him to hear him.

2 And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying: This man receives sinners and eats with them.

3 But he spoke to them this parable, saying:

4 What man of you, that has a hundred sheep, and loses one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, till he find it?

5 And when he finds it, he lays it on his shoulder rejoicing;

6 and having come home, he calls together the friends and the neighbors, saying to them: Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep that was lost.

7 I say to you that so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repents, more than over ninety-nine righteous who have no need of repentance.

8 Or what woman having ten drachmas, if she lose one drachma, does not light a lamp and sweep the house and seek carefully till she find it?

9 And when she has found it, she calls together the friends and neighbors, saying: Rejoice with me, for I have found the drachma that I lost.

10 So, I say to you, there arises joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repents.

11 And he said: A certain man had two sons.

12 And the younger of them said to the father: Father, give me the part of the estate that falls to me. And he divided to them the living.

13 And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together and went from home into a distant country, and there wasted his estate by riotous living.

14 But when he had spent all, there arose a great famine throughout that land, and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joined himself to one of the citizens of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine;

16 and he desired to fill his belly with the pods that the swine did eat; and no one gave to him.

17 But having come to himself, he said: How many hired servants of my father have bread enough and to spare; but I am perishing here with hunger.

18 I will arise and go to my father and say to him: Father, I have sinned against heaven and in thy sight;

19 no longer am I worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose and came to his father. And while he was yet a great way off, his father saw him and had pity on him; and running, he fell upon his neck and kissed him.

21 And the son said to him: Father, I have sinned against heaven and in thy sight; no longer am I worthy to be called thy son.

22 But the father said to his servants: Bring forth the best robe and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and sandals on his feet;

23 and bring the fatted calf, kill, and let us eat and be merry;

24 for this, my son, was dead and lives again, was lost and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 But his older son was in the field; and when he came and drew near to the house, he heard music and dancing;

26 and calling to him one of the servants, he inquired what these things meant.

27 And he said to him: Thy brother has come, and thy father has killed the fatted calf, because he has received him in health.

28 But he was angry, and would not go in; and his father came out and entreated him.

29 But he answered and said to the father: Behold, so many years do I serve thee, and at no time have I transgressed thy commandment; and yet to me thou hast at no time given a kid that I might make merry with my friends;

30 but when thy son, this that has eaten up thy living with harlots, came, thou didst kill for him the fatted calf.

31 But he said to him: Son, thou art always with me, and all mine is thine;

32 but to make merry and to be glad was needful, for this thy brother was dead and lives again; was lost and is found.

Luke 16

1 And he said also to the disciples: There was a certain rich man who had a steward, and he was accused to him of wasting his goods.

2 And he called him and said to him: What is this that I hear of thee? Give an account of thy stewardship; for thou canst no longer act as steward.

3 And the steward said within himself: What shall I do? for my lord takes from me the stewardship. To dig I am not able, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I have found what I shall do, that when I am put out of the stewardship they may receive me into their houses.

5 And calling to him each one of his lord's debtors, he said to the first: How much owest thou my lord?

6 He said: A hundred baths of oil. And he said to him: Take back thy note, and sit down quickly and write fifty.

7 Then he said to another: And how much owest thou? And he said: A hundred homers of wheat. He says to him: Take back thy note, and write eighty.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had acted prudently; for the children of this age are, in reference to their generation, wiser than the children of light.

9 And I say to you: Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness, that when it fails they may receive you into the eternal habitations.

10 He that is faithful in very little is faithful also in much, and he that is unjust in very little is unjust also in much.

11 If then you have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will entrust to you the true riches?

12 And if you have not been faithful in that which is another's, who will give to you that which is your own?

13 No servant can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other; or he will hold the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all these things, and scoffed at him.

15 And he said to them: You are they that justify yourselves before men, but God knows your hearts; for that which is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God.

16 The law and the prophets preached till John; from that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every one enters it by force.

17 But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one point of the law to fall.

18 Every one that puts away his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he that marries her that is put away from a husband commits adultery.

19 But there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, feasting splendidly every day.

20 And a certain poor man named Lazarus had been laid at his gate, full of sores,

21 and desiring to be fed with that which fell from the rich man's table: moreover, even the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 But it came to pass that the poor man died and was carried by angels to Abraham's bosom; and the rich man also died and was buried.

23 And in hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and saw Abraham afar off and Lazarus in his bosom.

24 And he cried and said: Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said: Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus likewise evil things; but now here he is comforted and thou art tormented.

26 And in all these regions between us and you a great chasm is fixed, so that they that would pass hence to you cannot, neither can they pass thence to us.

27 And he said: I pray thee then, father, that thou wouldst send him to my father's house;

28 for I have five brothers: that he may earnestly testify to them, lest they themselves also come to this place of torment.

29 But Abraham said to him: They have Moses and the prophets: let them hear them.

30 And he said: No, father Abraham; but if one from the dead should go to them, they will repent.

31 But he said to him: If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one should rise from the dead.

Luke 17

1 And he said to his disciples: It is impossible that offenses come not; but alas for him through whom they come:

2 it were better for him that an upper millstone were hung about his neck and he thrown into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 Take heed to yourselves. If thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

4 And if he sin against thee seven times in a day, and seven times turn to thee, saying: I repent, thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said to the Lord: Increase our faith.

6 But the Lord said: If you have faith as a grain of mustard, you might say to this sycamine tree: Be uprooted and be planted in the sea, and it would obey you.

7 But which of you in having a servant plowing or feeding a flock, will say to him when he comes from the field: Come immediately and recline at table?

8 But will he not say to him: Make ready my supper, and gird thyself and serve me till I eat and drink, and after this thou shalt eat and drink?

9 Does he thank the servant because he did the things that were commanded?

10 So also you, when you shall have done all things that are commanded you, say that we are unprofitable servants; we have done what we ought to have done.

11 And it came to pass as he journeyed to Jerusalem, he also went through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entered a certain village there met him ten leprous men, who stood afar off;

13 and they lifted up their voices, saying: Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

14 And seeing, he said to them: Go, show yourselves to the priests. And it came to pass as they went they were cleansed.

15 And one of them, seeing that he was healed, returned, with a loud voice glorifying God;

16 and fell on his face at his feet, giving him thanks; and he was a Samaritan.

17 But Jesus answered and said: Were not the ten cleansed? Where are the nine?

18 Were there not found returning to give glory to God but this one of another race?

19 And he said to him: Arise and go: thy faith has saved thee.

20 And having been asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, he answered them and said: The kingdom of God comes not with observation;

21 neither shall they say: Lo, here or there; for behold, the kingdom of God is among you.

22 But he said to his disciples: Days will come when you shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you: Lo here, lo there: go not after them nor follow them.

24 For as the lightning flashing out from one place under heaven shines to the other place under heaven, so shall the Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected by this generation.

26 And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.

27 They were eating, they were drinking, they were marrying, they were giving in marriage till the day on which Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed all.

28 Likewise as it was in the days of Lot: they were eating, they were drinking, they were buying, they were selling, they were planting, they were building;

29 but on the day in which Lot went out of Sodom, there rained fire and brimstone from heaven and destroyed all.

30 So shall it be in the day in which the Son of man is revealed.

31 In that day he that shall be on the housetop, and his goods in the house, let him not come down to take them away; and he that is in the field let him likewise not turn back.

32 Remember Lot's wife.

33 Whoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it: and whoever shall lose it shall save it alive.

34 I say to you, on that night there shall be two men in one bed: one shall be taken and the other left:

35 there shall be two women grinding together: the one shall be taken, but the other left.

37 And they answer and say to him: Where, Lord? And he said to them: Where the body is, there also will the eagles be gathered together.

Luke 18

1 And he spoke a parable to them to this end, that they ought always to pray and not grow weary,

2 saying: There was in a city a judge that feared not God, and regarded not man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, and she came to him, saying: Avenge me, on my opponent-at-law.

4 And he would not for a time; but afterward he said within himself: Though I fear not God, neither regard man,

5 yet, because this widow gives me trouble, I will avenge her, lest coming continually she weary me.

6 And the Lord said: Hear what the unjust judge says;

7 and will not God avenge his elect who cry to him day and night, and does he bear long towards them?

8 I say to you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless will the Son of man, when he comes, find the faith on the earth?

9 And he spoke also this parable to some that trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee and the other a publican.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus: God, I thank thee that I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12 I fast twice in the week, I pay tithes of all that I possess.

13 But the publican, standing far off, would not lift even his eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying: God, be merciful to me the sinner.

14 I say to you, this man went down to his house justified rather indeed than the other; for every one that exalts himself shall be humbled, but he that humbles himself shall be exalted.

15 And they brought to him also their infants that he might touch them; but the disciples, seeing, rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them to him, saying: Let the little children come to me and forbid them not; for to such belongs the kingdom of God.

17 Verily I say to you, whoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall not enter into it.

18 And a ruler asked him, saying: Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

19 And Jesus said to him: Why callest thou me good? None is good but one, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandments: Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false testimony, Honor thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said: All these have I kept from youth.

22 But Jesus, hearing, said to him: Yet lackest thou one thing; sell all that thou hast, and distribute to the poor and thou shalt have treasure in the heavens, and come follow me.

23 But hearing these things, he became very sad; for he was very rich.

24 But seeing him, Jesus said: How hardly do they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God:

25 for it is easier for a camel to go in through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard said: Who then can be saved?

27 But he said: Things impossible with men are possible with God.

28 And Peter said: Behold, we have left our own and followed thee.

29 And he said to them: Verily I say to you, there is no one that has left house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children for the sake of the kingdom of God,

30 who shall not receive many times more in this time, and in the age to come, eternal life.

31 And taking the twelve aside, he said to them: Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets in reference to the Son of man shall be accomplished;

32 for he shall be delivered to the Gentiles, and shall be derided and outraged and spit upon;

33 and they shall scourge and kill him, and the third day he shall rise.

34 And they understood none of these things; and this saying was concealed from them; and they knew not the things that were spoken.

35 And it came to pass as he drew near to Jericho, a blind man sat by the road begging.

36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he inquired what this meant.

37 And they told him that Jesus the Nazarene was passing by.

38 And he cried out, saying: Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me.

39 But those that went before rebuked him that he should be silent; but much more did he cry: Son of David, have mercy on me.

40 But Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought to him. And when he had come near he asked him:

41 What wilt thou that I shall do for thee? And he said: Lord, that I may receive sight.

42 And Jesus said to him: Receive sight: thy faith has saved thee.

43 And he immediately received sight, and followed him, glorifying God. And all the people, seeing it, gave praise to God.

Luke 19

1 And he entered and passed through Jericho.

2 And behold, a man named Zacchaeus, and he was chief publican, and was rich;

3 and he sought to see Jesus, who he was, and could not from the multitude, for in stature he was small.

4 And running before, he went up into a sycamore, that he might see him, for he was about to pass that way.

5 And when he came to the place, Jesus looked up and said to him: Zacchaeus, make haste and come down; for I must abide to-day at thy house.

6 And he hastened and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And seeing it, they all murmured, saying: He has gone in to be guest with a sinful man.

8 And Zacchaeus stood and said to the Lord: Behold, the half of my goods, Lord, I give to the poor; and if from any one I have taken any thing by false accusation, I repay fourfold.

9 And Jesus said to him: This day has salvation come to this house, inasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham;

10 for the Son of man has come to seek and save the lost.

11 And as they heard these things he also spoke a parable, because he was near Jerusalem and they thought that the kingdom of God would immediately appear.

12 He said, therefore: A nobleman went into a distant country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and return.

13 And he called his ten servants and gave to them ten pounds, and said to them: Engage in trade till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent an embassy after him, saying: We are not willing that this man shall reign over us.

15 And it came to pass when he had returned, having received the kingdom, he also ordered that those servants to whom he had given the money should be called to him, that he might know what each had gained by trading.

16 And the first came to him, saying: Lord, thy pound has gained ten pounds.

17 And he said to him: Well done, good servant; because, thou hast been faithful in very little, have authority over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying: Thy pound, lord, has made five pounds.

- 19 And he said also to him: Be thou also over five cities.
- 20 And the other came, saying: Lord, behold thy pound, which I have had laid away in a napkin;
- 21 for I feared thee, because thou art a hard man: thou takest up what thou didst not deposit, and reapest what thou didst not sow.
- 22 He says to him: Out of thy own mouth will I judge thee, wicked servant. Thou knowest that I am a hard man, taking up what I did not deposit, and reaping what I did not sow.
- 23 And why gavest thou not my money to the bank? and I on coming could have collected my own with interest.
- 24 And he said to those that stood by: Take from him the pound and give to him that has the ten pounds.
- 25 And they said to him: Lord, he has ten pounds.
- 26 I say to you: To every one that has shall be given, but from him that has not, even that which he has shall be taken away.
- 27 But these my enemies, that were not willing that I should reign over them, bring hither and slay them before me.
- 28 And having said these things, he went before, going up to Jerusalem.
- 29 And it came to pass when he came near to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sent two of the disciples,
- 30 saying: Go into the village opposite, in which, on entering, you shall find a colt tied, on which no one of men ever sat: loose and bring him.
- 31 And if any one ask you: Why loose him? say thus; that the Lord has need of him.
- 32 And those that were sent went and found as he had said to them.
- 33 And as they were loosing the colt, its owners said to them: Why loose the colt?
- 34 and they said: Because the Lord has need of him.
- 35 And they brought him to Jesus, and having thrown their mantles upon the colt, they set Jesus upon him.
- 36 And as he went they spread their mantles in the road.
- 37 But as he was drawing near now to the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began joyfully to praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty deeds which they had seen,
- 38 saying: Blessed be the King in the name of the Lord: in heaven peace, and glory in the highest.
- 39 And some of the Pharisees from the multitude said to him: Teacher, rebuke thy disciples.
- 40 And he answered and said: I say to you, that if these should be silent, the stones would cry out.
- 41 And when he drew near, beholding the city, he wept over it,

42 saying: If thou hadst known, even thou, even in this thy day, the things for thy peace; but now they are hid from thy eyes.

43 For days will come upon thee, and thy enemies shall cast up a mound about thee; and encircle thee round about, and shut thee up on every side;

44 and level thee with the ground and thy children within thee; and will not leave within thee a stone upon a stone, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 And entering into the temple he began to cast out those that sold, 46 saying to them: It is written: And my house shall be called a house of prayer, but you have made it a den of robbers.

47 And he was teaching daily in the temple; and the chief priests and the scribes and the chief men of the people sought to destroy him,

48 and found not what they could do; for all the people hung listening upon him.

Luke 20

1 And it came to pass on one of the days, as he was teaching the people in the temple, and preaching the gospel, the priests and the scribes, with the elders, came upon him.

2 and spoke, saying to him: Tell us, by what authority doest thou these things, or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 But he answered and said to them: I also will ask you a word, and tell me:

4 The baptism of John, of heaven was it, or of men?

5 And they reasoned among themselves, saying: If we say: Of heaven, he will reply: Why did you not believe him?

6 But if we say: Of men, all the people will stone us; for they are persuaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered that they knew not whence.

8 And Jesus said to them: Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

9 And he began to speak to the people this parable. A man planted a vineyard and let it out to vinedressers, and went abroad for a long time.

10 And at the season he sent to the vinedressers a servant, that they might give him of the fruit of the vineyard; but the vinedressers scourged him and sent him forth empty.

11 And he also sent another servant; but they scourged that one also, and having dishonored him, sent him forth empty.

12 And he also sent a third; but they wounded this one also and cast him out.

13 And the lord of the vineyard said: What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: perhaps they will reverence him.

14 But seeing him, the vinedressers reasoned one with another, saying: This is the heir: let us kill him, that the inheritance may become ours.

15 And they cast him out of the vineyard and killed him. What then will the lord of the vineyard do to them?

16 He will come and destroy these vinedressers, and give the vineyard to others. And hearing, they said: May it not be.

17 But he looked on them and said: What then is this that is written? A stone that the builders rejected, this became the head of the corner.

18 Every one that falls on that stone shall be broken; but on whomever it shall fall, it will grind him to dust.

19 And the scribes and the chief priests sought to lay their hands on him at the same hour, and were afraid of the people; for they knew that against them he had spoken this parable.

20 And watching closely, they sent spies that feigned themselves to be just, that they might lay hold on a word of his, so that they could deliver him up to the power and authority of the governor.

21 And they asked him, saying: Teacher, we know that thou speakest and teachest rightly, and acceptest not a person, but teachest the way of God in truth:

22 is it lawful for us to give tribute to Caesar or not?

23 But perceiving their craftiness, he said to them:

24 Show me a denarius. Whose image and superscription has it? They said: Caesar's.

25 And he said to them: Therefore render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.

26 And they were not able to lay hold of his speech in the presence of the people; and being astonished at his answer, they were silent.

27 And some of the Sadducees, who deny that there is a resurrection, came and asked him a question,

28 saying: Teacher, Moses wrote for us, if any one's brother die having a wife, and he be without children, that his brother shall take his wife and raise up offspring for his brother.

29 There were then seven brothers. And the first took a wife and died without children;

30 and the second

31 and the third took her, and in like manner also the seven left no children and died.

32 At last the woman also died.

33 The woman then in the resurrection, of which of them shall she be the wife? For the seven had her as a wife.

34 And Jesus said to them: The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage,

35 but they that shall be counted worthy to obtain that age and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage:

36 nor indeed can they die any more, for they are like the angels, and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.

37 But that the dead are raised, even Moses has made known at the Bush, since he calls the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob;

38 and he is not a God of the dead, but of the living; for all live to him.

39 And some of the scribes answered and said: Teacher, thou hast well said.

40 For no one again ventured to ask him another question.

41 But he said to them: How say they that Christ is David's son,

42 for David himself says in the book of Psalms: The Lord said to my Lord: Sit at my right hand

43 till I make thy enemies thy footstool?

44 David then calls him Lord; and how is he his son?

45 But as all the people were hearing, he said to the disciples:

46 Beware of the scribes that delight to walk about in robes, and love salutations in the markets, and first seats in the synagogues, and first places at suppers;

47 who eat up the houses of widows, and for a pretext make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation.

Luke 21

1 And looking up, he saw the rich throwing their gifts into the treasury.

2 And he saw a widow, a needy one, throw in thither two mites,

3 and he said: Truly I say to you that this poor widow has thrown in more than they all;

4 for all these out of their abundance have thrown in among the gifts, but she out of her poverty has thrown in all the living that she had.

5 And as some were speaking of the temple that it was adorned with goodly stones and offerings, he said:

6 As to these things that you see, days will come in which there shall not be left a stone upon a stone, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying: Teacher, when then shall these things be? and what the sign when these things shall be accomplished?

8 And he said: Take heed that you be not deceived; for many will come in my name, saying: I am he, and the time is at hand: go not after them.

9 But when you hear of wars and tumults, be not alarmed; for these things must take place first, but not immediately the end.

10 Then he said to them: Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:

11 great earthquakes also shall there be, and in places famines and pestilences, fearful sights also shall there be, and great signs from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, being brought before kings and governors for the sake of my name:

13 it shall turn out to you for testimony.

14 Resolve therefore in your hearts that you meditate not beforehand to make a defense;

15 for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to resist or gainsay.

16 But you shall be delivered up both by parents and brothers and relatives and friends, and some of you they shall put to death,

17 and you shall be hated by all because of my name.

18 And yet a hair from your head shall not be lost:

19 in your endurance preserve your souls.

20 But when you see Jerusalem encompassed by armies, then know that the desolation of it is near.

21 Then let those in Judea flee to the mountains, and those in the midst of it go out, and those in the country not enter into it;

22 for days of vengeance are these for the fulfilling of all things that are written.

23 Alas for them that are with child and them that give suck in those days; for there shall be great distress on the land and wrath on this people;

24 and they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations, and Jerusalem shall be trod down by Gentiles, till the times of the Gentiles shall have been fulfilled.

25 And there shall be signs in the sun and the moon and the stars, and on earth distress of nations in perplexity at the roaring of the sea and the waves,

26 men failing in heart for fear and expectation of things coming on the habitable land; for the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming on a cloud with power and great glory.

28 But when these things begin to take place, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption draws near.

29 And he spoke a parable to them: See the fig-tree and all the trees:

30 when they now put forth leaves, seeing it you know of yourselves that summer is now near.

31 So also you, when you see these things coming to pass, know that the kingdom of God is near.

32 Verily I say to you: This generation shall not pass away till all these things shall have been accomplished.

33 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

34 But take heed to yourselves lest perhaps your hearts become heavy with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and the anxieties of life, and that day come upon you suddenly

35 like a snare; for it shall come upon all that dwell on the face of all the land.

36 But watch at every time, praying that you may have strength to escape all these things that are about to take place, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And he was teaching in the temple during the day, but he went out and spent the night in the mount of Olives.

38 And all the people came early to him in the temple to hear him.

Luke 22

1 But the feast of unleavened bread, which is called passover, drew near;

2 and the chief priests and scribes sought how they might destroy him; for they feared the people.

3 But Satan entered into Judas called Iscariot, who was of the number of the twelve;

4 and he went away and conferred with the chief priests and captains how he might deliver him up to them.

5 And they were glad, and agreed to give him money;

6 and he consented, and sought an opportunity to deliver him up to them in the absence of the multitude

7 And the day of unleavened bread came, on which the passover must be killed;

8 and he sent Peter and John, saying: Go and prepare for us the passover, that we may eat.

9 And they said to him: Where wilt thou that we make ready?

10 And he said to them: Behold, after you have gone into the city, there shall meet you a man carrying a pitcher of water; follow him into the house that he enters;

11 and you shall say to the master of the house: The Teacher says to thee: Where is the guest-chamber where I may eat the passover with my disciples?

12 And he will show you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had said to them, and prepared the passover.

14 And when the hour had come, he reclined at table, and the apostles with him.

15 And he said to them: With desire have I desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer;

16 for I say to you that I will no more eat it till it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

17 And having taken a cup and given thanks, he said: Take this and divide it among yourselves;

18 for I say to you that I will not drink henceforth of the fruit of the vine till the kingdom of God shall have corner

19 And having taken bread and given thanks, he broke and gave to them, saying: This is my body, that is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

20 And the cup in like manner, after he had supped, saying: This cup is the new covenant in my blood, that is poured out for you.

21 But behold, the hand of him that delivers me up is with me on the table.

22 For indeed the Son of man goes according to that which is determined, but alas for that man by whom he is delivered up.

23 And they began to inquire among themselves which of them it might be that was about to do this thing.

24 And there had been also a contention among them as to which of them was thought to be greatest.

25 But he said to them: The kings of the nations exercise lordship over them, and they that have authority over them are called benefactors:

26 you however shall not be so, but he that is the greatest among you, let him become as the youngest, and he that leads as he that serves.

27 For which is greater, he that reclines at table or he that serves? Is not he that reclines at table? But I in the midst of you am as he that serves.

28 But you are they that have continued steadily with me in my trials.

29 And I appoint to you as my Father has appointed to me a kingdom,

30 that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

31 Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has greatly desired you that he may sift you as wheat;

32 but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not. And thou, when thou hast turned to me, strengthen thy brethren.

33 And he said to him: Lord, with thee I am ready to go both to prison and to death.

34 But he said: I say to thee, Peter, a cock shall not crow this day, till thou shalt have three times denied that thou knowest me.

35 And he said to them: When I sent you forth without purse and bag and sandals, needed you any thing? They said: Nothing.

36 And he said to them: But now, he that has a purse, let him take it; in like manner, also a bag; and he that has no sword, let him sell his garment and buy.

37 For I say to you that this that is written must be fulfilled in me; this: And with the lawless was he numbered; for that concerning me has an end.

38 And they said: Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said to them: It is enough.

39 And going out, he went according to custom to the mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him.

40 And when he had come to the place he said to them: Pray that you enter not into temptation.

41 And he withdrew from them about a stone's throw, and kneeling down he prayed,

42 saying: Father, if thou art willing to remove this cup from me; yet, not my will, but thine, be done.

43 And there appeared to him an angel from heaven, strengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly. And his sweat became like great drops of blood falling to the ground.

45 And he arose from prayer, came to the disciples, and found them sleeping because of grief,

46 and said to them: Why sleep? arise and pray, that you may not enter into temptation.

47 While he was yet speaking, behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and came near to Jesus to kiss him.

48 And Jesus said to him: Judas, dost thou deliver up the Son of man with a kiss?

49 But they about him, seeing what would be, said: Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

50 And some one of them struck the servant of the chief priest and cut off his right ear.

51 But Jesus answered and said: Let me alone till this, and he touched his ear and healed him.

52 And Jesus said to the chief priests and captains of the temple and elders that had come to him: As against a robber you have come forth, with swords and clubs:

53 while I was with you a daily in the temple, you stretched not forth your hands against me. But this is your hour, and the authority of darkness.

54 And they took him, and led and brought him into the house of the chief priest; but Peter followed at a distance.

55 And after they had kindled a fire in the midst of the court, and were sitting together, Peter sat in the midst of them.

56 And a maidservant saw him sitting at the fire, and, looking earnestly on him, said: This man also was with him.

57 But he denied him, saying: Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little another saw him and said: Thou also art of them. But Peter said: Man, I am not.

59 And after an interval of about one hour some other confidently affirmed, saying: Of a truth this man also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 But Peter said: Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he was yet speaking, a cock crew;

61 and the Lord turned and looked upon Peter; and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, as he had said to him: Before a cock shall have crowed this day, thou shalt deny me three times.

62 And he went out and wept bitterly.

63 And the men that held him derided him, striking him;

64 and having blindfolded him, they asked, saying: Prophecy: who is he that struck thee?

65 And many other things did they blasphemously say to him.

66 And when it was day, there came together the eldership of the people, chief priests also and scribes, and they led him away to their Sanhedrim, saying: If thou art the Christ, tell us.

67 And he said to them: If I tell you, you will not believe;

68 and if I ask, you will not answer.

69 But from this time shall the Son of man be sitting on the right hand of the power of God.

70 And they all said: Thou art then the Son of God? He said to them: You say it, for I am.

71 And they said: What further need have we of testimony? For we ourselves have heard from his mouth.

Luke 23

1 And the whole number of them rose and led him to Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying: We found this man turning our nation away, and forbidding to pay tribute to Caesar, and saying that he himself is Christ a king.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying: Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered and said to him: Thou sayest.

4 But Pilate said to the chief priests and the multitudes: I find no fault in this man.

5 But they were vehement, saying: He excites the people, teaching throughout the whole of Judea, even beginning from Galilee, to this place.

6 But Pilate, hearing, inquired if the man were a Galilean;

7 and learning that he was from Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him up to Herod, who was also in Jerusalem in those days.

8 And Herod, when he saw Jesus, was exceeding glad; for he had for a long time desired to see him, because he had heard of him, and hoped to see some sign done by him.

9 And he questioned him with many words; but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him.

11 But Herod also, with his men of war having set him at naught and mocked him, put on him a splendid robe and sent him back to Pilate.

12 And on the same day Herod and Pilate became friends to each other; for before they had been at enmity between themselves.

13 But Pilate, having called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people,

14 said to them: You have brought to me this man as turning the people away; and behold, I, having examined him in your presence, have found in this man no fault as to the things which you charge against him.

15 No, nor even Herod; for he has sent him back to us; and behold, nothing worthy of death has been done by him.

16 I will therefore chastise and release him.

17 [no verse]

18 But they cried out all at once, saying: Away with this man, and release to us Barabbas:

19 who for a certain insurrection made in the city and for murder had been cast into prison.

20 Again, however, Pilate called to them, wishing to release Jesus.

21 But they cried against it, saying: Crucify, crucify him.

22 But the third time spoke he to them: Why, what evil has he done? No cause of death have I found in him: I will therefore chastise and release him.

23 But they were urgent with loud cries, demanding that he should be crucified; and their cries prevailed.

24 And Pilate gave sentence that their demand should go into effect.

25 And he released him that for insurrection and murder had been cast into prison, whom they chose; but Jesus he delivered up to their will.

26 And as they led him away, laying hold on Simon a certain Cyrenian, as he came from the country, they laid on him the cross that he might bear it after Jesus.

27 And there followed him a great multitude of the people, and of women that bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turned to them and said: Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me; but weep for yourselves and for your children;

29 for behold, there are coming days in which they shall say: Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bore, and the breasts that did not give suck.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains: Fall on us, and to the hills: Cover us;

31 for if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

32 And there were led others also, two evildoers, to be crucified with him.

33 And when they came to the place that is called Skull, there they crucified him and the evildoers, one on the right and the other on the left.

34 But Jesus said: Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And dividing his clothing among them, they cast lots.

35 And the people stood looking on; but the rulers scoffed, saying: Others he saved, let him save himself, if he is the Christ, the chosen of God.

36 And the soldiers also derided him, coming to him, offering him vinegar,

37 and saying: If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself.

38 And there was also a superscription over him: THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 And one of the evildoers that were hanged reviled him: Art not thou the Christ? save thyself and us.

40 But the other, answering, rebuked him and said: Dost not even thou fear God, seeing that thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly, for we are receiving the due reward of what we have done; but this man has done nothing amiss.

42 And he said: Jesus, remember me when thou comest in thy kingdom.

43 And he said to him: Verily I say to thee, this day thou shalt be with me in Paradise.

44 And it was now about the sixth hour, and darkness came over the whole land till the ninth hour,

45 the sun having failed; and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

46 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and said: Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit. And having said this, he expired.

47 And the centurion, seeing what had taken place, glorified God, saying: Certainly this man was righteous.

48 And all the multitudes that had come together to that scene, having looked upon the things that were done, returned, smiting their breasts.

49 And all his acquaintance, and women that had followed him from Galilee, stood at a distance, looking upon these things.

50 And behold, a man named Joseph, who was a counselor, also a good and righteous man,

51 he had not consented to their counsel and deed of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who looked for the kingdom of God:

52 this man came to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus;

53 and having taken it down, he wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulcher hewed in rock, where no one had yet lain.

54 And it was the day of the preparation, and the sabbath was beginning.

55 And women that had come up with him out of Galilee followed and observed the sepulcher, and how his body was laid;

56 and having returned, they prepared spices and ointments; and they rested indeed on the sabbath, according to the commandment.

Luke 24

1 But on the first of the week, very early in the morning, they came to the sepulcher, bringing the spices that they had prepared.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulcher;

3 but entering, they found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to pass as they were perplexed about this, behold, two men stood by them in bright clothing

5 and the women being afraid and bowing their faces to the earth the angels said to them: Why seek among the dead for him that lives?

6 He is not here, but has risen. Remember how he spoke to you while he was yet in Galilee,

7 saying of the Son of man that he must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and rise on the third day.

8 And they remembered his words,

9 and returned from the sepulcher and told all these things to the eleven and to all the rest.

10 And they were Mary Magdalene and Joanna and Mary the mother of James; and the rest with them told these things to the apostles.

11 And these words appeared in their sight as idle tales, and they believed them not.

12 But Peter arose and ran to the sepulcher, and stooping down, he saw the linen clothes lying by themselves; and he departed, wondering in himself at that which had come to pass.

13 And behold, two of them were going on the same day to a village named Emmaus, distant from Jerusalem sixty furlongs;

14 and they were conversing one with another about all these things that had happened.

15 And it came to pass while they were conversing and discussing, Jesus himself came near and went with them;

16 but their eyes were held so that they did not know him.

17 And he said to them: What matters are these that you interchange one with another as you walk? And they stood still with countenances sad.

18 But one, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said to him: Dost thou only dwell as a stranger in Jerusalem and hast not known the things that have come to pass in it in these days?

19 And he said to them: What things? And they said to him: The things concerning Jesus the Nazarene, who became a man, a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people,

20 and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to the condemnation of death and crucified him.

21 But we were hoping that it had been he that was about to redeem Israel. Yet even with all this, this is the third day since these things were done.

22 But also some women of our company astonished us; having been early at the sepulcher,

23 and not finding his body, they came, saying that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive.

24 And some of those with us went to the sepulcher, and found it so even as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 And he said to them: O without understanding, and slow of heart to believe in all things that the prophets have spoken.

26 Was it not needful that the Christ should suffer these things and enter into his glory?

27 And beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he explained to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew near to the village whither they were going, and he made a show of going further;

29 and they constrained him, saying: Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day has now declined. And he went in to abide with them.

30 And it came to pass as he reclined at table with them, he took bread, blessed and broke and gave to them;

31 but their eyes were opened, and they recognized him; and he vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another: Was not our heart burning within us, as he spoke to us on the way, as he opened to us the scriptures?

33 And they rose up the same hour and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven and those with them collected together,

34 saying that the Lord has certainly risen and has appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what had taken place on the way, and how he was made known to them in the breaking of bread.

36 But while they were talking of these things, he himself stood in the midst of them.

37 And being terrified and becoming fearful, they thought that they saw a spirit.

38 And he said to them: Why are you troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me and see; for a spirit has not flesh and bones as you see me have.

40 And when he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet.

41 But while they believed not for joy, and wondered, he said to them: Have you anything here to eat?

42 And they gave him a piece of broiled fish;

43 and he took it and ate in their presence.

44 And he said to them: These are my words, which I spoke to you while I was yet with you, that all things that are written in the law of Moses and the prophets and the psalms concerning me must be fulfilled.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures;

46 and he said to them: Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer and rise from the dead on the third day,

47 and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 You are witnesses of these things.

49 And I send the promise of my Father upon you; but do you continue in the city, till you be clothed with power from on high.

50 And he led them out as far as Bethany, and having lifted up his hands, he blessed them.

51 And it came to pass, as he blessed them, he was separated from them.

52 And they returned to Jerusalem with great joy,
53 and were continually in the temple praising God.

According to JohnJohn 1

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 He was in the beginning with God.

3 All things came into being through him, and without him came into being not one thing that is in being.

4 In him is life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shines in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.

6 There came a man, sent from God; his name was John:

7 this man came for a testimony, that he might testify of the light, that all through him might believe.

8 He was not the light, but came that he might testify of the light.

9 That was the true light, which, coming into the world, gives light to every man.

10 He was in the world, and the world came into being through him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came to his own country, and his own people received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he the right to become children of God, to those that believe on his name,

13 who were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of a man, but of God.

14 And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us, and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the Only Begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

15 John testified of him and cried, saying: This was he of whom I said: He that comes after me has been advanced before me, because he was before me.

16 For of his fullness have we all received, and grace for grace;

17 for the law was given through Moses, the grace and the truth came through Jesus Christ.

18 No one has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he has made him known.

19 And the testimony of John is this, when the Jews of Jerusalem sent priests and Levites to ask him: Who art thou?

20 And he confessed and denied not, and confessed: I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him: What then? Art thou Elijah? He said: I am not. Art thou the prophet? and he answered: No.

22 They then said to him: Who art thou? that we may give an answer to those that sent us: what sayest thou of thyself?

23 He replied: I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness: Make straight the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet.

24 And some had been sent from the Pharisees,

25 and they asked him, and said to him: Why then dost thou baptize, if thou art not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor the prophet?

26 John answered them, saying: I baptize in water: in the midst of you there stands whom you know not,

27 he that comes after me, the latchet of whose sandal I am not worthy to loose.

28 These things were done in Bethany beyond the Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 On the next day he sees Jesus coming to him, and says: Behold, the Lamb of God, that takes away the sin of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said: After me comes a man who has been advanced before me, because he was before me.

31 And I knew him not, but that he might be manifested to Israel, therefore have I come baptizing in water.

32 And John testified, saying: I saw the Spirit descending, like a dove, from heaven, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not, but he that sent me to baptize in water, he said to me: On whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and abiding on him, this is he that baptizeth in the Holy Spirit.

34 And I have seen, and I have testified that this is the Son of God.

35 On the next day again John stood, and two of his disciples,

36 and looking upon Jesus as he was walking, he says: Behold, the Lamb of God!

37 The two disciples heard him speaking, and followed Jesus.

38 Jesus turned and saw them following, and said to them:

39 What seek you? They said to him: Rabbi (which is called, when translated, Teacher), where abidest thou?

40 He says to them: Come and see. They came therefore and saw where he abode, and continued with him that day: it was about the tenth hour.

41 It was Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, one of the two that had heard from John and followed him:

42 he first finds his own brother Simon and says to him: We have found the Messiah, which is, translated, Christ.

43 He brought him to Jesus. Looking upon him, Jesus said: Thou art Simon the son of Joanna: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is, translated. Peter.

44 On the next day he wished to go forth into Galilee, and found Philip. And Jesus said to him: Follow me.

45 But Philip was from Bethsaida, of the city of Andrew and Peter.

46 Philip finds Nathaniel, and says to him: We have found him of whom wrote Moses in the law, and the prophets, Jesus, who is of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

47 Nathaniel said to him: Can any thing good come out of Nazareth? Philip says to him: Come and see.

48 Jesus saw Nathaniel coming to him, and said concerning him: Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom there is no guile.

49 Nathaniel said to him: Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said to him: Before Philip called thee, whilst thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.

50 Nathaniel answered him: Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art King of Israel.

51 Jesus answered and said to him: Because I said to thee that I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou? Thou shalt see greater things than these.

52 And he said to him: Verily, verily, I say to you, you shall see heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

John 2

1 And on the third day a marriage took place in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there;

2 and Jesus also was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

3 And they had no wine, because the wine of the marriage feast had failed. Then said the mother of Jesus to him: They have no wine.

4 Jesus said to her: Woman, what have I to do with thee? My hour has not yet come.

5 His mother said to the waiters: Whatever he says to you, do.

6 And according to the purification of the Jews, there were lying there six water vessels of stone, containing two or three baths each.

7 Jesus says to them: Fill the water vessels with water. And they filled them to the brim.

8 And he says to them: Draw out now, and carry to the master of the feast. And they carried it.

9 But when the master of the feast had tasted the water that had been made wine, and knew not whence it was, but the waiters that drew the water knew, the master of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 and said to him: Every man at the first sets out the good wine; and when they have become drunk, the inferior: thou hast kept the good wine till now.

11 This beginning of signs did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory, and his disciples believed on him.

12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother and his brothers and his disciples, and they remained there not many days.

13 And the Passover of the Jews was near, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

14 And he found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the moneychangers sitting;

15 and having made a scourge of cords, he drove all out of the temple, the sheep also and the oxen, and poured out the money of the money-changers, and overturned the tables;

16 and to those that sold doves he said: Take these things hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise.

17 The disciples remembered that it is written: Zeal for thy house consumes me.

18 The Jews then answered and said to him: What sign showest thou to us, that thou doest these things?

19 Jesus answered and said to them: Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.

20 The Jews therefore said: Forty and six years was this temple in building, and in three days wilt thou raise it up?

21 But he spoke of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he had risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this, and they believed the Scripture and the word that Jesus had spoken.

23 But when he was in Jerusalem on the Passover on the feast, many believed on his name, seeing his signs which he did;

24 but Jesus did not trust himself to them, because he knew all men,
25 and because he had no need that any one should testify concerning man; for he himself knew what was in man.

John 3

1 But there was a man of the Pharisees, his name was Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews;

2 he came to him by night and said to him: Rabbi, we know that from God thou hast come as a teacher; for no one can do these signs that thou doest, unless God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said to him: Verily, verily, I say to thee, unless a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

4 Nicodemus says to him: How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother's womb and be born?

5 Jesus answered: Verily, verily, I say to thee, Unless a man be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of the heavens.

6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

7 Wonder not that I said to thee: You must be born again.

8 The wind blows where it pleases, and the sound of it thou hearest, but thou knowest not whence it comes and whither it goes: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said to him: How can these things take place?

10 Jesus answered and said to him: Art thou the teacher of Israel and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily, I say to thee, that which we know we speak, and that which we have seen we testify, and our testimony you receive not.

12 If I have told you earthly things and you believe not, how will you believe if I tell you of heavenly things?

13 And no one has ascended into heaven but he that came down from heaven, the Son of man, who is in heaven.

14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so must the Son of man be lifted up;

15 that every one that believes in him may have life eternal.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whoever believes on him might not perish, but have life eternal.

17 For God sent not the Son into the world to condemn the world, hut that the world might be saved through him.

18 He that believes on him is not condemned: he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God.

19 But the condemnation is this, that light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light; for their works were evil.

20 For every one that does evil hates the light, and comes not to the light, lest his works may be reproved;

21 but he that does the truth comes to the light that his works may be made manifest that they are wrought in God.

22 After this came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea, and there he abode with them and baptized.

23 But John also was baptizing in Enon near Salem, because much water was there; and they came and were baptized;

24 for not yet had John been cast into prison.

25 There arose therefore a discussion, on the part of some of the disciples of John, with a Jew, about purification.

26 And they came to John and said to him: Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom thou hast testified, behold, he baptizes and all come to him.

27 John answered and said: A man cannot receive any thing unless it be given him from heaven.

28 You yourselves will testify for me that I said: I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that has the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who stands and hears him, greatly rejoices because of the voice of the bridegroom. This my joy therefore has been fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must become less.

31 He that comes from above is over all: he that is of the earth is of the earth and speaks of the earth. He that comes from heaven

32 testifies of what he has seen and heard, and his testimony no one receives.

33 He that has received his testimony has attested that God is true.

34 For he whom God sent speaks the words of God; for not by measure does he give the Spirit.

35 The Father loves the Son, and has given all things into his hand.

36 He that believes on the Son has life eternal; he that believes not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.

John 4

1 When therefore Jesus knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples than John.

2 though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples baptized.

3 he left Judea and went away again into Galilee.

4 But he must needs go through Samaria.

5 He comes therefore to a city of Samaria called Sychar, near the place which Jacob gave to his son Joseph.

6 And Jacob's well was there. Jesus then, having been wearied with the journey, sat thus on the well: it was about the sixth hour.

7 There comes a woman from Samaria to draw water. Jesus says to her: Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples had gone away into the city, to buy food,

9 The woman, who was a Samaritan, says to him: How dost thou, being a Jew, ask drink of me, who am a woman of Samaria?

10 Jesus answered and said to her: If thou hadst known the gift of God, and who he is that says to thee: Give me to drink, thou wouldst have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman says to him: Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: whence hast thou the living water?

12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank of it himself and his sons and his cattle?

13 Jesus answered and said to her: Everyone that drinks of this water shall thirst again;

14 but whoever shall drink of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst, but the water that I shall give him shall become in him a fountain of water springing up to life eternal.

15 The woman says to him: Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 He says to her: Go, call thy husband and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said: I have no husband, Jesus says to her: Well hast thou said: I have no husband;

18 for thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband. This thou hast spoken truly.

19 The woman says to him: Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and you say that in Jerusalem is the place where we ought to worship.

21 Jesus says to her: Believe me, woman, that the hour comes when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, shall you worship the Father.

22 You worship you know not what; we worship what we know, for salvation is of the Jews;

23 but the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeks such to worship him.

24 God is spirit; and they that worship must worship in spirit and truth.

25 The woman says to him: I know that Messiah comes, who is called Christ: when he has come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus says to her: I that speak to thee am he.

27 And on this came his disciples, and wondered that he talked with the woman: no one, however, said: What seekest thou or why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman therefore left her water-pot and went away into the city, and said to the men:

29 Come, see a man that has told me all things that I have done; is this the Christ?

30 They went forth from the city and came to him.

31 In the meantime his disciples besought him, saying: Rabbi, eat.

32 But he said to them: I have food to eat that you know not of.

33 Then said the disciples one to another: Has any one brought him food?

34 Jesus says to them: My food is to do the will of him that sent me, and finish his work.

35 Say you a not that there are yet four months, and harvest comes? Behold, I say to you, lift up your eyes and behold the fields, that they are white for the harvest.

36 Already he that reaps receives reward and gathers fruit for eternal life, that he that sows and he that reaps may rejoice together.

37 For in this is the saying true, that there is one that sows and another that reaps.

38 I have sent you to reap that on which you have not labored: others have labored, and you have entered into their labor.

39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him because of the word of the woman who testified that he told me all things that I had done.

40 When therefore the Samaritans came to him, they besought him to abide with them; and he abode; there two days.

41 And many more believed because of his word,

42 and said to the woman: We no longer believe because of thy saying; for we ourselves have heard, and know that this is in truth the Saviour of the world.

43 But after the two days he went forth thence into Galilee.

44 For Jesus himself testified that a prophet has no honor in his own country.

45 When therefore he came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all things that he did in Jerusalem at the feast; for they also had come to the feast.

46 He came then again into Cana of Galilee, where he had made the water wine. And there was in Capernaum a nobleman, whose son was sick;

47 he, hearing that Jesus had come out of Judea into Galilee, came to him, and besought him that he would come down and restore his son to health; for he was about to die.

48 Jesus therefore said to him: Unless you see signs and wonders, you will not believe.

49 The nobleman said to him: Sir, come down before my child die.

50 Jesus said to him: Go, thy son lives. The man believed the word that Jesus had spoken to him, and went.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him and told him: Thy son lives.

52 He then inquired of them the hour in which he began to mend: they then said to him: Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 The father therefore knew that it was in that hour in which Jesus had said to him: Thy son lives; and he himself believed and all his house.

54 This again is the second sign that Jesus did on coming out of Judea into Galilee.

John 5

1 After this was the feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

2 And there is in Jerusalem at the sheep gate a pool, which is called in Hebrew, Bethesda, having five porches.

3 In these lay a multitude of sick persons, blind, lame, withered.

4 [no verse]

5 But there was a man there that had been sick thirty-eight years.

6 Jesus saw him lying, and, knowing that he had already been sick a long time, said to him: Wilt thou be restored to health?

7 The sick man answered him: Sir, I have no man, that when the water is stirred he may put me into the pool; but while I am coming another goes down before me.

8 Jesus says to him: Arise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And the man was restored to health, and took up his bed and walked; but a sabbath was on that day.

10 The Jews then said to him that had been cured: It is a sabbath, and it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.

11 He answered them: He that made me well said to me: Take up thy bed and walk.

12 They asked him: Who is the man that said to thee: Take up and walk?

13 But the sick man knew not who he was; for Jesus had withdrawn, as a multitude was in the place.

14 After this Jesus finds him in the temple; and he said to him: Behold, thou hast been restored to health: sin no more, lest something worse befall thee.

15 The man went away and told the Jews that it was Jesus that had made him well.

16 And for this reason the Jews persecuted Jesus, because he did these things on the sabbath.

17 But he answered them: My Father works till now, and I work.

18 For this reason did the Jews seek the more to kill him, because he not only broke the sabbath, but also called God his own Father, making himself equal to God.

19 Jesus therefore answered and said to them: Verily, verily, I say to you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he sees the Father do; for whatever he does, these also the Son does in like manner,

20 For the Father loves the Son and shows him all things that he himself does; and greater works than these will he show him, that you may wonder.

21 For as the Father raises the dead and makes them alive, so also the Son makes alive whom he will.

22 For neither does the Father judge any one, but has given all judicial authority to the Son,

23 that all may honor the Son as they honor the Father. He that honors not the Son honors not the Father who sent him.

24 Verily, verily, I say to you, that he that hears my word and believes on him that sent me has life eternal, and comes not into condemnation, but has passed out of death into life.

25 Verily, verily, I say to you, that the hour comes, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear shall live.

26 For as the Father has life in himself, so has he given to the Son also to have life in himself.

27 And he has given him authority to execute judgment, because he is the Son of man.

28 Wonder not at this, for the hour comes in which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

29 and shall come forth, those that have done good, to the resurrection of life; those that have done evil, to the resurrection of condemnation.

30 I can do nothing of myself: as I hear I judge, and my judgment is righteous, because I seek not my will, but the will of him that sent me.

31 If I testify of myself, my testimony is not true:

32 there is another that testifies of me, and you know that the testimony which he testifies of me is true.

33 You have sent to John, and he has testified to the truth;

34 but I receive not testimony from man, but these things I say that you may be saved.

35 He was the burning and the shining light, and you were willing to rejoice for an hour in his light.

36 But I have testimony greater than that of John; for the works which the Father has given me to accomplish, the works themselves that I do, testify of me that the Father has sent me.

37 And the Father who sent me, he has testified of me: neither his voice have you heard at any time, nor his shape have you seen,

38 and his word you have not abiding in you, for whom he has sent, him you believe not.

39 You search the scriptures, because you think that in them you have eternal life, and they are they that testify of me;

40 and yet you will not come to me that you may have life.

41 I receive not glory from men,

42 but I know you, that you have not the love of God in you.

43 I have come in my Father's name, and you receive me not: if another should come in his own name, him you would receive.

44 How can you believe while receiving glory one from another, and you seek not the glory that is from the only God?

45 Think not that I will accuse you to the Father: there is he that accuses you, Moses, in whom you trust.

46 For if you had believed Moses, you would have believed me; for he wrote of me.

47 But if you believe not his writings, how will you believe my words?

John 6

1 After this Jesus went away beyond the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias;

2 and a great multitude followed him because they saw the signs that he did in case of the sick.

3 But Jesus went up into the mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 And the Passover, the feast of the Jews, was near.

5 Jesus then, lifting up his eyes and seeing that a great multitude was coming to him, said to Philip: Whence can we buy bread, that these may eat?

6 But this he said to try him; for he himself knew what he was about to do.

7 Philip answered him: Two hundred denarii worth of bread is not enough for these, that each one may take some little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, says to him:

9 There is a lad here who has five barley loaves and two little fishes; but what are these among so many?

10 Jesus said: Make the men recline. And there was much grass in the place. The men therefore reclined, in number about five thousand.

11 Jesus therefore took the loaves, and gave thanks, and gave to those that reclined; in like manner also of the fishes as much as they wished.

12 But when they were filled, he said to his disciples: Gather up the broken pieces that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 They gathered them therefore, and filled twelve traveling-baskets with broken pieces from the five barley loaves, which remained after they had eaten.

14 The men therefore, seeing the sign that he had done, said: This is in truth the prophet that comes into the world.

15 Jesus then, knowing that they were about to come and seize him to make him king, fled again into the mountain himself alone.

16 But when evening had come, his disciples went down to the sea,

17 and having entered a ship, were going beyond the sea to Capernaum. But darkness overtook them, and Jesus had not yet come to them:

18 the sea also arose, because a great wind was blowing.

19 Having rowed therefore about twenty-five or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and coming near the ship, and they were afraid.

20 But he said to them: It is I, be not afraid.

21 They then willingly received him into the ship, and immediately the ship was at the land to which they were going.

22 On the morrow the multitude that stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was no other little ship there but one, and that Jesus had not entered the ship with his disciples, but his disciples had gone away alone:

23 however, little ships had come from Tiberias, near the place where they ate bread when the Lord had given thanks.

24 When, therefore, the multitude saw that Jesus was not there, nor his disciples, they entered the little ships and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus.

25 And having found him on the other side of the sea, they said to him: Rabbi, when earnest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said: Verily, verily, I say to you, you seek me not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled.

27 Labor not for the food that perishes, but for the food that abides to life eternal, which the Son of man gives you; for him has God the Father attested.

28 They said therefore to him: What must we do that we may work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said to them: This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent.

30 They said then to him: What doest thou then as a sign, that we may see and believe thee; what workest thou?

31 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, as it is written: Bread from heaven gave he them to eat.

32 Then said Jesus to them: Verily, verily, I say to you, Moses has not given you the bread from heaven; but my Father gives you the bread from heaven, the true.

33 For the bread which is God's is he that comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.

34 They said therefore to him: Lord, always give us this bread.

35 Jesus then said to them: I am the bread of life: he that comes to me shall not hunger, and he that believes on me shall never thirst.

36 But I said to you that you have seen and do not believe.

37 All that the Father gives me shall come to me, and him that comes to me I will not cast out;

38 for I have come down from heaven, not that I might do my will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the will of him that sent me, that I shall lose nothing of all that he has given me, but shall raise it up in the last day.

40 For this is the will of my Father, that whoever sees the Son and believes on him may have life eternal, and I shall raise him up in the last day.

41 The Jews therefore murmured concerning him, because he said: I am the bread that came down from heaven;

42 and they said: Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How now says this man: I have come down from heaven?

43 Jesus answered and said to them: Murmur not among yourselves.

44 No one can come to me unless the Father who sent me draw him, and I will raise him up in the last day.

45 It is written in the prophets: And they shall all be taught of God: every one that has heard from the Father and has learned, comes to me.

46 Not that any one has seen the Father, but he that is from God, he has seen the Father.

47 Verily, verily, I say to you, he that believes has life eternal.

48 I am the bread of life.

49 Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness and died:

50 this is the bread that comes down from heaven, that any one may eat of it and not die.

51 I am the living bread, that came down from heaven: if any one eat of my bread, he shall live forever; and the bread also that I will give for the life of the world, is my flesh.

52 The Jews then contended one with another, saying: How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

53 Jesus therefore said to them: Verily, verily, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, you have no life in you.

54 He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood has life eternal, and I will raise him up in the, last day.

55 For my flesh is true food, and my blood is true drink.

56 He that eats my flesh and drinks my blood abides in me and I in him.

57 As the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father, he also that eats me even he shall live because of me.

58 This is the bread that came down from heaven, not as the fathers ate and died: he that eats this bread shall live forever.

59 These things spoke he in the synagogue as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Therefore many of his disciples on hearing it said: A hard saying is this: who can hear it?

61 But Jesus, knowing in himself that his disciples murmured concerning this, said to them: Does this offend you?

62 If then you should see the Son of man ascending where he was before?

63 The spirit is that which makes alive; the flesh profits nothing; the words that I have spoken to you are spirit, and are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who it was that would deliver him up.

65 And he said: For this reason have I said to you that no one can come to me unless it be given him of the Father.

66 From this time therefore many of his disciples went back and walked no more with him.

67 Jesus then said to the twelve: Will you also go away?

68 Simon Peter answered him: Lord, to whom shall we go? The words of eternal life hast thou;

69 and we have believed and known that thou art the Holy One of God.

70 He answered them: Have I not chosen you twelve? and one of you is a devil.

71 But he spoke of Judas, son of Simon Tscariot; for he was about to deliver him up, being one of the twelve.

John 7

1 After this Jesus walked in Galilee; for he would not walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him.

2 But the feast of the Jews, that of tabernacles, was near.

3 His brothers therefore said to him: Depart hence and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest;

4 for no one does any thing in secret and desires himself to be known openly. If thou doest these things, make thyself manifest to the world.

5 For neither did his brothers believe on him.

6 Jesus says to them: My time is not yet present, but your time is always ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hates, because I testify of it that its works are evil.

8 Do you go up to the feast: I go not up to this feast, because my time has not yet fully come.

9 Having said these things, he abode in Galilee.

10 But when his brothers had gone up to the feast, then he himself also went up, not openly, but in secret.

11 The Jews then sought for him at the feast, and said: Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring concerning him among the multitude; some said: He is a good man: others said: No, but he deceives the multitude.

13 No one, however, spoke boldly concerning him, for fear of the Jews.

14 But now at the middle of the festival Jesus went up into the temple and taught.

15 The Jews therefore were astonished, saying: How knows this man letters, not having learned?

16 Jesus then answered them and said: My teaching is not mine, but his that sent me:

17 if any one will do his will he shall know of the teaching, whether it is of God, or I speak of myself.

18 He that speaks of himself seeks his own glory: he that seeks the glory of him that sent him, he is true, and unrighteousness is not in him.

19 Has not Moses given you the law? and none of you does the law. Why do you seek to kill me?

20 The multitude answered: Thou hast a demon: who seekest to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said to them: One work I have done and you all wonder.

22 Moses has given you circumcision, not that it is of Moses, but of the fathers, and on the sabbath day you circumcise a man.

23 If a man receives circumcision on the sabbath, that the law of Moses may not be broken, are you angry with me because I restored the entire man to health on the sabbath?

24 Judge not, according to appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

25 Then said some of those of Jerusalem: Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

26 And lo, he speaks boldly, and they say nothing to him. Have the rulers then certainly known that this is the Christ?

27 However, we know this man, whence he is; but when the Christ comes, no one knows whence he is.

28 Jesus therefore cried out in the temple, teaching and saying: You both know me, and you know whence I am; and I have not come of myself, but he is true that sent me, whom you know not:

29 I know him, because I am from him and he sent me.

30 They therefore sought to take him, and no one laid his hand on him, because his hour had not yet come.

31 But many of the multitude believed on him, and said: When Christ comes, will he do more signs than these that this man does?

32 The Pharisees heard the multitude murmuring these things concerning him, and the chief priests and the Pharisees sent attendants that they might take him.

33 Therefore said Jesus: Yet a little while I am with you, and I go to him that sent me.

34 You shall seek me and shall not find me, and where I am you cannot come.

35 The Jews therefore said one to another: Whither does this man intend to go, that we shall not find him? Does he intend to go among the dispersion of the Greeks and teach the Greeks?

36 What means this word that he spoke: You shall seek me and shall not find me, and where I am, you cannot come?

37 But on the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying: If any one thirst, let him come and drink.

38 He that believes on me, as the scripture said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

39 But this he spoke of the Spirit which those that believe on him were about to receive; for the Spirit was not yet, because Jesus had not yet been glorified.

40 Some of the multitude therefore, hearing these words, said: This is in truth the prophet;

41 others said: This is the Christ; others said: Does the Christ then come out of Galilee?

42 Has not the scripture said that the Christ comes of the posterity of David, and from Bethlehem, the town where David was?

43 There was therefore a division among the multitude, because of him;

44 but some of them wished to take him; no one, however, laid hands on him.

45 The attendants therefore came to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said to them: Why did you not bring him?

46 The attendants answered: Never man so spoke, as this man speaks.

47 The Pharisees answered them: Are you also deceived?

48 Has any one of the rulers believed on him, or of the Pharisees?

49 But the multitude, that knows not the law, are cursed.

50 Nicodemus, being one of them, says to them:

51 Does our law condemn the man unless it first hear from him and know what he does?

52 They answered and said to him: Art thou also of Galilee? Search and see that out of Galilee a prophet arises not.

[John 7:53 – 8:11 is not found in the Sinaiticus. Anderson includes instead *two versions* or these verses – the first from codex D and the second a different account supposed by Griesbach to be a very probable omission.

53 And they went each one to his own house.

John 7

8:1 But Jesus went into the mount of Olives.

2 And early in the morning he comes again into the temple, and all the people came to him.

3 And the scribes and the Pharisees bring a woman taken in sin, and having placed her in the midst.

4 the priests say to him, tempting him, that they may have an accusation against him: Teacher, this woman has been taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now, Moses in the law commanded us to stone such: but now what sayest thou?

6 But Jesus stooped down and with his finger wrote on the ground.

7 But as they continued asking, he lifted himself up and said to them: Let him that is without sin among you be the first to throw a stone at her.

8 And he again stooped down and with his finger wrote on the ground.

9 And each one of the Jews went out, beginning from the elder, so that all went out; and he was left alone, and the woman being in the midst. 10 And Jesus lifted himself up and said to the woman: Where are they? Has no one condemned thee?

11 And she said to him: No one, sir. And he said: Neither do I condemn thee; go, from this time sin no more.

8:1 But Jesus went into the mount of Olives.

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came to him, and he sat down and taught them.

3 And the scribes and the Pharisees bring to him a woman taken in adultery, and having placed her in the midst

4 they say to him: Teacher, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now, in the law Moses commanded that such should be stoned: thou therefore, what sayest thou?

6 But this they said tempting him, that they might have to accuse him.

But Jesus stooped down and with his finger wrote on the ground.

7 And as they continued asking him, he lifted himself up and said to them: He that is without sin among you, let him be the first to throw the stone at her.

8 And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground.

9 But they having heard, and being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning from the elder to the last; and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 But Jesus lifted himself up, and seeing no one but the woman, said to her: Woman, where are, those thy accusers? Has no one condemned thee?

11 She said: No one, sir. And Jesus said to her: Neither do I condemn thee: go and sin no more.]

12 Again therefore Jesus spoke to them, saying: I am the Light of the world: he that follows me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said to him: Thou testifiest of thyself: thy testimony is not true.

14 Jesus answered and said to them: Though I testify of myself, my testimony is true, for I know whence I came and whither I go: you know not whence I come or whither I go.

15 You judge according to the flesh; I judge no one.

16 And even if I judge, my judgment is true, because I am not alone, but I and he that sent me.

17 And even in your law it is written that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one testifying of myself, and the Father who sent me testifies of me.

19 They said therefore to him: Where is thy Father? Jesus answered: You know neither me nor my Father: if you had known me, you would have known my Father also.

20 These words spoke he in the treasury while teaching in the temple; and no one took him, because his hour had not yet come.

21 He therefore said again to them: I go away, and you shall seek me, and in your sin you shall die: whither I go you cannot come.

22 The Jews then said: Will he kill himself, because he says: Whither I go you cannot come?

23 And he said to them: You are from beneath, I am from above: you are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 Therefore said I to you that you shall die in your sins; for if you believe not that I am he, you shall die in your sins.

25 They said therefore to him: Who art thou? Jesus said to them: Altogether that which I also say to you.

26 I have many things to say and to judge of you; but he that sent me is true, and what I have heard from him, these things I speak unto the world.

27 They knew not that he spoke to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus: When you shall have, lifted up the Son of man, then you shall know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself, but as the Father has taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me is with me: he has not left me alone, for I do always the things that are pleasing to him.

30 While he was speaking these things many believed on him.

31 Jesus then said to the Jews that believed on him: If you abide in my word, you are my disciples in truth,

32 and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered to him: We are Abraham's posterity, and have never been in bondage to any one; how sayest thou: You shall become free?

34 Jesus answered them: Verily, verily, I say to you, that every one that does sin is a servant of sin.

35 But the servant abides not in the house forever: the Son abides forever.

36 If, then, the Son shall make you free, you shall be free indeed.

37 I know that you are Abraham's posterity; but you seek to kill me, because my word has no place in you.

38 I speak what things I have seen with my Father, and you then do what things you have heard from your father.

39 They answered and said to him: Abraham is our father. Jesus says to them: If you were the children of Abraham, you would do the works of Abraham;

40 but now you seek to kill me, a man that has spoken to you the truth, which I heard from God: this Abraham did not.

41 You do the works of your fathers. They said to him: We have not been born of lewdness; we have one Father, God.

42 Jesus said to them: If God were your Father, you would love me; for I came forth from God and have come hither: nor indeed have I come of myself, but he sent me.

43 Why know you not my speech? because you cannot hear my word.

44 You are of your father, the devil, and the desires of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and has not stood in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks what is false, he speaks of his own, for he is a liar and the father of it.

45 But because I tell you the truth, you believe me not.

46 Which of you convinces me of sin? If I speak the truth, why do you not believe me?

47 He that is of God hears the words of God; for this reason you hear not, because you are not of God.

48 The Jews answered and said to him: Do we not well say that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a demon?

49 Jesus answered: I have not a demon, but I honor my Father, and you dishonor me.

50 But I seek not my glory: there is that seeks and judges.

51 Verily, verily, I say to you, if any one keep my word, he shall never see death.

52 The Jews said to him: Now we know that thou hast a demon. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest: If any one keep my word, he shall never taste of death:

53 art thou greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? And the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

54 Jesus answered: If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing; it is my Father that glorifies me, of whom you say that he is your God;

55 and yet you have not known him, but I know him. If I should say that I do not know him, I should be a liar like you; but I know him, and his word I keep.

56 Abraham, your father, rejoiced that he could see my day, and he saw it and was glad.

57 The Jews then said to him: Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said to them: Verily, verily, I say to you, before Abraham came into being, I am.

59 They therefore took up stones to throw at him; but Jesus hid himself and went out of the temple.

John 9

1 And passing by he saw a man blind from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying: Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?

3 Jesus answered: Neither this man sinned nor his parents, but that the works of God might be manifested in him.

4 We must work the works of him that sent us while it is day: there comes night, when no man can work.

5 While I am in the world, I am the Light of the world.

6 He said these things, and spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed his eyes with the clay,

7 and said to him: Go wash in the pool of Siloam, which is, translated. Sent. He went therefore and washed, and came seeing.

8 The neighbors therefore, and those that had seen him before, that he was a beggar, said: Is not this he that sat and begged?

9 Others said that this is he; others said: No, but he is like him. He said: I am he.

10 They therefore said to him: How were thy eyes opened?

11 He answered: The man that is called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes, and said to me: Go to Siloam and wash. Having gone therefore and washed, I received sight.

12 They said to him: Where is he? He says: I know not.

13 They bring to the Pharisees him that was formerly blind.

14 And it was a sabbath on the day in which Jesus made clay and opened his eyes.

15 Again therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he had received sight. He said to them: He put clay upon my eyes and I washed and do see.

16 Some of the Pharisees therefore said: This man is not from God, for he keeps not the sabbath. Others said: How can a man a sinner do such signs? And there was a division among them.

17 They say therefore to the blind man again: What sayest thou of him, because he has opened thy eyes? He said: He is a prophet.

18 The Jews therefore did not believe concerning him, that he was blind and had received sight, till they had called the parents of him that had received sight,

19 and asked them, saying: Is this your son, of whom you say that he was born blind? How, then, does he now see?

20 His parents therefore answered and said: We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind;

21 but how he now sees we know not, or who opened his eyes we know not: ask him; he is of age: he shall speak for himself

22 These things said his parents because they feared the Jews; for the Jews had already agreed that if any one should confess him to be Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 For this reason his parents said that he is of age, ask him.

24 They therefore a second time called the man that had been blind, and said to him: Give glory to God: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He then answered: If he is a sinner, I know not: one thing I know, that, being blind, I now see.

26 They said therefore to him: What did he for thee? How opened he thy eyes?

27 He answered them: I have told you already, and you did not hear: why will you hear again? Will you also become his disciples?

28 They reviled him and said: Thou art a disciple of that man, but we are Moses' disciples:

29 we know that God spoke to Moses, but this man, we know not whence he is.

30 The man answered and said to them: Why, in this is that which is wonderful, that you know not whence he is, and yet he has opened my eyes.

31 We know that God hears not sinners, but if any one be a worshiper of God and do his will, him he hears.

32 Never was it heard that any one opened the eyes of one that had been born blind:

33 if this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said to him: Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out, and he found him and said: Dost thou believe on the Son of man?

36 He answered and said: And who is he, Lord, that I may believe on him?

37 Jesus said to him: Thou hast both seen him, and he it is that talks with thee.

38 He said, Lord, I believe; and he worshiped him.

39 And Jesus said: For judgment have I come into this world, that those that see not may see, and that those that see may become blind.

40 Some of the Pharisees that were with him heard, and said to him: Are we also blind?

41 Jesus said to them: If you were blind, you would not have sin; but now you say: We see: your sin remains.

John 10

1 Verily, verily, I say to you, he that enters not through the door into the sheepfold, but goes up by some other way, he is a thief and a robber:

2 but he that enters through the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter opens, and the sheep hear his voice, and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out.

4 When he puts forth all of his own sheep, he goes before them, and the sheep follow him, because they know his voice;

5 but a stranger they will not follow, but flee from him, because they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spoke Jesus to them; but they knew not what things they were that he spoke to them.

7 Jesus therefore said: Verily, verily, I say to you: I am the door of the sheep.

8 All as many as have come are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them.

9 I am the door: through me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

10 The thief comes not but that he may steal and kill and destroy: I have come that they may have life, and have it abundantly.

11 I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd lays down his life for the sheep:

12 he that is a hireling and not a shepherd, to whom the sheep do not belong, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and flees, and the wolf seizes and scatters them,

13 because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and know mine, and mine know me,

15 as the Father knows me and I know the Father; and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also must I bring, and they shall hear my voice, and there shall be one fold, one shepherd.

17 For this reason my Father loves me, because I lay down my life, that I may take it again.

18 No one takes it from me, but I lay it down of myself. Authority have I to lay it down, and authority have I to take it again: this commandment I received from my Father.

19 There arose again a division among the Jews because of these words.

20 Therefore many of them said: He has a demon and is mad; why hear him?

21 Others said: These words are not of one that has a demon: can a demon open the eyes of the blind?

22 But the feast of dedication was held in Jerusalem; it was winter;

23 and Jesus was walking in the temple, in Solomon's porch.

24 The Jews therefore came around him and said to him: How long dost thou keep us in suspense? If thou art the Christ, tell us plainly.

25 Jesus answered: I have told you, and you do not believe: the works
13 that I do in my Father's name, these testify of me;

26 but you believe not, because you are not of my sheep.

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me,

28 and I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them out of my hand.

29 What the Father has given to me is greater than all, and no one can snatch them out of the Father's hand.

30 I and the Father are one.

31 Again the Jews took up stones to stone him.

32 Jesus answered them: Many good works have I shown you from the Father; for what one of these do you stone me?

33 The Jews answered him: For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and because thou, being man, makest thyself God.

34 Jesus answered them: Is it not written in your law, I said: You are gods?

35 If he called them gods, to whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken:

36 of him whom the Father sanctified and sent into the world, say you: Thou blasphemest; because I said: I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not;

38 but if I do, although you believe not me, believe the works, that you may know and acknowledge that the Father is in me and I in the Father.

39 They then sought to take him, and he went forth from their hand.

40 And he went away again beyond the Jordan into the place where John was first baptizing, and abode there.

41 And many came to him and said: John indeed did no sign, but all things whatever John said of this man were true.

42 And many believed on him there.

John 11

1 But a man was sick, Lazarus of Bethany, of the village of Mary and her sister Martha.

2 And it was Mary that anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.

3 The sisters therefore sent to him, saying: Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 But Jesus hearing it, said: This sickness is not to death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified through it.

5 Now, Jesus loved Martha and her sister and Lazarus.

6 When therefore he had heard that he was sick, then indeed he abode two days in the place where he was:

7 then after this he says to the disciples: Let us go into Judea again.

8 The disciples say to him: Rabbi, the Jews just now sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither again?

9 Jesus answered: Are there not twelve hours of the day? If any one walk in the day, he stumbles not, because he sees the light of the world:

10 if any one walk in the night, he stumbles, because the light is not in him.

11 These things said he, and after this he says to them: Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I go that I may awake him.

12 Then the disciples said to him: Lord, if he has fallen asleep, he shall be saved.

13 Jesus, however, had spoken of his death; but they supposed that he spoke of the rest of sleep.

14 Therefore Jesus then said to them plainly: Lazarus is dead;

15 and I rejoice for your sakes, in order that you may believe, that I was not there; but let us go to him.

16 Thomas, who is called Didymus, then said to his fellow-disciples: Let I us also go, that we may die with him.

17 Jesus came therefore and found that he had been four days in the tomb.

18 But Bethany was near Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off.

19 And many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary and their friends, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Martha therefore, when she heard that Jesus was coming, met him; but Mary sat in the house.

21 Martha therefore said to Jesus: Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother would not have died.

22 And now I know that whatever things thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee.

23 Jesus says to her: Thy brother shall rise.

24 Martha says to him: I know that he will rise in the resurrection, in the last day.

25 Jesus said to her: I am the resurrection and the life; he that believes on me, though he were dead, he shall live,

26 and whoever lives and believes on me shall never die: believest thou this?

27 She says to him: Yes, Lord: I have believed that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, he that comes into the world.

28 And after saying this she went away and called Mary her sister secretly, saying: The Teacher is present, and calls for thee.

29 When she heard, she rose quickly and came to him;

30 but Jesus had not yet come into the village, but was in the place where Martha had met him.

31 Therefore the Jews that were with her in the house, and were comforting her, seeing Mary, that she rose up quickly and went out, followed her, supposing that she was going to the tomb, that she might weep there.

32 Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was, seeing him, fell at his feet, saying to him: Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother would not have died.

33 Jesus therefore, when he saw her weeping and the Jews that came with her weeping, was greatly moved in spirit, and was troubled,

34 and said: Where have you laid him? They say to him: Lord, come and see.

35 Jesus wept.

36 Therefore said the Jews: See how he loved him.

37 But some of them said: Could not this man, that opened the eyes of the blind man, have caused that even this man should not die?

38 Jesus therefore, again greatly moved within himself, comes to the tomb; but it was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

39 Jesus says: Take away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that had died, says to him: Lord, the smell is now offensive; for he has been dead four days.

40 Jesus says to her: Did I not tell thee that if thou wouldst believe thou shouldst see the glory of God?

41 They therefore took away the stone; but Jesus lifted up his eyes and said: Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.

42 But I knew that thou always hearest me; but yet, on account of the multitude that stands around, I said it, that they may believe that thou didst send me.

43 And having said these things, he cried with a loud voice: Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that had been dead came forth, bound hands and feet with swathing bands; and his face was bound around with a handkerchief. Jesus says to them: Loose him, and let him go.

45 Many therefore of the Jews, that had come to Mary and had seen what he did, believed on him;

46 but some of them went away to the Pharisees and told them what Jesus had done.

47 Therefore the chief priests and the Pharisees brought together the Sanhedrim, and said: What do we, for this man does many signs?

48 If we let him alone thus, all will believe on him; and the Romans will come and take away both our place and nation.

49 But a certain one of them, Caiaphas, being chief priest that year, said to them: You know nothing,

50 neither do you consider that it is profitable for us that one man die for the people and not that the whole nation perish.

51 But this he spoke not of himself, but, being chief priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus was about to die for the nation;

52 and not for the nation only, but that he might gather into one the children of God also, that were scattered abroad.

53 From that day therefore they took counsel to kill him.

54 Jesus then no longer walked openly among the Jews; but went away thence into the country near the wilderness, to a city called Ephraim; and there he abode with his disciples.

55 But the passover of the Jews was near, and many went up from the country to Jerusalem before the passover, that they might purify themselves.

56 They therefore sought Jesus and said among themselves while standing in the temple: What think you, that he will not come to the feast?

57 But the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandments that, if any knew where he was, he should make it known, in order that they might take him.

John 12

1 Jesus therefore, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, whom Jesus raised from the dead.

2 They therefore made him a supper there, and Martha served, but Lazarus was one of those that reclined at table with him.

3 Then Mary took a pound of the ointment of pure nard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair; and the house was filled with the perfume of the ointment.

4 But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, he that was about to deliver him up, says:

5 Why was this ointment not sold for three hundred denarii, and given to the poor?

6 But this he said, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and having the bag he carried what was thrown in.

7 Jesus therefore said: Let her alone; she bought it that she might keep it to the day of my burial.

8 For the poor you have always with you, but me you have not always.

9 The great multitude of the Jews therefore knew that he was there, and came not because of Jesus only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he raised from the dead.

10 But the chief priests had determined that they would kill Lazarus also,

11 because many of the Jews, on account of him, went away and believed on Jesus.

12 On the next day a great multitude that had come to the feast, hearing that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem.

13 took branches of palm-trees and went forth to meet him, and cried: Hosanna, blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord, and blessed is the King of Israel.

14 But Jesus, finding a young ass, sat upon it, as it is written:

15 Fear not, daughter of Zion: behold, thy King comes sitting upon the foal of an ass.

16 These things his disciples knew not at first, but when Jesus had been glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things for him.

17 The multitude that was with him therefore testified that he had called Lazarus from the tomb, and raised him from the dead.

18 For this reason also the multitude met him, because they heard that he had done this sign.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves: You see that you profit nothing: behold, the world has gone after him.

20 But of those that went up to worship at the feast, there were some Greeks:

21 these therefore came to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, saying: Sir, we wish to see Jesus.

22 Philip comes and tells Andrew: Andrew and Philip come and tell Jesus.

23 But Jesus answered them, saying: The hour has come that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat fall into the ground and die, itself abides alone; but if it die, it brings forth much fruit.

25 He that loves his life shall lose it, and he that hates his life in this world shall keep it to life eternal.

26 If any one serve me, let him follow me, and where I am, there shall my servant also be: if any one serve me him will my Father honor.

27 Now is my soul troubled, and what; shall I say? Father, save me from this hour. But for this cause came I to this hour.

28 Father, glorify thy name. There came therefore a voice from heaven: I have glorified it, and will glorify it again.

29 Therefore the multitude that stood by, hearing it, said that it thundered: others said: An angel has spoken to him.

30 Jesus answered and said: Not for my sake came this voice, but for yours.

31 Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out,

32 and I, when I shall have been lifted up from the earth, will draw all men to myself.

33 But this he said, signifying by what kind of death he was about to die.

34 Then the multitude answered him: We have heard out of the law that the Christ abides forever, and how sayest thou that the Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this, the Son of man?

35 Jesus therefore said to them: Yet a little while the light is among you. Walk while you have the light, that darkness overtake you not; and he that walks in darkness knows not whither he goes.

36 While you have the light, believe on the light, that you may become sons of light. These things spoke Jesus and went away and hid himself from them.

37 But though he had done so many signs before them, they believed not on him.

38 that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke: Lord, who of us has believed what is heard? and to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed?

39 For this reason they could not believe, because Isaiah said again:

40 He has blinded their eyes and hardened their hearts, lest they should see with their eyes, and understand with their heart, and should turn and I should give them health.

41 These things said Isaiah, because he saw his glory, and spoke of him.

42 Yet however, of the rulers, many believed on him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confess, lest they should be put out of the synagogue;

43 for they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.

44 But Jesus cried and said: He that believes on me believes not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 and he that sees me sees him that sent me.

46 I have come a light into the world, that whoever believes on me may not abide in darkness.

47 And if any one hear my words and keep them not, I judge him not; for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

48 He that rejects me and receives not my words, has that which judges him: the word that I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day.

49 For I have not spoken of myself, but the Father who sent me, he himself has given me commandment what I should say and what I should speak.

50 And I know that his commandment is life eternal. What things therefore I speak, as the Father said to me, so I speak.

John 13

1 But before the feast of passover, Jesus, knowing that his hour had come that he should go out of this world to the Father, having loved his own that were in the world, he loved them to the end.

2 And when supper had ended, as the devil had already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, son of Simon, to betray him.

3 Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he had come forth from God and was going to God,

4 rises from supper and lays aside his garments; and having taken a towel, he girded himself:

5 then he poured water into the basin, and began to wash the feet of the disciples, and to wipe them with the towel with which he was girded.

6 He then comes to Simon Peter; he says to him: Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

7 Jesus answered and said to him: What I am doing thou knowest not now, but thou shalt know after this.

8 Peter says to him: Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him: Unless I wash thee, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter says to him: Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

10 Jesus says to him: He that has bathed has no need to wash his hands and head, but is wholly clean; and you are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew him that would deliver him up; for this reason he said: Not all of you are clean.

12 When therefore he had washed their feet and had taken his garments, and reclined again at table, he said to them: Do you know what I have done for you?

13 You call me: Teacher and Lord, and you say well, for I am.

14 If, then, I, the Lord and the Teacher, have washed your feet, you also ought to wash the feet of one another;

15 for I have given you an example, that you also should do as I have done to you.

16 Verily, verily, I say to you, a servant is not greater than his lord, nor is an apostle greater than he that sent him.

17 If you know these things, blessed are you if you do them.

18 I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen; but that the scripture might be fulfilled: He that eats bread with me has lifted up his heel against me.

19 Even now I tell you before it comes to pass, that when it shall have come to pass you may believe that I am he.

20 Verily, verily, I say to you, he that receives whom I shall send receives me, and he that receives me receives him that sent me.

21 After saying these things, Jesus was troubled in spirit, and testified and said: Verily, verily, I say to you, that one of you shall deliver me up.

22 The disciples looked one at another, doubting concerning whom he spoke.

23 One of his disciples, whom Jesus loved, was reclining in the bosom of Jesus:

24 Simon Peter then nods to this one and says to him: Tell who it is of whom he speaks.

25 Therefore he, leaning back thus on the breast of Jesus, says to him: Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answers: He it is for whom I shall dip the morsel and give it to him. Therefore, having dipped the morsel, he takes it and gives it to Judas, son of Simon Iscariot.

27 And after the morsel, then Satan entered into him. Jesus therefore says to him: What thou doest, do quickly.

28 But no one of those reclining at table knew for what purpose he said this to him;

29 for some supposed, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus said to him: Buy the things of which we have need for the feast, or that he should give something to the poor.

30 Having therefore received the morsel, he went out Immediately; and it was night.

31 When therefore he had gone out, Jesus said: Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God is glorified in him. God also will glorify him in himself, and he will immediately glorify him.

33 Little children, yet a little while am I with you: you shall seek me, and as I said to the Jews, that where I am you cannot come, to you also I say it now.

34 A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.

35 In this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one for another.

36 Simon Peter says to him: Lord. whither goest thou? Jesus answered: Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now, but thou shalt follow me hereafter.

37 Peter says to him: Lord, why can I not follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thee.

38 Jesus answered: Wilt thou lay down thy life for me? Verily, verily, I say to thee, a cock shall not crow till thou hast denied me three times.

John 14

1 Let not your hearts be troubled: believe on God, believe also on me.

2 In my Father's house are many mansions; if not so, I would have told you; for I am going to prepare a place for you.

3 And when I shall have gone and prepared a place for you, I will come again, and take you to myself, that where I am you also may be.

4 And whither I go you know the way.

5 Thomas says to him: Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how know we the way?

6 Jesus says to him: I am he way, and the truth, and the life: no one comes to the Father but through me. 7 If you have known me, you shall know my Father also; and even now you know him and have seen him.

8 Philip says to him: Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for us.

9 Jesus says to him: So long a time am I with you, and hast thou not known me, Philip? He that has seen me has seen the Father: how sayest thou: show us the Father?

10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words that I say to you I speak not of myself: the Father, who abides in me, does the works.

11 Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me: if not, believe because of the works themselves.

12 Verily, verily, I say to you, he that believes on me, the works that I do he also shall do, and greater works than these shall he do because I go to the Father.

13 And whatever you shall ask in my name, this will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If you ask any thing in my name. I will do it.

15 If you love me, you will keep my commandments.

16 And I will entreat the Father, and another Advocate will he give you, that he may be with you for ever,

17 the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it sees* him not, neither knows him: you know him, because he abides with you and shall be in you.

* Discerns or acknowledges him not

18 I will not leave you orphans; I am coming to you.

19 Yet a little while and the world sees me no more; but you shall see me; because I live and you shall live.

20 In that day you shall know that I am in my Father and you in me and I in you.

21 He that has my commandments and keeps them, he it is that loves me; and he that loves me shall be loved by my Father, and I will love him and will manifest myself to him.

22 Judas, not Iscariot, says to him: Lord, and how is it that thou will manifest thyself to us, and not to the world?

23 Jesus answered and said to him: If any one love me, he will keep my word, and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our abode with him.

24 He that loves me not keeps not my words; and the word that you hear is not mine, but the Father's that sent me.

- 25 These things have I spoken to you while abiding with you;
26 but the Advocate, the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and shall bring to your remembrance all things that I have said to you.
27 Peace I leave you, my peace I give you: not as the world gives, give I to you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.
28 You heard that I said to you: I go away and come to you. If you loved me, you would rejoice because I go to the Father, for the Father is greater than I.
29 And now I have told you before it comes to pass, that when it comes to pass you may believe.
30 No longer will I talk much with you; for the prince of the world comes, and has nothing in me,
31 but that the world may know that I love the Father, and as the Father gave me commandment, so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

John 15

- 1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the vinedresser.
2 Every branch in me that bears not fruit he takes away, and every one that bears fruit, he cleanses, that it may bear more fruit.
3 You are now clean, because of the word that I have spoken to you:
4 abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abide in the vine, so neither can you, unless you abide in me.
5 I am the vine, you the branches. He that abides in me and I in him, he bears much fruit; for without me you can do nothing.
6 If any one abide not in me, he is cast out as the branch and withers, and they gather it and throw it into the fire, and it is burned.
7 If you abide in me and my words abide in you, ask whatever you will, and it shall be done for you.
8 In this is my Father glorified, that you bear much fruit and become my disciples.
9 As the Father has loved me, I also have loved you: abide in my love.
10 If you keep my commandments, you shall abide in my love, as I have kept my Father's commandments and abide in his love.
11 These things I have spoken to you that my joy may be in you and your joy may be fulfilled.
12 My commandment is this, that you love one another as I have loved you.
13 Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends.
14 You are my friends, if you do what things I command you.

15 I no longer call you servants, because the servant knows not what his lord does; but I have called you friends, because An all things that I have heard from my Father I have made known to you.

16 You have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and appointed you that you may go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain, that whatever you ask the Father in my name he may give you.

17 These things I command you, that you love one another.

18 If the world hates you, you know that it has hated me first.

19 If you were of the world, the world would love its own; but because you are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hates you.

20 Remember the word that I spoke to you: The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also: if they have kept my word, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do to you on account of my name, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have had sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin.

23 He that hates me hates my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works that no other did, they would have had no sin; but now they have both seen and hated both me and my Father.

25 But that the word might be fulfilled which is written in their law: They hated me without a cause.

26 When the Advocate has come, whom I will send you from the Father, the Spirit of truth that proceeds from the Father, he shall testify of me;

27 and you also shall testify, because you have been with me from the beginning.

John 16

1 These things have I spoken to you that you may not be offended.

2 They will put you out of the synagogues: indeed, the hour comes that every one that kills you will think that he offers service to God.

3 And these things will they do because they have not known the Father nor me.

4 But these things I have spoken to you that when the hour comes you may remember them, that I told you. And these things I told you not from the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I go to him that sent me, and no one of you asks me: Whither goest thou?

6 And yet, because I have told you these things, sorrow has filled your heart.

7 But I tell you the truth, it is profitable for you that I go away. For if I go not away, the Advocate will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you.

8 And when he comes, he will convince the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.

9 Of sin indeed, because they believe not on me;

10 but of righteousness, because I go to the Father and you see me no more;

11 but of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now;

13 but when he has come, the Spirit of truth, he shall guide you in all the truth; for he shall not speak of himself, but whatever he hears he shall speak, and he shall announce to you things to come.

14 He shall glorify me, for he shall take of mine and announce it to you.

15 All things whatever the Father has are mine: therefore I said that he takes of mine and announces to you.

16 A little while, and you see me no more, and again a little while, and you shall see me.

17 Some of his disciples therefore said one to another: What is this that he says to us: A little while, and you see me not, and again a little while, and you shall see me? and that I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore: This, what is it that he says, The little while? We know not what he says.

19 Jesus knew that they desired to ask him, and he said to them: Concerning this do you inquire among yourselves because I said: A little while, and you see me not, and again a little while, and you shall see me?

20 Verily, verily, I say to you, that you shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: you shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall become joy.

21 The wife, when she is in labor, has sorrow, because her hour has come; but when she has brought forth the child, she no longer remembers the affliction for joy that a man has been born into the world.

22 And you therefore now indeed have sorrow; but I shall see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no one takes from you.

23 And in that day, of me you shall ask nothing. Verily, verily, I say to you, if you ask anything of the Father, he will give it to you in my name.

24 Till now you have asked nothing in my name: ask, and you shall receive, that your joy may be fulfilled.

25 These things I have spoken to you in parables: the hour comes when I will no longer speak to you in parables, but will tell you plainly concerning the Father.

26 In that day you shall ask in my name, and I say not to you that I will beseech the Father for you;

27 for the Father himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and have come into the world: again I leave the world and go to the Father.

29 His disciples say: Behold, now thou speakest plainly, and utterest no parable.

30 Now we know that thou knowest all things, and hast no need that any one should ask thee: in this we believe that thou earnest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them: Do you now believe?

32 Behold, the hour comes, and has come, that you shall be scattered each one to his own and leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, for the Father is with me.

33 These things I have spoken to you that in me you may have peace. In the world you have affliction; but take courage, I have overcome the world.

John 17

1 These things spoke Jesus; and, lifting his eyes to heaven, he said: Father, the hour has come: glorify thy Son, that the Son may glorify thee,

2 as thou hast given him authority over all flesh, that to all that thou hast given him he may give them life eternal.

3 But eternal life is this, that they may know thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth, having finished the work that thou gavest me to do;

5 and now, Father, glorify thou me with thyself with the glory that I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy name to the men whom thou gavest me out of the world. Thine they were, and thou gavest them to me, and they have kept thy word;

7 now they know that all things whatever thou hast given me are from thee;

8 for the words that thou gavest me I have given them, and they have received them, and have known in truth that I came forth from thee, and have believed that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them; I pray not for the world, but for those that thou hast given me, for they are thine,

10 and all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I have been glorified in them.

11 And I am no longer in the world, and these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep them in my name that thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we.

12 When I was with them I kept them in thy name that thou hast given me, and I have guarded them, and no one of them is lost but the son of perdition, that the Scripture may be fulfilled.

13 But now I come to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I have given them thy word, and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou take them out of the world, but that thou keep them from the evil one.

16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctify them in the truth: thy word is truth.

18 As thou didst send me into the world, I sent them into the world;

19 and for them I sanctify myself, that they also may be sanctified in the truth.

20 But not for these only do I pray, but also for those that believe on me through their word,

21 that they all may be one, as thou. Father, art in me and I in thee, that they also may be in us, that the world may believe that thou didst send me.

22 And the glory that thou hast given me I have given them, that they may be one as we are one:

23 I in them and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one, that the world may know that thou hast sent me and hast loved them as thou hast loved me.

24 Father, as to what thou hast given me, I would that they also be with me where I am, that they may see my glory, which thou hast given me because thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

25 Righteous Father, though the world has not known thee, yet I have known thee, and these have known that thou didst send me;

26 and I have made known to them thy name, and will make it known, that the love with which thou hast loved me may be in them and I in them.

John 18

1 Having said these things, Jesus went forth with his disciples beyond the brook of Cedar, where was a garden, into which he entered, himself and his disciples.

2 But Judas, also, who delivered him up, knew the place, because Jesus had often gone thither in company with his disciples.

3 Judas therefore, having received the band, the attendants from the chief priests and from the Pharisees, comes thither with torches and lamps and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore, knowing all things that were coming upon him, went forth and said to them: Whom seek you?

5 They answered him: Jesus the Nazarene. Jesus says to them: I am he. But Judas also, who delivered him up, stood with them.

6 When therefore he said to them: I am he, they went back and fell on the ground.

7 Again therefore he asked them: Whom seek you? And they said: Jesus the Nazarene.

8 Jesus answered: I told you that I am he: if then ye seek me, let these go away.

9 That the word might be fulfilled which he spoke: Of those that thou hast given me I have lost none.

10 Simon Peter therefore, having a sword, drew it and struck the servant of the chief priest, and cut off his right ear; and the name of the servant was Malchus.

11 Jesus then said to Peter: Put the sword into the sheath. The cup that the Father has given me, shall I not drink it?

12 Therefore the band and the officer and the attendants of the Jews took Jesus and bound him,

13 and led him to Annas first; for he was father-in-law of Caiaphas who was chief priest that year.

14 and it was Caiaphas that advised the Jews that it was profitable that one man should die for the people.

15 But there followed Jesus, Simon Peter and another disciple. And that disciple was acquainted with the chief priest, and went with Jesus into the court of the chief priest,

16 but Peter stood at the gate without. Then the other disciple, the acquaintance of the chief priest, went in and spoke to the doorkeeper, and brought Peter in.

17 Then the maidservant that kept the door says to Peter: Art not thou also of the disciples of this man? He says: I am not.

18 But the servants and the attendants, having made a fire of coals, for it was cold, were standing and warming them selves; and Peter also was standing with them and warming himself.

19 Then the chief priest asked Jesus concerning his disciples and concerning his teaching.

20 Jesus answered him: I have spoken plainly to the world: I have always taught in a synagogue and in the temple, where all the Jews come together, and in secret have I spoken nothing.

21 Why dost thou ask me? Ask those that have heard what I spoke to them: behold, these know what I said.

22 But when he had spoken this, one of the attendants that stood by struck Jesus with his open hand, saying: Answerest thou the chief priest thus?

23 Jesus answered him: If I have spoken evil, testify of the evil; but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 Annas then sent him, bound, to Caiaphas the chief priest.

25 But Simon Peter was standing and warming himself. They then said to him: Art not thou also of his disciples? He denied and said: I am not.

26 One of the servants of the chief priest, being a relative of him whose ear Peter had cut off, says: Did I not see thee in the garden with him?

27 Again therefore Peter denied; and immediately a cock crew.

28 Then they lead Jesus from Caiaphas to the pretorium; and it was early morn. And they went not into the pretorium, that they might not be defiled, but that they might eat the passover.

29 Pilate therefore came forth to them and said: What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said to him: If this man had not done evil, we would not have delivered him to thee.

31 Pilate therefore said to them: Take you him and judge him according to your law. The Jews then said to him: It is not lawful for us to put any one to death:

32 that the word of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spoke signifying by what kind of death he was about to die.

33 Then Pilate entered the pretorium again, and called Jesus and said to him: Art thou the King of the Jews?

34 Jesus answered: Sayest thou this of thyself, or did others tell thee of me?

35 Pilate answered: Am I a Jew? Thy nation and the chief priests delivered thee to me: what hast thou done?

36 Jesus answered: My kingdom is not of this world. If my kingdom were of this world my servants would fight, that might not be delivered to the Jews; but now my kingdom is not hence,

37 Pilate then said to him: Art thou not then a king? Jesus answered: Thou sayest, for I am a king. To this end was I born, and to this end have I come into the world, that I might testify to the truth: every one that is of the truth hears my voice.

38 Pilate says to him: What is truth? And having said this. he went out again to the Jews, and said to them: I find no fault in him.

39 But you have a custom that I release to you one at the passover: will you therefore that I release to you the King of the Jews?

40 They then cried out again, saying: Not this man, but Barabbas. But Barabbas was a robber.

John 19

1 Pilate therefore then took Jesus and scourged him.

2 And the soldiers plaited a crown of thorns and put it on his head, and threw a purple garment around him,

3 and came to him and said: Hail, King of the Jews; and they struck him with the open hand.

4 Pilate again came forth and said to them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that you may know that I find no fault.

5 Jesus therefore came forth wearing the crown of thorns and purple garment. And he says to them: Behold the man.

6 Therefore when the chief priests and the attendants saw him, they cried out: Crucify, crucify. Pilate says to them: Take you him and crucify him; for I find no fault in him.

7 The Jews answered: We have a law, and according to the law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

8 Thereupon when Pilate heard this word, he was the more afraid,

9 and went into the pretorium again, and said to Jesus: Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

10 Pilate says to him: Speakest thou not to me? Knowest thou not that I have authority to release thee and authority to crucify thee?

11 Jesus answered: Thou couldst have had no authority against me, unless it had been given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me to thee has the greater sin.

12 After this Pilate sought to release him; but the Jews cried out, saying: If thou release this man, thou art not a friend of Caesar: every one that makes himself king speaks against Caesar.

13 Then Pilate, after hearing these words, brought Jesus forth, and sat on the judgment-seat in a place called The Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the passover: it was about the sixth hour. And he says to the Jews: Behold your king.

15 They therefore cried out: Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate says to them: Shall I crucify your king? The chief priests answered: We have no king but Caesar.

16 Then therefore he delivered him to them to be crucified. They therefore took Jesus;

17 and bearing the cross for himself, he went forth to a place called the place of a skull, which is called in Hebrew Golgotha,

18 where they crucified him, and with him two others, on this side and on that, but Jesus in the midst.

19 But Pilate wrote a title and put it on the cross; and it was written: JESUS THE NAZARENE, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 Many of the Jews therefore read this title, because the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and it was written in Hebrew, in Latin, in Greek.

21 The chief priests of the Jews then said to, Pilate: Write not: The king of the Jews, but that he said: I am the king of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered: What I have written, I have written.

23 The soldiers therefore, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, for each soldier a part, and his coat. But the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.

24 They said therefore one to another: Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. That the scripture might be fulfilled: They divided my garments among them, and on my raiment they cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did.

25 But there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 Jesus therefore seeing his mother, and the disciple whom he loved standing by, says to his mother: Woman, behold thy son.

27 Then he says to the disciple: Behold thy mother. And from that hour the disciple took her to his own home.

28 After this, Jesus, knowing that all things had been already finished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, says: I thirst.

29 There lay a vessel full of vinegar: having therefore put a sponge full of vinegar on hyssop, they put it to his mouth.

30 When therefore he had received the vinegar, he said: It is finished; and having bowed his head, he gave up the spirit.

31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies might not remain on the cross during the sabbath, for that sabbath was a great day, besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the soldiers and broke the legs of the first, and of the other that was crucified with him;

33 but coming to Jesus, when they saw him already dead, they broke not his legs;

34 but one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and immediately there came forth blood and water.

35 And he that saw it has testified, and his testimony is true, and he knows that he speaks what is true, that you also may believe.

36 For these things took place that the scripture might be fulfilled: A bone of him shall not be broken.

37 And again another scripture says: They shall look on him whom they pierced.

38 But after these things Joseph, who was of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus; and Pilate gave permission. They came therefore and took him away.

39 But Nicodemus also came, he that had come to him by night at the first, bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds.

40 They therefore took the body of Jesus, and bound it in linen cloths with the spices, as is the custom of the Jews to prepare for burial.

41 But there was, in the place where he had been crucified, a garden, and in the garden a new sepulcher, in which no one had ever yet been laid.

42 There then because of the preparation of the Jews, for the sepulcher was near, laid they Jesus.

John 20

1 But on the first of the week, Mary Magdalene comes to the sepulcher early, it being yet dark, and sees the stone taken away from the sepulcher.

2 She therefore runs and comes to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and says to them: They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulcher, and we know not where they have laid him.

3 Thereupon Peter went forth and the other disciple, and came to the sepulcher.

4 But the two ran together; and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the sepulcher;

5 and having stooped down, he saw the linen cloths lying: however he went not in.

6 Then comes Simon Peter following him; and he went into the sepulcher, and saw the linen cloths lying,

7 and the handkerchief, which was on his head, not lying with the linen cloths, but folded up in a place by itself.

8 Therefore, the other disciple also that came first to the sepulcher then went in, and saw and believed;

9 for they not yet knew the scripture, that he must rise from the dead.

10 The disciples then went away again to their homes.

11 But Mary stood without at the sepulcher weeping. Then as she wept, she stooped down and looked into the sepulcher,

12 and saw two angels in white, sitting, one at the head and one at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

13 They say to her: Woman, why weepest thou? She says to them: They have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid

him. Having said these things, she turned back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus says to her: Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou? She, supposing that he was the gardener, says to him: Sir, if thou hast borne him away, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus said to her: Mary. She turned and said to him in Hebrew: Rabboni, which is called, Teacher.

17 Jesus says to her: Touch me not; for I have not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren and say to them: I ascend to my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene comes and tells the disciples: I have seen the Lord; and that he had said these things to her.

19 When therefore evening had come on that day, the first of the week, and the doors had been closed where the disciples were for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them: Peace to you.

20 And having said this, he showed them his hands and his side. Thereupon the disciples rejoiced when they saw the Lord.

21 He then said to them again: Peace to you; as the Father has sent me, I also send you.

22 And having said this, he breathed on them and said to them: Receive the Holy Spirit.

23 Whosoever sins you forgive, they are forgiven them; whosoever sins you retain, they are retained.

24 But Thomas, who is called Didymus, one of the twelve, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said to him: We have seen the Lord. But he said to them: Unless I see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Jesus came, the doors having been shut, and stood in the midst, and said: Peace to you.

27 Then he says to Thomas: Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands, and reach thy hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithless, but believing.

28 Thomas answered and said to him: My Lord and my God.

29 Jesus says to him: Because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that, though not seeing, have yet believed.

30 Many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book;

31 but these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that, believing, you may have life in his name.

John 21

1 After these things Jesus manifested himself to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and he manifested himself thus.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas who is called Didymus, and Nathaniel who was from Cana of Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two others of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter says to them: I go a fishing. They say to him: We also are going with thee. They went out and entered the ship, and on that night they caught nothing.

4 But the morning having now come, Jesus stood on the shore: the disciples, however, knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Jesus therefore says to them: Children, have you any thing to eat? (beside bread). They answered him: No.

6 He says to them: Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and you shall find. They cast therefore, and were no longer able to draw it because of the multitude of fishes.

7 That disciple whom Jesus loved therefore said to Peter: It is the Lord. Simon Peter therefore, hearing that it was the Lord, girded on his upper garment, for he was naked,* and threw himself into the sea;

* Had on only an undergarment

8 but the other disciples came with the ship (for they were not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits off), dragging the net of fishes.

9 Therefore when they had come to the land, they saw a fire of coals lying, and fish lying on it, and bread.

10 Jesus says to them: Bring of the fish that you have just now taken.

11 Simon Peter came up and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty-three: and though there were so many, the net was not rent.

12 Jesus says to them: Come and breakfast. But no one of the disciples ventured to ask him: Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus comes and takes the bread and gives it to them, and the fish in like manner.

14 This was now the third time on which Jesus had manifested himself to the disciples, after he had risen from the dead.

15 Therefore, when they had breakfasted, Jesus says to Simon Peter: Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me more than these? He says to him: Yes, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He says to him: Feed my lambs.

16 He says to him again a second time: Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me? He says to him: Yes, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He says to him: Be a shepherd to my sheep.

17 He says to him the third time: Simon, son of Jonah, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he had said to him the third time: Lovest thou me? And he says to him: Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. He says to him: Feed my sheep.

18 Verily, verily, I say to you, when thou wast young thou didst gird thyself and walk whither thou wouldst; but when thou shalt become old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldst not.

19 But this he spoke signifying by what kind of death he should glorify God. And having said this, he says to him: Follow me.

20 Peter turned and saw the disciple that Jesus loved following, who also reclined at supper on his breast and said: Lord, who is he that delivers thee up?

21 Peter therefore, seeing this man, says to Jesus: Lord, but what shall this man do?

22 Jesus says to him: If I will that he remain till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Therefore went this saying, forth among the brethren, that that disciple should not die; and yet Jesus did not say to him: Thou shalt not die, but: If I will that he remain till I come.

24 This is the disciple that testifies of these things, and that wrote these things; and we know that his testimony is true.

The Acts of the ApostlesActs 1

1 The former discourse I made, O Theophilus, concerning all things that Jesus began both to do and to teach,

2 till the day in which he was taken up, after he had, through the Holy Spirit, given commandments to the apostles whom he had chosen:

3 to whom he also showed himself alive, after he had suffered, by many infallible proofs, appearing to them for forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.

4 And being assembled together with them he charged them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to await the promise of the Father, which, said he, you heard from me:

5 for John indeed baptized in water, but you shall be baptized in the Holy Spirit not many days hence.

6 They that had come together therefore asked him, saying: Lord, dost thou at this time restore the kingdom to Israel? He said to them: It is not for you to know times or seasons which the Father has appointed by his own authority;

8 but you shall receive power, after the Holy Spirit has come upon you, and you shall be my witnesses, both in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and Samaria, and to the end of the earth.

9 And when he had said these things, as they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they were looking steadfastly toward heaven as he departed, behold, two men stood by them in white garments,

11 who also said: Men of Galilee, why stand looking towards heaven? This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you saw him go into heaven.

12 Then they returned to Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a sabbath day's journey.

13 And when they had come in, they went up into an upper room where they were abiding, both Peter and John, and James and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon the Zealot, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brothers.

15 And in these days Peter rose up in the midst of the brethren and said (and there was a multitude of names together, about a hundred and twenty):

16 Men, brethren, it was needful that the Scripture should be fulfilled which the Holy Spirit spoke before through the mouth of David concerning Judas, who became leader to those that took Jesus;

17 for he was numbered among us, and had obtained the part of this ministry.

18 This man therefore purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and, having fallen headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out:

19 which also became known to all that dwell in Jerusalem, so that that field is called in their own language, Akeldama, that is, a field of blood.

20 For it is written in the book of Psalms: Let his habitation become deserted, and let no one dwell in it, and: His overseer's office let another take.

21 Therefore of these men who have accompanied us all the time, during which the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 beginning from the baptism of John, till the day in which he was taken up from us, must one become a witness with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph, who is called Barsabbas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And praying, they said: Thou, Lord, who knowest the hearts of all, make known which one of these two thou hast chosen,

25 that he may take the place of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas turned away to go to his own place.

26 And they gave lots for them; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

Acts 2

1 And when the day of Pentecost had fully come, they were all together at the same time.

2 And suddenly there came from heaven a sound as of a rushing, violent blast, and filled the whole house where they were sitting;

3 and there appeared to them tongues like fire distributing themselves, and it sat on each one of them;

4 and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling in Jerusalem Jews, devout men, from every nation under heaven;

6 but when this sound had come, the multitude came together and were perplexed, because they heard them speaking, each one in his own language.

7 And they were all astonished, and wondered, saying: Behold, are not all these that speak Galileans?

8 And how hear we, each one in our own language in which we were born,

9 Parthians and Medes and Elamites, and we that dwell in Mesopotamia, Judea also and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia,

10 Phrygia also and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and Roman residents, both Jews and proselytes,

11 Cretes and Arabians, how hear we them speaking in our own tongues, the mighty works of God?

12 And they were all astonished and in doubt, saying one to another: What can this be?

13 But others, mocking, said: They are full of sweet wine.

14 But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice and said to them: Men of Judea, and all you that dwell in Jerusalem, be this known to you, and hearken to my words.

15 For these are not drunk, as you suppose, for it is the third hour of the day;

16 but this is that which was spoken through the prophet Joel:

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, says God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams;

18 and indeed on my servants and on my handmaids will I pour out in those days of my Spirit, and they shall prophesy.

19 And I will show wonders in heaven above and signs In the earth beneath, blood and fire and vapor of smoke.

20 The sun shall be turned into darkness and the moon into blood, before the great day of the Lord shall come.

21 And it shall come to pass that whoever shall have called on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

22 Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus the Nazarene, a man eminently distinguished among you on the part of God by mighty deeds and wonders and signs, which God did through him in the midst of you, as yourselves know,

23 him delivered up by the fixed counsel and foreknowledge of God, you, through the hands of lawless men, did crucify and slay:

24 whom God raised up, having loosed the pains of death, inasmuch as it was not possible that he should be held in subjection by it.

25 For David says in reference to him: I foresaw the Lord always in my presence, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoice and my tongue was glad: moreover, also, my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 because thou wilt not leave my soul in hades, neither wilt thou suffer thy Holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou didst make known to me the ways of life, thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

29 Men, brethren, I may freely say to you of the patriarch David, that he both died and was buried, and his sepulcher is among us till this day.

30 Therefore, being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him that he would set of the fruit of his loins upon his throne;

31 foreseeing, he spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that neither was he left in hades, nor did his flesh see corruption.

32 This Jesus has God raised up, of whom we all are witnesses.

33 Therefore, having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, he has poured out this which you both see and hear.

34 For David did not ascend into the heavens, but himself says: The Lord said to my Lord: Sit at my right hand,

35 till I make thy enemies thy footstool.

36 Therefore, let all the house of Israel know assuredly that God has made this same Jesus whom you crucified both Lord and Christ.

37 And hearing it they were pierced to the heart, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles: Men, brethren, what must we do?

38 And Peter said to them: Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for remission of your sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

39 For the promise is to you and to your children and to all that are afar off, as many as the Lord our God shall have called.

40 And with many other words did he testify, and exhort them, saying: Save yourselves from this perverse generation.

41 They therefore gladly received his word and were baptized, and were added on that day, about three thousand souls.

42 And they continued steadfastly in the teaching of the apostles and the fellowship, the breaking of the bread and the prayers.

43 And fear came on every soul; and many wonders and signs were done through the apostles in Jerusalem; and great fear was upon all.

44 And all that believed were together, and had all things in common;

45 and sold their possessions and goods, and distributed them to all as any one had need;

46 and continuing daily with one accord in the temple, breaking bread also from house to house, they partook of food in gladness and singleness of heart,

47 praising God and having favor with all the people. And the Lord daily added together the saved.

Acts 3

1 But Peter and John were going up into the temple, at the hour of prayer, which is the ninth.

2 And a man, lame from his mother's womb, was borne along; whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple that is called Beautiful, to ask charity from them that went into the temple:

3 who, seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked to receive charity.

4 But Peter, looking intently upon him with John, said: Look on us.

5 And he gave heed to them, expecting to receive something from them.

6 But Peter said: Silver and gold have I not; but what I have, this I give thee: in the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, walk.

7 And, taking him by the right hand, he raised him up, and immediately his feet and ankles became strong;

8 and leaping up, he stood and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking and leaping and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking and praising God;

10 and they recognized him, that it was he that sat for charity at the Beautiful gate of the temple; and they were filled with amazement and astonishment at that which had happened to him.

11 But while he was holding Peter and John, all the people ran together to them in the porch called Solomon's, greatly amazed.

12 And seeing it, Peter answered to the people: Men of Israel, why wonder at this man, or on us why earnestly look as if by our own power of godliness we had made him to walk;

13 The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus, whom you delivered up, and denied in the presence of Pilate, though he had determined to release him;

14 the holy and just one you however denied, and demanded that a murderer should be given to you;

15 but the author of life you slew, whom God raised from the dead, of whom we are witnesses.

16 And his name, by faith in his name, has made this man strong, whom you see and know: even the faith that is through him has given him this entire soundness in the presence of you all.

17 And now, brethren, I know that through ignorance you did it, as did also your rulers:

18 but the things that God foretold through the mouth of all the prophets, that his Anointed should suffer, he has thus fulfilled.

19 Repent therefore and turn, that your sins may be blotted out that seasons of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord,

20 and he may send him that was destined for you, Christ Jesus,

21 whom heaven must receive, till the times of the restoration of all things that God has spoken through the mouth of his holy prophets of ancient times.

22 Moses indeed said: A prophet shall the Lord our God raise up for you from among your brethren, like me: him shall you hear in all things whatever he shall say to you.

23 And it shall come to pass that every soul that will not hear that prophet shall be utterly destroyed from among the people.

24 And all the prophets also, from Samuel and those after, as many as have spoken, have also foretold these days.

25 You are the sons of the prophets and of the covenant which God covenanted with our fathers, saying to Abraham: And in thy offspring shall all the families of the earth be blessed.

26 To you first, God having raised up his Servant, sent him to bless you, in turning every one away from your iniquities.

Acts 4

1 But as they were speaking to the people, there came upon them the priests and the captain of the temple and the Sadducees,

2 being vexed because they taught the people, and announced in Jesus the resurrection from the dead;

3 and they laid their hands on them, and put them in prison till the morrow; for it was already evening.

4 But many of them that heard the word believed, and the number of the men amounted to five thousand.

5 And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers and the elders and scribes, came together in Jerusalem,

6 Annas also the chief priest, and Caiaphas and John and Alexander, and as many as were of the family of the chief priest;

7 and, placing them in the midst, they inquired: In what power or in what name did you this?

8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them: Rulers of the people and elders,

9 if we are this day examined with respect to the good deed done to the infirm man, by what means he has been saved,

10 be it known to you all and to all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead, in him does this man stand before you in health.

11 This is the stone that was set at naught by you builders, which has become the head of the corner.

12 And salvation is in none other; neither indeed is there another name under heaven, given among men, by which we must be saved.

13 And seeing the boldness of Peter and of John, and perceiving that they were men without learning, and plain, they were astonished; they also recognized them that they had been with Jesus;

14 and seeing the man that had been cured standing with them, they had nothing to say in reply.

15 But having commanded them to go out of the Sanhedrim, they conferred one with another,

16 saying: What must we do to these men? For indeed that a well-known sign has been done by them is manifest to all that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it;

17 but that it may spread no further among the people, let us severely threaten them that they speak no more in this name to any one of men.

18 And having called them, they commanded them to speak not at all, neither to teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John, answering, said to them: Whether it is right in the sight of God to hear you rather than God, judge you;

20 for we can but speak the things that we have seen and heard.

21 And having further threatened them, they let them go, not finding how they might punish them, because of the people; for all glorified God on account of what had been done;

22 for the man on whom this sign of healing had been done was more than forty years old.

23 But having been let go, they came to their own, and told all that the chief priests and elders had said to them.

24 And having heard, they, with one accord, lifted up a voice to God and said: Lord, thou that madest the heaven and the earth and the sea, and all things that in them are.

25 that through the Holy Spirit by the mouth of our father David thy servant didst say: Why did Gentiles rage and peoples desire vain things?

26 The kings of the land stood up, and the rulers were collected together against the Lord and against his Anointed.

27 For in truth there were collected in this city against thy holy Servant Jesus, whom thou didst anoint, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with Gentiles and peoples of Israel,

28 to do all that thy hand and thy counsel before determined to be done.

29 And now. Lord, look upon their threatenings, and give to thy servants to speak thy word with all boldness,

30 in stretching forth thy hand to heal, and that signs and wonders may be done through the name of thy holy Servant Jesus.

31 And after they had prayed, the place where they were collected together was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and spoke the word of God with boldness.

32 And the heart and the soul of the multitude of believers were one; and not even one said that any of the things he had was his own; but they had all things in common.

33 And with great power did the apostles give testimony of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was upon them all.

34 For neither was there any needy person among them; for as many as were possessors of lands or of houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things sold,

35 and laid them at the feet of the apostles; and distribution was made to each as any one had need.

36 But Joseph, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, which is, when translated, Son of consolation, a Levite, by birth a Cyprian,

37 having a field, sold it, and brought the money and laid it at the feet of the apostles.

Acts 5

1 But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 and kept back part of the price, his wife also having knowledge of it, and having brought a certain part, laid it at the feet of the apostles.

3 But Peter said: Ananias, why has Satan filled thy heart, that thou shouldst attempt to deceive the Holy Spirit, and that thou shouldst keep back part of the price of the field?

4 While it remained, did it not remain thine, and when sold, was it not in thy own right? Why is it that thou didst conceive this thing in thy heart? Thou hast not lied to men, but to God.

5 And Ananias, hearing these words, fell down and expired; and great fear came on all that heard.

6 But the younger men, having risen, wound him up, and, having carried him out, buried him.

7 But there was an interval of about three hours, and his wife, not knowing what had been done, came in.

8 And Peter answered to her: Tell me, did you sell the field for so much? And she said: Yes, for so much.

9 And Peter said to her: Why is it that you have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Behold, the feet of them that have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10 And she fell down immediately at his feet and expired. And the young men coming in found her dead, and having carried her out buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon the whole church, and upon all that heard these things.

12 And through the hands of the apostles many signs and wonders were done among the people: and they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch;

13 but of the rest, no one ventured to join himself to them, but the people magnified them;

14 and believers in the Lord were the more added, multitudes of both men and women:

15 so that they brought out the sick even into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that even the shadow of Peter as he came might overshadow some one of them.

16 And there came together also the multitude of the cities round about Jerusalem, bringing the sick and those oppressed by unclean spirits, all of whom were cured.

17 But the chief priest arose and all those with him, which is the sect of the Sadducees, and were filled with zeal,

18 and laid their hands on the apostles and put them in the public prison.

19 But an angel of the Lord during the night opened the doors of the prison and brought them out and said:

20 Go, and stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And hearing, they entered about daybreak into the temple and taught. And the chief priest came and those with him, and called together the Sanhedrim and all the eldership of the sons of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

22 But the attendants came and found them not in the prison; and, having returned, reported,

23 saying: The prison we found closed in all safety, and the guards standing before the doors, but on opening we found no one within.

24 And when both the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these words, they were in doubt concerning them, what this might be.

25 And some one came and told them: Behold, the men whom you put in the prison are in the temple, standing and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the attendants and brought them, not with violence, for they feared the people, lest they should be stoned.

27 And they brought them and made them stand in the Sanhedrim. And the chief priest asked them,

28 saying: We strictly charged you not to teach in this name, and behold, you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching, and you wish to bring upon us the blood of this man.

29 But answering, Peter and the apostles said: We must obey God rather than men.

30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom you slew by hanging on a tree:

31 him has God exalted to his right hand as a prince and savior, to give repentance to Israel and remission of sins.

32 And we are witnesses of these things, and the Holy Spirit, whom he has given to those that obey him.

33 And hearing, they were cut to the heart, and counseled to kill them.

34 but there arose a certain one in the Sanhedrim, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a teacher of the law, honored by all the people, and commanded to put the men out a little while;

35 and said to them: Men of Israel, take heed to yourselves with respect to these men, what you are about to do.

36 For before these days arose Theudas, saying that himself was somebody, to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain, and all as many as were persuaded by him were scattered and came to naught.

37 After this man arose Judas the Galilean, in the days of the enrollment, and drew off people after him; and he was destroyed, and all as many as were persuaded by him were dispersed.

38 And now, I say to you, stand off from these men and let them alone; for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to naught;

39 but if it is of God, you cannot overthrow them, lest perhaps you also be found fighting against God.

40 And they were persuaded by him; and having called the apostles in, and beaten them, they charged them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

41 They then went from the presence of the Sanhedrim rejoicing, because they were thought worthy to be dishonored for the name.

42 Also every day in the temple and from house to house, they ceased not to teach and preach Christ Jesus.

Acts 6

1 And in these days, as the disciples were increasing in number, there arose a murmuring of the Hellenists against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations.

2 But the twelve, calling to them the multitude of the disciples, said: It is not pleasing to us that we should leave the word of God and serve tables.

3 But look out, brethren, from among you seven men of good report, full of spirit and wisdom, whom we will appoint over this business;

4 and we will attend continually to prayer and the ministry of the word.

5 And the saying was pleasing in the sight of all the multitude; and they chose out Stephen, a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicholas a proselyte of Antioch,

6 whom they placed before the apostles; and they prayed and laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples was enlarged in Jerusalem greatly, and a great number of the priests became obedient to the faith.

8 But Stephen, full of grace and power, did great wonders and signs among the people.

9 And there arose some of those that were of the synagogue called the synagogue of the Freedmen, and of the Cyrenians and Alexandrians, and of those from Cilicia and Asia, disputing with Stephen,

10 and were not able to withstand the wisdom and the spirit with which he spoke.

11 Then they suborned men to say: We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and God;

12 and they excited the people and the elders and the scribes; and, coming upon him, they seized him, and led him to the Sanhedrim;

13 and set up false witnesses who said: This man ceases not to speak words against the holy place and the law;

14 for we have heard him say that this Jesus the Nazarene shall destroy this place, and change the customs that Moses delivered to us.

15 And all that sat in the Sanhedrim, looking earnestly on him, saw his face as the face of an angel.

Acts 7

1 And the chief priest said: Are these things so?

2 And he said: Men, brethren and fathers, hear. The God of glory appeared to our father Abraham while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Haran,

3 and said to him: Come out from thy land and from thy kindred, and come into the land that I will show thee.

4 Then he came out of the land of the Chaldeans and dwelt in Haran. And thence after his father had died he removed him into this land, in which you now dwell;

5 and he gave him no inheritance in it, not even a foot-breadth, though he had promised to give it to him for a possession, and to his posterity after him, while he had no child.

6 But God spoke thus, that his posterity should sojourn in a strange land, and they would bring them into bondage, and afflict them four hundred years;

7 and the nation to which they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God, and after that 'they shall come forth and serve me in this place.'

8 And he gave him the covenant of circumcision; and so he begot Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day; and Isaac begot Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs.

9 And the patriarchs envied Joseph and sold him into Egypt; yet God was with him,

10 and delivered him from all his afflictions, and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh, king of Egypt; and he made him ruler over Egypt and over all his house.

11 But there came a famine over the whole of Egypt and of Canaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 And Jacob, hearing that there was grain in Egypt, sent forth our fathers the first time.

13 And the second time, Joseph was made known to his brothers, and the race of Joseph became known to Pharaoh.

14 And Joseph sent and called to him his father Jacob, and all his kindred, seventy-five souls.

15 And Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, himself and our fathers,

16 and were carried over to Sychem and laid in the sepulcher which Abraham bought for its value in silver, from the sons of Hamor, the father of Sychem.

17 But as the time of the promise which God had made to Abraham drew near, the people increased and multiplied in Egypt,

18 till there arose another king, who knew not Joseph.

19 This man dealt insidiously with our race, and afflicted our fathers, so that they exposed their infants, that they might not live.

20 At which time Moses was born, and he was beautiful before God. And he was nursed three months in his father's house;

21 but when he was exposed, the daughter of Pharaoh took him up and nursed him as a son for herself.

22 And Moses was instructed in all the wisdom of the Egyptians; and he was mighty in his words and deeds.

23 But when the time of forty years was completed for him, it came into his heart to look after his brethren, the sons of Israel.

24 And, seeing one unjustly treated, he defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed by smiting the Egyptian.

25 And he thought that his brethren would understand that God, through his hand, was giving salvation to them; but they understood not.

26 And on the following day he showed himself to them as they fought, and urged them to peace, saying: Men, you are brethren: why treat one another unjustly?

27 But he that treated his neighbor unjustly thrust him away, saying: Who appointed thee ruler and judge over us?

28 Wilt thou kill me as thou didst kill the Egyptian yesterday?

29 And at that saying Moses fled and became a sojourner in the land of Midian, where he begot two sons.

30 And when forty years were completed, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sinai an angel in flaming fire of a bush.

31 And Moses, seeing, wondered at the sight; but as he drew near to behold it, there came the voice of the Lord:

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob. And Moses trembled and ventured not to behold.

33 And the Lord said to him: Loose the sandal of thy feet; for the place on which thou standest is holy ground.

34 I have surely seen the affliction of my people that are in Egypt, and their groaning have I heard, and I have come down to deliver them; and now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses, whom they denied, saying: Who appointed thee ruler and judge? this man God sent both as ruler and deliverer, with the hand of the angel that appeared to him in the bush.

36 This man led them out after having performed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years.

37 This is the Moses who said to the sons of Israel: A prophet shall God raise up for you from among your brethren, like me.

38 This is he that was in the assembly in the wilderness, with the angel that spoke to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers; who received the living oracles to give to us,

39 to whom our fathers would not become obedient, but thrust him away and turned in their heart to Egypt,

40 saying to Aaron: Make us gods that shall go before us; for this Moses, who brought us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what has become of him.

41 And they made a calf in those days and offered sacrifice to the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their hands.

42 But God turned and delivered them up to serve the host of heaven, as it is written in the book of the prophets: Victims and sacrifices did you offer to me forty years in the wilderness, O house of Israel,

43 and did you take up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of the god Remphan, the images that you made to worship? and I will remove you beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers in the wilderness had the tabernacle of testimony, as he had appointed who spoke to Moses that he should make it according to the pattern which he had seen;

45 which also our fathers received and brought in with Joshua, when they took possession of the nations, whom God thrust out from the face of our fathers till the days of David:

46 who found favor in the sight of God, and asked that he might find a dwelling for the house of Jacob.

47 But Solomon built him a house.

48 However, the Most High dwells not in places made with hands, as says the prophet:

49 Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: what kind of a house will you build for me, says the Lord, or what the place of my rest?

50 Did not my hand make all these things?

51 Stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, you always resist the Holy Spirit, as your fathers, also you.

52 Which of the prophets did not your fathers persecute? and they killed those who foretold concerning the coming of the Just One, of whom you have now become the betrayers and murderers:

53 who received the law as the arrangements of angels, and have not kept it.

54 And hearing these things, they were cut to their hearts, and gnashed upon him with their teeth.

55 But being full of the Holy Spirit, he looked up into heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God;

56 and he said: Behold, I see the heavens opened and the Son of man standing at the right hand of God.

57 And having cried with a loud voice, they stopped their ears and rushed with one accord upon him,

58 and having cast him out of the city, they stoned him. And the witnesses laid off their clothes at the feet of a young man called Saul;

59 and they stoned Stephen, calling on the Lord and saying: Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down and cried with a loud voice: Lord, let not this sin stand against them. And having said this, he fell asleep. And Saul was consenting to his death.

Acts 8

1 And there arose at that day a great persecution against the church that was in Jerusalem: they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 But godly men helped to bury Stephen, and made great lamentation over him.

3 But Saul made havoc of the church, entering into every house, and, dragging men and women, he committed them to prison.

4 They therefore that had been scattered went everywhere, preaching the word;

5 but Philip went down to the city of Samaria and preached Christ to them.

6 And the multitudes with one accord gave heed to the things that were spoken by Philip, when they heard and saw the signs that he did.

7 For there were many of those that had unclean spirits; these, crying with a loud voice, came out of them; and many paralytics and lame persons were cured;

8 and there arose great joy in that city.

9 But a certain man named Simon before this used magic in the city, and astonished the nation of Samaria, saying that himself was some great one;

10 to whom they gave heed, from small to great, saying: This man is the power of God, which is called great.

11 And they gave heed to him because he had for a long time astonished them with his magic arts.

12 But when they believed Philip, preaching concerning the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 And Simon himself also believed, and having been baptized, he continued with Philip, and seeing the mighty deeds and signs that were done, he was astonished.

14 But the apostles that were in Jerusalem, hearing that Samaria had received the word of God, sent to them Peter and John,

15 who went down and prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Spirit.

16 For he had not yet fallen on any one of them, but they had only been baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus.

17 Then they laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

18 But Simon, seeing that through the laying on of the apostles' hands the Spirit was given, offered them money,

19 saying: Give me also this authority, that on whomever I shall have laid hands, he may receive the Holy Spirit.

20 But Peter said to him: Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought to purchase for thyself with money the gift of God.

21 Thou hast no part, neither lot, in this matter; for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray the Lord if perhaps the thought of thy heart may be forgiven thee;

23 for I perceive that thou art bitter gall and a bundle of unrighteousness.

24 But Simon answered and said: Pray you to the Lord for me, that none of the things that you have spoken may come upon me.

25 They therefore having testified and spoken the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem: they also preached the gospel in many cities of the Samaritans.

26 But an angel of the Lord spoke to Philip, saying: Arise, and go toward the south, to the road that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza: this is desert.

27 And he arose and went; and behold, a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch, a high officer of Candace, queen of the Ethiopians, who was over all her treasure, who had come to Jerusalem to worship,

28 was also returning, and, sitting in his chariot, was reading the prophet Isaiah.

29 And the Spirit said to Philip: Go forward and join thyself to this chariot.

30 And running forward, Philip heard him reading Isaiah the prophet, and said: Understandest thou, then, what thou readest?

31 But he said: How should I unless some one guide me? And he requested Philip to come up and sit with him.

32 And the passage of Scripture which he was reading was this: As a sheep for slaughter was he led; and as a lamb before his shearer is dumb, so opens he not his mouth.

33 In his humiliation his judgment* was taken away: his generation who shall describe? for his life is taken from the earth.

* The justice due him.

34 And the eunuch answered and said to Philip: I pray thee, of whom speaks the prophet this? Of himself or of some other man?

35 But Philip opened his mouth and began at the same Scripture, and preached to him Jesus.

36 And as they went along the road, they came to some water; and the eunuch says: Behold, water: what hinders me from being baptized?

37 [no verse]

38 And he commanded the chariot to stop, and both went down into the water, both Philip and the eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 But when they had come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip; and the eunuch saw him no more, for he went on his way rejoicing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus; and passing through he preached the gospel in all the cities till he came to Caesarea.

1 But Saul, yet breathing threatening and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the chief priest

2 and asked of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that, if he should find any of the way, both men and women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem.

3 But as he was going, it came to pass that he drew near to Damascus, and suddenly there flashed around him a light from heaven;

4 and having fallen to the ground, he heard a voice saying to him: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said: Who art thou, Lord? And he said: I am Jesus whom thou persecutest!

6 But rise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 But the men that journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing indeed the voice, but seeing no one.

8 And Saul arose from the ground; but when his eyes were opened, he saw nothing; and leading him by the hand, they brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three days without sight, and he ate not, neither did he drink.

10 But there was in Damascus a disciple named Ananias; and the Lord said to him in a vision: Ananias. And he said: Behold me, Lord.

11 And the Lord said to him: Arise, and go into the street that is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judah for one named Saul, of Tarsus; for behold, he prays,

12 and has seen a man named Ananias coming in and laying his hand on him, that he may receive sight.

13 But Ananias answered: Lord, I have heard from many of this man, what evils he has done to thy saints in Jerusalem;

14 and how he has authority from the chief priests to bind all that call on thy name.

15 But the Lord said to him: Go; for a chosen vessel is this man to me, to bear my name before Gentiles and kings also, and the sons of Israel;

16 for I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name.

17 And Ananias went, and entered into the house, and having laid his hands on him, said: Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to thee on the way by which thou earnest, has sent me, that thou mayest receive sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as if scales; and he received sight, and arose and was baptized;

19 and having taken food, he was strengthened. And he was with the disciples in Damascus some days;

20 and immediately in the synagogues he preached Jesus, that this is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard were astonished, and said: Is not this he that destroyed in Jerusalem those that call on this name, and has he not come hither for this purpose, that he might lead them bound to the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews that dwelt in Damascus, proving that this is the Christ.

23 But when many days were fulfilled, the Jews counselled together to kill him;

24 but their plot was made known to Saul. And they also watched the gates day and night, that they might kill him;

25 and his disciples took him. and by night let him down through the wall, lowering him in a basket.

26 And when he had come to Jerusalem, he attempted to join himself to the disciples; and they all feared him, not believing that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and told them how on the way he had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken to him, and how in Damascus he had spoken boldly in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them going in and out in Jerusalem; speaking boldly in the name of the Lord,

29 he spoke to, and also disputed with, the Hellenists; but they undertook to kill him.

30 And the brethren, knowing it, brought him down to Caesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then indeed the church throughout the whole of Judea and Galilee and Samaria had peace, being edified and walking in the fear of the Lord; and through the aid of the Holy Spirit was multiplied.

32 But it came to pass that Peter, passing through all places, came down also to the saints that dwell in Lydda.

33 And he found there a man named Aeneas, that had lain on a bed for eight years, who was a paralytic.

34 And Peter said to him: Aeneas, Jesus Christ restores thee to health: arise, and make thy bed for thyself. And he immediately arose;

35 and all that dwelt in Lydda and Saron saw him, and they turned to the Lord.

36 And there was in Joppa a female disciple named Tabitha, which, translated, is called Dorcas; she was full of good works and charities that she did.

37 But it came to pass in those days that, having been taken sick, she died; and they washed her and laid her in an upper room.

38 And as Lydda was near to Joppa, the disciples, hearing that Peter was there, sent two men to him, beseeching: Delay not to come to us,
39 And Peter arose and went with them. When he had come, they brought him into the upper room; and all the widows stood by him weeping and showing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But having put them all out, Peter kneeled down and prayed; and turning to the body, he said: Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and, seeing Peter, she sat up.

41 But giving her a hand, he raised her up; and having called the saints and widows, he presented her alive.

42 And it became known throughout the whole of Joppa, and many believed on the Lord.

43 And it came to pass that he remained many days in Joppa with one Simon, a tanner.

Acts 10

1 But a man in Caesarea named Cornelius, a centurion of the band called Italian,

2 devout and fearing God with all his house who gave many charities to the people and prayed to God always,

3 saw in a vision, evidently about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him and saying to him: Cornelius.

4 But looking earnestly on him and becoming afraid, he said: What is it, Lord? And he said to him: Thy prayers and thy charities have come up for a memorial before God.

5 And now, send men to Joppa and call for one Simon, who is surnamed Peter:

6 he lodges with one Simon, a tanner, who has a house by the sea.

7 And when the angel that spoke to him had gone away, he called two of the household servants, and a devout soldier of those that waited on him,

8 and having made known all things to them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 But on the morrow, as they went on their way and drew near to the city. Peter went up on the housetop to pray, about the sixth hour.

10 And he became very hungry and desired to eat. But while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 and saw heaven opened, and some vessel, like a great sheet, descending, let down by the four corners upon the earth:

12 in which were all manner of fourfooted beasts, and creeping things of the earth, and birds of the heaven.

13 And there came a voice to him: Rise, Peter, kill and eat.

14 But Peter said: By no means, Lord, for I have never eaten anything common and unclean.

15 And a voice came again a second time to him: The things that God has cleansed call thou not common.

16 And this was done three times, and immediately the vessel was taken up into heaven.

17 But while Peter was doubting in himself, what the vision that he had seen might be, behold, the men that had been sent by Cornelius, having inquired for the house of Simon, stood at the gate,

18 and, calling, asked if Simon who is surnamed Peter lodged there.

19 But while Peter carefully considered about the vision, the Spirit said to him: Behold, men seek thee;

20 but arise and go down, and go with them, doubting nothing, for I have sent them.

21 And Peter went down to the men and said: Behold, I am he whom you seek: what is the cause for which you are present?

22 And they said: Cornelius, a centurion, a man just and fearing God, well reported of also by all the nation of the Jews, was warned by a holy angel to send for thee to his house, and to hear words from thee.

23 Having called them in therefore, he lodged them. But on the morrow he arose and went forth with them; and some of the brethren that were of Joppa accompanied him.

24 And on the next day he entered into Caesarea; and Cornelius was looking for him, having called together his relatives and near friends.

25 But as Peter went in, Cornelius met him, fell at his feet and worshipped.

26 But Peter raised him up, saying: Stand up: I myself also am a man.

27 And conversing with him, he went in, and found many that had come together,

28 and said to them: You know that it is not lawful for a man a Jew to join himself to or go in to one of another race; yet God has showed me that I must call no man common or unclean:

29 wherefore, having been sent for, I came also without objecting. I ask therefore, for what purpose have you sent for me?

30 And Cornelius said: Four days ago up to this hour, was I at the ninth praying in my house; and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 and said: Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thy charities are remembered before God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call for Simon, who is surnamed Peter; he lodges in the house of Simon a tanner, by the sea.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast done well in coming. Now therefore we all are present before God, to hear all things that have been commanded thee by the Lord.

34 And Peter opened his mouth and said: In truth, I comprehend that God is not a respecter of persons,

35 but in every nation he that fears him and works righteousness is acceptable to him,

36 the word that he sent to the sons of Israel, preaching peace through Jesus Christ: he is Lord of all.

37 You know the word that was published throughout the whole of Judea, beginning from Galilee after the baptism which John preached,

38 JESUS OF NAZARETH, how God anointed him with the Holy Spirit and power, who went about doing good and giving health to all that were oppressed by the devil, for God was with him;

39 and we are witnesses of all things that he did in the country of the Jews and in Jerusalem: whom they slew by hanging upon a tree.

40 This man God raised on the third day and made him manifest,

41 not to all the people, but to witnesses that were before appointed by God, to us who

34 ate and drank with him after he had risen from the dead;

42 and he charged us to preach to the people, and to testify that it is he that has been appointed by God as judge of living and dead.

43 To him give all the prophets witness that, through his name, every one that believes on him shall receive remission of sins.

44 While Peter was yet speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all that heard the word.

45 And the believers of the circumcision, as many as came with Peter, were astonished, because on the Gentile; also the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out;

46 for they heard them speaking with tongues and magnifying God. Then Peter answered:

47 Can any one forbid water, that those should not be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit even as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they besought him to remain some days,

Acts 11

but the apostles and the brethren that were throughout Judea heard that the Gentiles also had received the word of God.

2 And when Peter went up to Jerusalem, they of the circumcision contended with him,

3 saying: Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 And Peter began and laid the matter before them in order, saying:

5 I was in a city, Joppa, praying, and I saw in a trance a vision, some vessel, like a great sheet, descending, let down from heaven by four corners, and it came even to me.

6 Into which having looked attentively, I observed and saw fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and birds of the heavens.

7 And I heard also a voice saying to me: Rise, Peter, kill and eat.

8 But I said: By no means, Lord, for a common or unclean thing has never entered my mouth.

9 But a voice answered a second time from heaven: The things that God has cleansed, call thou not common.

10 And this was done three times, and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And behold, immediately three men, sent from Caesarea to me, stood at the house in which I was.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. And these six brethren also went with me, and we entered the man's house.

13 And he told us how he had seen the angel standing in his house and saying: Send to Joppa and call for Simon, who is surnamed Peter,

14 who shall speak words to thee, by which thou shalt be saved, and all thy house.

15 But when I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell on them as on us also in the beginning.

16 And I remembered the word of the Lord, how he said: John indeed baptized in water, but you shall be baptized in the Holy Spirit.

17 If then God gave to them the like gift as to us also, when we believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I that I could withstand God?

18 And when they heard these things they were silent, and glorified God, saying: Then has God given to the Gentiles also repentance to life.

19 They therefore that were scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose against Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice and Cyprus and Antioch, speaking the word to no one but Jews only.

20 But some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who came to Antioch and spoke to the Greeks also, preaching the gospel of the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, and a great multitude that believed turned to the Lord.

22 And the report concerning them came to the ears of the church that was in Jerusalem; and they sent forth Barnabas as far as Antioch:

23 who, having come and seen the grace of God, rejoiced, and exhorted all that with determination of the heart they should adhere to the Lord;

24 for he was a man good and full of the Holy Spirit and faith. And a great multitude was added to the Lord.

25 But he went out to Tarsus to seek for Saul; and he found and brought him to Antioch.

26 And it happened to them that they met together in the church for a whole year and taught a great multitude; also, that the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 But in those days there came down prophets from Jerusalem to Antioch;

28 and one of them, named Agabus, rose up, and signified through the Spirit that there was about to be a great famine over the whole habitable land: which came to pass in the days of Claudius.

29 And as any one of the disciples was prosperous, they determined each one of them to send to the relief of the brethren that dwelt in Judea:

30 which they also did, sending to the elders through the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

Acts 12

1 But at that time Herod the king laid hands on some of those who were of the church, to afflict them,

2 And he slew James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And, seeing that it was pleasing to the Jews, he apprehended Peter also (but these were the days of unleavened bread);

4 whom having seized he put in prison, delivering him to four tetrads of soldiers to guard him, intending after passover to bring him out to the people.

5 Peter was, indeed, therefore, kept in prison; but earnest prayer was made to God by the church for him.

6 But when Herod was about to bring him forth, on that night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains: guards also before the door watched the prison.

7 And behold, an angel of the Lord stood by, and light shone in the house; and striking Peter on the side, he raised him up, saying: Rise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 The angel also said to him: Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And he did so. And he said to him: Throw thy mantle about thee and follow me.

9 And going out he followed, and knew not that what had been done by the angel was true, but thought that he saw a vision.

10 But after passing through the first and second guard, they came to the iron gate that leads into the city, which opened to them of its own accord; and having gone out they went along one street; and immediately the angel departed from him.

11 And Peter, having come to himself, said: Now I know in truth that the Lord has sent his angel, and delivered me from the hand of Herod and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And being aware of this, he went to the house of Mary the mother of John, who is surnamed Mark, where many were assembled and praying.

13 But when he knocked at the door of the entrance there came a maidservant named Rhoda to listen;

14 and recognizing Peter's voice, she opened not the entrance for joy, but running in, told that Peter stood before the entrance.

15 But they said to her: Thou art mad. She however, strongly affirmed that it was so. But they said: It is his angel.

16 Peter, however, continued knocking; and, having opened, they saw him and were astonished.

17 But beckoning to them with his hand that they should be silent, he told how the Lord had brought him out of the prison: he said also: Tell these things to James and the brethren. And he went out and departed to another place.

18 But when it was day there was no little consternation among the soldiers, what had become of Peter.

19 But Herod, having sought for him, and not finding him, examined the guards and commanded them to be put to death; and having gone down from Judea to Caesarea, he continued there.

20 And he was of hostile mind toward the Tyrians and Sidonians; but they came to him with one consent, and having gained the good will of Blastus, who had charge of the king's bedchamber, they sought for peace, because their country was sustained by that of the king.

21 And on an appointed day, Herod, having clothed himself in royal apparel, seated himself on the tribunal and made an oration to them.

22 And the people shouted: The voice of God, and not of a man,

23 But an angel of the Lord immediately smote him, because he gave not the glory to God; and, having been eaten by worms, he expired.

24 And the word of God increased and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, after having fulfilled the ministry, taking with them also John who was surnamed Mark.

1 And there were in the church that was in Antioch prophets and teachers, both Barnabas and Simon who is called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen also, the foster brother of Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

2 And as they were ministering to the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said: Set apart to me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them.

3 Then, having fasted and prayed and laid hands on them, they sent them away.

4 They therefore having been sent forth by the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia, and thence they sailed to Cyprus;

5 and being in Salamis they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews; and they had also John as attendant.

6 But having passed through the whole island as far as Paphos, they found a man, a magician, a Jewish false prophet, whose name was BarJesus,

7 who was with the proconsul Sergius Paulus, an intelligent man. This man called for Barnabas and Saul, and requested to hear the word of God.

8 But Elymas the magician, for so is his name translated, withstood them, seeking to turn away the proconsul from the faith.

9 But Saul, who is also Paul, being filled with the Holy Spirit, looked earnestly upon him

10 and said: O full of all deceit and all mischief, son of the devil, enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the straight ways of the Lord?

11 And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell upon him a mist and darkness, and going about, he sought persons to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the proconsul, seeing what had been done, believed, being astonished at the teaching of the Lord.

13 And Paul and his companions, having loosed from Paphos, came to Perga of Pamphylia; but John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 But they continued their journey from Perga and came to Antioch of Pisidia; and having entered the synagogue on the sabbath day, they sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent to them saying: Men, brethren, if there is in you any word of exhortation for the people, speak.

16 And Paul arose, and, beckoning with his hand, said: Men of Israel and you that fear God, hear.

17 The God of this people Israel chose our fathers, and the people he exalted during the sojourn in the land of Egypt, and with an uplifted arm brought he them out of it;

18 and for a time of about forty years he nourished them in the wilderness;

19 and after he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he divided to them their land for an inheritance,

20 for about four hundred and fifty years. And after this he gave judges till Samuel the prophet,

21 And after that they asked for a king; and God gave them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, forty years;

22 and he removed him and raised up for them David as a king; to whom he also gave testimony: I have found David the son of Jesse, a man according to my heart, who shall do all my will.

23 From this man's posterity, God, according to promise, has brought to Israel a Saviour, Jesus,

24 John having preached, before his entrance, the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 But as John was fulfilling his course, he said: Who do you suppose that I am? I am not he: but behold, there comes after me one, the sandal of whose feet I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men, brethren, sons of the race of Abraham, and those among you that fear God, to us is the word of this salvation sent.

27 For they that dwell in Jerusalem and their rulers, being ignorant of this one, and of the voices of the prophets that are read every sabbath, have fulfilled them in condemning him;

28 and though they found no cause of death, they asked of Pilate that he might be put to death.

29 And when they had fulfilled all things that are written concerning him, they took him down from the tree and laid him in a sepulcher.

30 But God raised him from the dead;

31 and he appeared for many days to those that went up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem: who now are his witnesses to the people.

32 And we announce to you glad tidings of the promise made to the fathers, that God has fulfilled this to our children by raising up Jesus,

33 as it is also written in the second Psalm: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

34 But that he raised him from the dead no more to return to corruption, he has thus spoken: I will give you the faithful, holy things of David.

35 Wherefore he says also in another Psalm: Thou wilt not suffer thy Holy One to see corruption.

36 For David indeed, having served his own generation by the counsel of God, fell asleep and was laid with his fathers and saw corruption;

37 but he whom God raised up saw no corruption.

38 Be it known to you, therefore, men, brethren, that through this man is preached to you remission of sins:

39 in this one, every one that believes is justified from all things, from which you could not be justified in the law of Moses.

40 Take heed, therefore, lest there come upon you that which is said in the prophets:

41 Behold, you despisers, and wonder, and perish, for I work a work in your days, a work which you would not believe, though any one plainly declare it to you.

42 But when they had gone out they besought that these words might be spoken to them on the next sabbath.

43 And when the synagogue was dismissed, many of the Jews and devout proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And on the next sabbath almost all the city came together to hear the word of the Lord.

45 But the Jews, seeing the multitudes, were filled with envy, and spoke against the things spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

46 And Paul and Barnabas, speaking boldly, said: To you was it needful that the word of God should first be spoken; but since you thrust it from you and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, behold, we turn to the Gentiles.

47 For so has the Lord commanded us: I have set thee as a light for the Gentiles, that thou shouldst be for salvation to the end of the earth.

48 And hearing it, the Gentiles rejoiced, and glorified the word of the Lord, and as many as had been ordered for eternal life believed;

49 and the word of the Lord was carried throughout the whole country.

50 But the Jews excited the devout women that were honorable, and the chief men of the city, and raised a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out from their borders.

51 But having shaken off the dust from their feet against them, they came to Iconium;

52 and the disciples were filled with joy and the Holy Spirit.

1 And it came to pass in Iconium that they went together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spoke that a great multitude of Jews and also of Greeks believed.

2 But the Jews that believed not excited and embittered the souls of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 A long time therefore spent they speaking, boldly in the Lord, who gave testimony to the word of his grace by giving signs and wonders to be done through their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided, and some were with the Jews and some with the apostles.

5 But when there was a violent intent of the Gentiles and also of the Jews with their rulers, to outrage and to stone them,

6 being aware of it, they fled to the cities of Lycaonia, Lystra and Derbe, and the neighboring regions;

7 and there they preached the gospel.

8 And a man in Lystra, without strength in his feet, sat, lame from his mother's womb: who had never walked.

9 This man heard Paul speak, who, looking earnestly on him, and seeing that he had faith to be saved,

10 said with a loud voice: Stand erect on thy feet. And he leaped up and walked.

11 And the multitudes, seeing what Paul had done, lifted up their voice, saying in the Lycaonian language: The gods in the likeness of men have come down to us;

12 and they called Barnabas, Zeus; and Paul, Hermes; because he was the chief speaker.

13 And the priest of Zeus, who was before the city, having brought bulls and garlands to the gates, intended to offer sacrifice with the multitudes.

14 But the apostles Barnabas and Paul, hearing of it, rent their garments and ran forth among the multitude, crying out

15 and saying: Men, why do these things? We also of like passions with yourselves are men, preaching the gospel that you turn from these vanities to the living God, who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all things that are in them;

16 who, in the past generations, permitted all the nations to walk in their own ways:

17 though, indeed, he left himself not without testimony in doing good, giving you rains from heaven and fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and gladness.

18 And saying these things, they scarcely restrained the multitudes from offering sacrifice to them.

19 But there came thither from Antioch and Iconium Jews; and having persuaded the multitudes and stoned Paul, they dragged him out of the city, supposing that he was dead.

20 However, as the disciples stood about him, he rose up and came into the city. And on the next day he went forth with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 Having preached the gospel to that city also, and having made many disciples, they returned to Lystra and to Iconium and to Antioch,

22 strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to abide in the faith, and saying that through many afflictions we must enter into the kingdom of God.

23 But having ordained elders for them in every church, with prayer and fasting they commended them to the Lord on whom they had believed.

24 And after passing through Pisidia they came to Pamphylia;

25 and having spoken the word in Perga, they came down to Attalia;

26 and thence sailed to Antioch, whence they had been delivered to the grace of God for the work which they had accomplished.

27 But after they had arrived and brought the church together, they related what things God had done with them, and that he had opened to the Gentiles the door of faith.

28 And they spent not a little time with the disciples.

Acts 15

1 And some went down from Judea and taught the brethren that unless you shall have been circumcised according to the custom of Moses, you cannot be saved.

2 But after Paul and Barnabas had had no little dissension and discussion with them, they arranged that Paul and Barnabas and some others of them should go up to the apostles and elders at Jerusalem concerning this question.

3 They therefore, having been conducted on their journey by the church, passed through Phenice and Samaria, relating the conversion of the Gentiles; and they caused great joy to all the brethren.

4 But when they had arrived at Jerusalem they were received by the church and the apostles and the elders: they also announced what things God had done with them.

5 And there arose some of the sect of the Pharisees, who had believed, saying that it was necessary to circumcise them: also, to command that they keep the law;

6 And the apostles and elders came together to consider this matter.

7 But after there had been much discussion, Peter arose and said to them: Men, brethren, you know that at the first days God made

choice among you, that by my mouth the Gentiles should hear the word of the gospel and believe.

8 And God, who knows the heart, bore them testimony by giving them the Holy Spirit even as to us,

9 and made no distinction between us and them, having purified their hearts by faith.

10 Now, therefore, why tempt God by putting a yoke upon the neck of the disciples which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

11 But, through the grace of the Lord Jesus, we believe that we shall be saved in the same manner as they.

12 And the whole multitude kept silence and heard Barnabas and Paul relate what signs and wonders God had done among the Gentiles through them.

13 But after they were silent, James answered, saying: Men, brethren, hear me.

14 Simeon has related how God at the first looked down to take from the Gentiles a people for his name.

15 And with this agree the words of the prophets, as it is written:

16 After this I will return and build again the tabernacle of David, which has fallen down, and its ruins I will build again, and I will set it up,

17 that the men that are left over may seek the Lord, and all the Gentiles on whom my name has been called,

18 says the Lord who does these things known from eternity.

19 Wherefore I judge that we trouble not them that from among the Gentiles are turning to God,

20 but that we write to them to abstain from the pollutions of idols, and from lewdness, and from what is strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses has, from ancient generations, in every city, them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day.

22 Then it seemed good to the apostles and the elders with the whole church, to choose men from among themselves and send them to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas; Judas who is called Barsabbas, and Silas, leading men among the brethren,

23 having written by their hand: The apostles and the elder brethren, to the brethren who are of the Gentiles in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia, wish health.

24 Since we have heard that some have gone out from among us and troubled you with words, subverting your souls, to whom we gave no commandment;

25 it seemed good to us, having been of one mind, to choose men and send them to you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul;

26 who are men that have delivered up their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent, therefore, Judas and Silas, who will tell the same things by word.

28 For it seemed good to the Holy Spirit, and us, to lay on you no greater burden than these necessary things,

29 that you abstain from things sacrificed to idols, and blood, and things strangled, and lewdness; from which if you keep yourselves you will do well. Farewell.

30 They therefore having been dismissed came to Antioch; and when they had gathered the multitude together they delivered the letter.

31 And having read it, they rejoiced at the consolation.

32 Judas also and Silas, who were prophets themselves, with much discourse exhorted the brethren, and strengthened them;

33 but having remained for a time, they were dismissed with peace from the brethren to those that had sent them.

34 [no verse]

35 But Paul and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching, with many others also, the word of the Lord.

36 And after some days Paul said to Barnabas: Let us return now and look after the brethren in every city in which we preached the word of the Lord how they do.

37 And Barnabas wished to take with them John who is called Mark;

38 but Paul thought it right not to take with them this one, who had turned away from them from Pamphylia, and had not gone with them to the work.

39 And there arose a sharp contention, so that they separated one from the other; and Barnabas took with him Mark and sailed to Cyprus.

40 But Paul chose Silas and went forth, after having been delivered to the grace of God by the brethren;

41 and he passed through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches.

Acts 16

1 And he came down to Derbe and Lystra. And behold, a disciple was there named Timothy, son of a believing Jewess, but of a Grecian father:

2 who was well reported of by the brethren in Lystra and Iconium.

3 Paul desired that this man should go forth with him; and he took him and circumcised him, on account of the Jews that were in those places; for all knew his father that he was a Greek.

4 And as they journeyed through the cities they delivered to them, for their observance, the decrees that had been made by the apostles and elders that were in Jerusalem.

5 The churches therefore were strengthened in faith and increased in number daily.

6 But they passed through Phrygia and the region of Galatia, being forbidden by the Holy Spirit to speak the word in Asia;

7 but having come towards Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia; and the Spirit of Jesus did not permit them;

8 and having passed by Mysia they came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul by night; a man of Macedonia stood beseeching him and saying: Come over into Macedonia and help us.

10 And when he had seen the vision we immediately sought to go forth into Macedonia, concluding that the Lord had called us thither to preach the gospel to them.

11 But sailing from Troas, we came by a straight course to Samothrace, and on the next day to Neapolis,

12 and thence to Philippi, which is the first city of the region of Macedonia, a colony. And we were in that city abiding some days.

13 And on the sabbath day we went forth out of the gate by the river, where we supposed there was a house of prayer; and sitting down, we spoke to the women that had come together.

14 And a woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, who worshipped God, heard; whose heart the Lord opened to attend to the things spoken by Paul.

15 But when she was baptized, and her house, she besought, saying: If you have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house and abide; and she constrained us.

16 But it came to pass as we went to the house of prayer that a maidservant, possessed of a soothsaying spirit, met us: who brought her owners much gain by soothsaying.

17 She, following Paul and us, cried out, saying: These men are servants of God Most High, who announce to us the way of salvation.

18 And this she did for many days. But Paul was grieved, and, turning, said to the spirit: I charge thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her; and it came out the same hour.

19 But her owners, seeing that the hope of their gain had gone, seized Paul and Silas and dragged them into the market before the rulers;

20 and bringing; them to the commanders, said: These men do greatly disturb our city, being Jews,

21 and announce customs which it is not allowed us to receive nor do, being Romans.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them; and the commanders, having torn off their garments, gave orders to beat them with rods;

23 and having laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the keeper of the prison to guard them securely:

24 who, as he had received such charge, cast them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 But about midnight Paul and Silas prayed and sung a hymn to God; and the prisoners listened to them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: immediately, also, were all the doors opened, and the bonds of all were loosed.

27 But the keeper of the prison, having been roused from sleep, and seeing the doors of the prison open, drew his sword and was about to kill himself, supposing that the prisoners had fled.

28 But Paul called with a loud voice, saying: Do thyself no harm; for we are all here.

29 And having called for a light, he sprang in, and trembling, fell before Paul and Silas.

30 and, bringing them out, said: Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And they said: Believe on the Lord Jesus, and thou shalt be saved and thy house.

32 And they spoke to him the word of the Lord, with all that were in his house.

33 And he took them at that hour of the night and washed the blood from their stripes, and was baptized, himself and all his, straightway:

34 and having brought them into the house, he set a table before them, and rejoiced with all his house in having believed in God.

35 But when it was day, the commanders sent the lictors*, saying: Release those men.

* lictors or rod-bearers

36 And the keeper of the prison told these words to Paul: The commanders have sent that you shall be released: now, therefore, come out and go in peace.

37 But Paul said to them: Having beaten us publicly, uncondemned, men that are Romans, they cast us into prison; and now do they put us out secretly? Not so: but let them come and bring us out themselves.

38 And the lictors told these words to the commanders; and they were afraid when they heard that they were Romans;

39 and they came and entreated them, and leading them out, asked them to depart from the city.

40 But after going out from the prison they went to Lydia, and when they had seen the brethren they exhorted them and went forth.

Acts 17

1 But having passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

2 And, according to his custom, Paul went in to them, and for three sabbath days he discoursed to them from the Scriptures;

3 opening and laying before them that the Christ must needs have suffered, and risen from the dead; and that this is Christ Jesus whom I preach to you.

4 And some of them were convinced and were allotted to Paul and Silas, of the devout Greeks also a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 But the Jews, filled with envy, and taking with them some evil men that were about the markets, and collecting a mob, excited a tumult in the city, and coming upon the house of Jason, sought to bring them before the people;

6 but not finding them, they dragged Jason and some brethren before the rulers of the city, crying out: These that have thrown the world into confusion have come hither also;

7 whom Jason has received; and these all act in opposition to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there is another king, Jesus.

8 And they disquieted the multitude and the rulers of the city when they heard these things;

9 and having taken security of Jason and the rest, they dismissed them.

10 But the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night to Beroea: who, on coming thither, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble-minded than those in Thessalonica; and they received the word with all readiness, searching the Scriptures day by day, whether these things were so.

12 Many of them therefore believed, also of honorable Grecian women, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica knew that the word of God was preached by Paul in Beroea, they came thither, exciting and disturbing the multitudes.

14 But immediately then the brethren sent away Paul to go as far as to the sea; and Silas and Timothy remained there.

15 But they that conducted Paul brought him as far as Athens; and having received commandment for Silas and Timothy, that they should come to him as soon as possible, they departed.

16 But while Paul waited for them in Athens, his spirit was stirred within him when he saw the city full of idols.

17 He therefore reasoned in the synagogue with the Jews, and the devout persons, and in the market every day with those that happened to meet him.

18 But some of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers disputed with him, and some said: What can this babbler wish to say? Others said:

He seems to be a proclaimer of strange demons; because he preached Jesus and the resurrection.

19 And they took him and brought him to the Areopagus, saying: Can we know what new teaching this is that is spoken by thee?

20 for thou bringest some strange things to our ears: we desire, therefore, to know what these things may be.

21 Now, all the Athenians and resident strangers have leisure for nothing else than to tell or hear something new.

22 But Paul, standing in the midst of the Areopagus, said: Men of Athens, I look upon you as, in all respects, more religious than others.

23 For in passing through, and observing the objects of your worship. I found also an altar on which had been inscribed: To AN UNKNOWN GOD. What, therefore, you ignorantly worship, this I announce to you.

24 God, who made the world and all things that are in it, he being Lord of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands,

25 nor is he served by human hands as if he needed anything, since he gives to all life and breath and all things;

26 he also made of one every nation of men to dwell on all the face of the earth, having fixed the times before appointed, and the limits of their habitations,

27 to seek God, if perhaps they would feel and find him not far from each one of us.

28 For in him we live and move and are, as also some of your own poets have said: For we also his offspring are.

29 Therefore, being the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the godhood is like gold, or silver, or stone, the sculptured work of art and of a man's device.

30 The times, therefore, of ignorance God having overlooked, now announces to all men everywhere that they repent,

31 inasmuch as he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness in a man whom he has ordained, giving faith to all by having raised him from the dead.

32 But hearing of a resurrection of the dead, some mocked; others said: We will hear thee even again concerning this matter.

33 Thus Paul went out from the midst of them:

34 some men, however, having attached themselves to him, believed: among whom was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

Acts 18

1 After this he departed from Athens and came to Corinth.

2 And finding a Jew named Aquilla, born in Pontus, having lately come from Italy, and Priscilla his wife, because Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome, he went to them;

3 and because he was of the same trade he abode with them, and worked; for by trade they were tentmakers.

4 But he discoursed in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded Jews and Greeks.

5 But when Silas and Timothy had come from Macedonia, Paul was wholly engaged in the word, testifying to the Jews that the Christ was Jesus.

6 But as they set themselves in opposition and blasphemed, he shook his clothing and said to them: Your blood be upon your head: clean I will henceforth go to the Gentiles.

7 And departing thence, he came into the house of one named Titus Justus, who worshipped God, whose house joined the synagogue.

8 But Crispus, the ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians, hearing, believed and were baptized.

9 But the Lord spoke through a vision in the night to Paul: Fear not, but speak and be not silent,

10 because I am with thee, and , no one shall make an assault upon thee to maltreat thee, for I have much people in this city.

11 And he continued a year and six months, teaching among them the word of God.

12 But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews, with one consent, rose up against Paul, and brought him to the tribunal,

13 saying: This person induces men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 But when Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said to the Jews: If, indeed, there were any wrong or wicked mischief, O Jews, I would with reason bear with you;

15 but if there are questions about a word, and names, and your law, see to it yourselves: I will not be a judge of these things.

16 And he drove them from the tribunal.

17 But all took Sosthenes, the ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the tribunal; and none of these things were a care to Gallio.

18 But Paul, after remaining yet many days, took leave of the brethren and sailed to Syria; and with him Priscilla and Aquila, having shorn his head in Cenchrea, for he had a vow.

19 And they arrived at Ephesus; and he left them there, but went himself into the synagogue and discoursed to the Jews.

20 And though they requested him to remain a longer time, he did not consent;

21 but taking leave and saying: I will return to you again, if God will, he sailed from Ephesus;

22 and arriving at Caesarea, he went up and saluted the church, and went down to Antioch;

23 and having spent some time he went forth, passing in order through the country of Galatia, and Phrygia, strengthening all the disciples.

24 But a Jew named Apollos, born in Alexandria, an eloquent man and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus.

25 He was instructed in the way of the Lord, and, being fervent in spirit, he spoke and taught accurately the things concerning Jesus, knowing only the baptism of John:

26 he also began to speak boldly in the synagogue. But after hearing him, Priscilla and Aquila took him, and explained to him more correctly the way of God.

27 And as he wished to go over to Achaia, the brethren encouraged him, and wrote to the disciples to receive him cordially. Who, on coming, gave much strength to the believers through his grace;

28 for he with power utterly confuted the Jews publicly, showing through the Scriptures that the Christ is Jesus.

Acts 19

1 But it came to pass while Apollos was in Corinth that Paul, having passed through the upper districts, came to Ephesus and found some disciples:

2 he also said to them: Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed? And they said to him: No: but we did not even hear whether there is a Holy Spirit.

3 And he said: Into what, then, were you baptized? And they replied: Into John's baptism.

4 And Paul said: John baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying to the people that they should believe on Him that was coming after him, that is, on Jesus.

5 And when they had heard, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus;

6 and when Paul had laid hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, and they spoke with tongues and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 But he entered the synagogue and spoke boldly for three months, discoursing, and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

9 But when some were hardened and believed not, and spoke evil of the way before the multitude, he withdrew from them and separated the disciples, discoursing daily in the school of Tyrannus.

10 And this continued for two years, so that all that dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord, both Jews and Greeks.

11 Mighty deeds, also, that were unusual did God through the hands of Paul;

12 so that even to the sick there were carried from his body handkerchiefs or aprons, and diseases departed from them: the evil spirits also went out.

13 But some also of the wandering Jewish exorcists undertook to name over those that had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying: I adjure you by the Jesus whom Paul preaches.

14 And there were some, seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, who did this.

15 But the evil spirit, answering, said to them: Jesus I acknowledge and Paul I know; but who are you?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped upon them, gained the mastery over them both, and prevailed against them, so that they fled from that house naked and wounded.

17 And this became known to all, both Jews and Greeks, that dwelt in Ephesus, and fear fell upon them all; and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified:

18 many also of those that had believed came confessing and declaring their deeds.

19 And many of them that practiced magic arts brought their books together and burned them in the presence of all; and they computed the value of them, and found it fifty thousands of silver.

20 So mightily the word of the Lord grew and prevailed.

21 But when these things had been accomplished. Paul purposed in spirit, after having passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying: After I have been there I must also see Rome.

22 And having sent into Macedonia two of them that waited on him, Timothy and Erastus, he remained for a time in Asia.

23 But there arose at that time no small commotion about the way.

24 For one, Demetrius by name, a silversmith, by making silver shrines of Diana, brought no little gain to the artists:

25 whom he called together with those that worked in such things, and said: Men, you know that from this trade arises our wealth;

26 and you see and hear that not only at Ephesus, but throughout almost all Asia, this Paul has persuaded and drawn off a great multitude, saying that they are not gods that are made with hands.

27 And not only is this trade of ours in danger of coming into disrepute, but also the temple of the great goddess Diana will be counted as nothing; and she also, whom all Asia and the world worships, will be deposed from her majesty.

28 But having heard and having become filled with wrath, they cried out, saying: Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the city was filled with confusion; and they rushed with one accord into the theater, after seizing Gaius and Aristarchus, Macedonians, Paul's fellow-travellers.

30 But when Paul wished to go in to the people, the disciples did not permit him;

31 and some of the rulers of Asia also, being friendly to him, sent to him and besought him not to trust himself in the theater.

32 Some therefore cried out one thing and some another; for the assembly was confused, and the greater part knew not for what cause they had come together.

33 But out of the crowd they brought forward Alexander, the Jews putting him forward; and Alexander, waving his hand, intended to make a defense to the people.

34 But, perceiving that he was a Jew, all with one voice cried out for about two hours: Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 But the town-clerk, having quieted the multitude, said: Men of Ephesus, what man is there, then, that does not know that the city of the Ephesians is the templekeeper of the great Diana, and of the image that fell down from Jupiter?

36 Therefore, as these things cannot be contradicted, you ought to be quiet and do nothing rashly.

37 For you have brought these men who are neither robbers of temples nor blasphemers of your goddess.

38 If, then, Demetrius and the artists with him have a matter against any one, court-days are kept, and there are proconsuls; let them bring charges one against the other.

39 But if you seek for anything further, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly.

40 For we are in danger of having charges laid against us concerning this day's tumult, there being no cause in relation to which we shall be able to give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had said this, he dismissed the assembly.

Acts 20

1 But after the tumult had ceased, Paul having sent for the disciples and exhorted them, took leave, and departed to go into Macedonia.

2 And having passed through those regions and exhorted them with much speech, he came into Greece;

3 and after remaining three months, a plot having been laid for him by the Jews as he was about to sail to Syria, he resolved to return through Macedonia.

4 But there followed him, Sopater the son of Pyrrhus, a Berean; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy; and of the Asiatics, Tychicus and Trophimus: and

5 these went before and waited for us in Troas;

6 but we sailed after the days of unleavened bread from Philippi, and came to them at Troas in five days, where we spent seven days.

7 But on the first of the week, when we came together to break bread, Paul discoursed to them, about to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech till midnight.

8 And there were many lamps in the upper room where we had come together.

9 And a young man, named Eutychus, who sat in the window, being oppressed with deep sleep, as Paul discoursed for a longer time, was borne down by sleep, and fell down from the third story, and was taken up dead.

10 But Paul went down and fell upon him and embracing him said: Be not troubled; for his life is in him.

11 And he went up and broke bread and ate; and having talked a long time till break of day, he thus departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were comforted not a little.

13 But we went in advance to the ship, and sailed to Assos, thence intending to take Paul in; for so had he arranged, intending himself to go on foot.

14 But when he met us at Assos, we took him in and came to Mitylene;

15 and sailing thence, on the following day we came opposite Chios; and on the next day we arrived at Samos; and we came on the following day to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail past Ephesus, that he might not spend time in Asia; for he hastened, if it was possible for him, to be in Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost.

17 But from Miletus he sent to Ephesus and called for the elders of the church.

18 And when they had come to him, he said to them: You know, from the first day on which I came into Asia. how I was with you the whole time,

19 serving the Lord with all lowliness of mind, and with tears, and trials that befell me by the plots of the Jews:

20 how I shunned to declare to you nothing that is profitable, and taught you publicly and from house to house,

21 testifying to Jews and also to Greeks repentance toward God, and faith that is toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now behold, bound in spirit I am going to Jerusalem, not knowing the things that will come upon me there,

23 except that the Holy Spirit in every city testifies to me, saying that bonds and afflictions await me.

24 But I esteem of no value the life dear to myself, so that I finish my course and the ministry which I received from the Lord Jesus, fully to testify the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that you all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom, will see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I solemnly affirm to you this day that I am clean from the blood of all;

27 for I shunned not to declare to you all the counsel of God.

28 Take heed therefore to yourselves and to all the flock, in which the Holy Spirit made you overseers, that you act as shepherds to the church of the Lord, which he purchased with his own blood.

29 For I know that there shall come in among you, after my departure, grievous wolves, not sparing the flock;

30 and from among yourselves there shall arise men speaking perverse things to draw off the disciples after them.

31 Therefore, watch, remembering that night and day for three years I ceased not with tears to warn each one.

32 And now I commend you to God and to the word of his grace, who is able to build you up and give you an inheritance among all the sanctified.

33 I coveted no man's silver or gold or raiment:

34 yourselves know that to my own wants, and to those that were with me, these hands did minister.

35 In all things I showed you, that thus laboring you ought to sustain the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, for he said: It is more blessed to give than to receive

36 And having said these things he kneeled down and prayed with them all.

37 And all wept much; and falling on Paul's neck they kissed him,

38 sorrowing most of all for the word that he had spoken that they should see his face no more. And they conducted him to the ship.

Acts 21

1 But when it came to a pass that we had set sail after having departed from them, running by a straight course we came to Cos, and on the next day to Rhodes, and thence to Patara.

2 And finding a ship that was passing over to Phoenicia, we embarked and set sail.

3 but having come in view of Cyprus, and leaving it to the left, we sailed to Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to put off the lading.

4 But finding the disciples, we remained there seven days; and these said to Paul through the Spirit that he should not go to Jerusalem.

5 But when it came to pass that we had completed the days, we went out and departed, all conducting us with wives and children, till we were out of the city; and having knelt on the shore and prayed,

6 we finished taking leave one of the other, and went on board the ship, but they returned home.

7 But we, having finished the voyage from Tyre, came to Ptolemais, and having saluted the brethren remained with them one day.

8 But on the morrow we departed and came to Caesarea, and entering the house of Philip the evangelist, who was of the seven, we abode with him.

9 This man had four virgin daughters that prophesied.

10 But as we remained more days, there came down from Judea a prophet, named Agabus.

11 And coming to us, and taking Paul's girdle, he bound his own feet and hands, and said: These things says the Holy Spirit: The man to whom this girdle belongs shall the Jews in Jerusalem thus bind, and deliver into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 But when we heard these things, both we and they of that place besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

13 And Paul answered and said: What do you effect by weeping and breaking my heart? for I am ready not only to be bound, but also to die in Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.

14 And as he was not persuaded, we were silent, saying: The will of the Lord be done.

15 But after these days we prepared for the journey, and went up to Jerusalem;

16 and some of the disciples from Caesarea went with us, bringing Mnason, a Cyprian, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we came to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 But on the following day Paul went in with us to James; and all the elders were present.

19 And having saluted them, he related one by one each of the things that God had done among the Gentiles through his ministry.

20 And when they had heard, they glorified God, and said to him: Thou seest, brother, how many myriads of believers there are; and all are zealots for the law;

21 and they have learned concerning thee that thou teachest apostasy from Moses to all the Jews that are among the Gentiles, telling them

not to circumcise their children, nor to walk according to the customs.

22 What is it then? a multitude must by all means come together; for they will hear that thou hast come.

23 Do thou this that we tell thee: We have four men who have a vow upon them;

24 take them with thee and purify thyself with them, and pay expenses for them that they may shave their heads; and all will know that there is nothing of the things that they have learned concerning thee; but that thou thyself also walkest, keeping the law.

25 But with regard to the Gentiles that have believed, we have written, after deciding that they keep themselves from what is sacrificed to idols, and from blood, and what is strangled, and from lewdness.

26 Then Paul, taking the men, on the following day purified himself with them, and entered into the temple, announcing that he would keep the full number of the days of purification, till an offering should be made for each one of them.

27 But when the seven days were about to be completed, the Jews from Asia, having seen him in the temple, threw all the multitude into confusion and laid hands on him,

28 crying out: Men of Israel, help; this is the man that teaches all everywhere against the people, and the law, and this place; and further, he has brought Greeks also into the temple, and has defiled this holy place.

29 For they had previously seen in the city with him Trophimus the Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple.

30 And the whole city was moved, and there was a concourse of the people; and seizing Paul, they dragged him out of the temple, and immediately the doors were closed.

31 And while they were seeking to kill him, report was brought to the officer of the band that the whole of Jerusalem was in confusion;

32 and he immediately took with him soldiers and centurions and ran down to them; but when they saw the officer and the soldiers, they ceased to beat Paul.

33 Then the officer came near and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and inquired who he was and what he had done.

34 But some cried one thing and some another in the multitude; and as he was not able to ascertain the certainty on account of the tumult, he commanded him to be brought into the fortress.

35 But when he was on the steps, it happened that he was borne by the soldiers on account of the violence of the multitude;

36 for the multitude of the people followed, crying out: Away with him.

37 And as he was about to be brought into the fortress. Paul said to the officer: May I speak to thee? He replied: Hast thou a knowledge of Greek?

38 Art thou then not the Egyptian, that before these days made insurrection and led out into the wilderness the four thousand men of the assassins?

39 But Paul said: I am indeed a Jewish man, a Tarsean, a citizen of no unknown city of Cilicia; and I beseech thee, permit me to speak to the people.

40 And when he had given permission, Paul, standing upon the steps, waved his hand to the people; and as there was much silence, he addressed them in the Hebrew tongue, saying:

Acts 22

1 Men, brethren and fathers, hear my present defense to you.

2 And when they heard that he addressed them in the Hebrew tongue, they the more kept silence. And he said:

3 I am a Jewish man, having been born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but brought up in this city, educated at the feet of Gamaliel, according to the exactness of the paternal law; being a zealot for God, as all of you are this day,

4 I persecuted this way even to death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

5 as the chief priest, also, will testify for me, and all the presbytery; from whom also having received letters to the brethren. I was journeying to Damascus, to bring those that were there also bound to Jerusalem, that they might be punished.

6 But it came to pass as I was journeying and drawing near to Damascus about midday, suddenly there flashed around me a great light from heaven,

7 and I fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to me: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 But I answered: Who art thou, Lord? And he said to me: I am Jesus the Nazarene, whom thou persecutest.

9 And those that were with me saw indeed the light, but understood not the voice of him that spoke to me.

10 But I said: What shall I do. Lord? And the Lord said to me; Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which it has been appointed thee to do.

11 But when I did not see on account of the glory of that light, being led by the hand by those that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, well reported of by all the Jews that dwelt there,

13 came to me and stood, by and said to me: Brother Saul, receive sight. And in the same hour I looked upon him.

14 And he said: The God of our fathers has chosen thee to know his will and to see the Just One, and to hear a voice from his mouth,

15 because thou shalt be for him a witness to all men of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why delayest thou? Arise and be baptized and wash away thy sins, calling on his name.

17 But it came to pass after I had returned to Jerusalem, and while I was praying in the temple, that I was in a trance;

18 and saw him saying to me: Hasten and go quickly out of Jerusalem, for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said: Lord, they know that I imprisoned and scourged throughout the synagogues those that believed on thee;

20 and when the blood of Stephen thy witness was shed, I also stood by and approved, and kept the garments of those that killed him.

21 And he said to me: Go, for I will send thee far off to the Gentiles.

22 And they heard him to this word, and lifted up their voice, saying: Away with such a man from the earth; for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they were crying out, and throwing off their garments, and casting dust into the air,

24 the officer commanded him to be led into the fortress, giving orders that he should be examined with scourging, that he might know for what cause they cried so against him.

25 But as they stretched him forward for the scourge, Paul said to the centurion that stood by: Is it lawful for you to scourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?

26 And the centurion, hearing it, came and reported to the officer, saying: What art thou about to do? for this man is a Roman.

27 But the officer came and said to him: Tell me, art thou a Roman? And he said: Yes.

28 The officer answered: I purchased this citizenship at a great price. But Paul said: I, however, was born so.

29 Therefore they that were about to examine him immediately departed from him; and the officer also was afraid, having learned that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

30 But on the morrow, wishing to know the certainty of that of which he was accused by the Jews, he loosed him and commanded the chief priests and all the Sanhedrim to assemble, and brought Paul down and placed him among them.

Acts 23

1 But Paul, looking earnestly on the Sanhedrim, said: Men, brethren, with all good conscience have I lived to God till this day.

2 And the chief priest Ananias commanded those that stood by him to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then Paul said to him: God will smite thee, whited wall; and sittest thou to judge me: according to the law, and in violation of law commandest thou me; to be smitten?

4 But those that stood by said: Revilest thou God's chief priest?

5 And Paul replied: I knew not, brethren, that he was chief priest; for it is written: Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people.

6 But Paul, knowing that the one part belonged to the Sadducees and the other to the Pharisees, cried out in the Sanhedrim: Men, brethren, I am a Pharisee, a son of Pharisees: concerning the hope and the resurrection of the dead am I judged.

7 And when he had said this, there arose a dissension of the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the multitude was divided.

8 For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both.

9 And there arose a great cry; and some of the scribes of the part of the Pharisees arose and contended, saying: We find no fault in this man; but what if a spirit has spoken to him, or an angel?

10 But as there arose much dissension, the officer, fearing lest Paul might be torn in pieces by them, commanded the soldiers to go down and take him by force from the midst of them and lead him into the fortress

11 But on the following night the Lord stood by him and said: Take courage: for as thou hast testified concerning me in Jerusalem, so must thou testify also in Rome.

12 But when it was day, the Jews collected together and bound themselves by a curse, saying that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul,

13 And there were more than forty that made this conspiracy;

14 these came to the chief priests and the elders and said: We have bound ourselves by a great curse that we will taste nothing till we have killed Paul.

15 Now therefore do you with the Sanhedrim make known to the officer that he may bring him down to you, as if you would inquire more particularly into his case; but we are ready to kill him before he shall have come near.

16 But the son of Paul's sister, having heard of the plot, came and entered the fortress and told Paul.

17 And Paul called to him one of the centurions and said: Conduct this young man to the officer, for he has something to tell him.

18 He then took him and brought him to the officer and said: The prisoner Paul called me to him and requested me to conduct this young man to thee, as he has something to tell thee.

19 And the officer took him by the hand and withdrew to a private place, and inquired: What is it that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said: The Jews have agreed to request thee that thou wouldst, on the morrow, bring Paul down into the Sanhedrim, as if thou wouldst inquire somewhat more particularly concerning him.

21 Thou therefore be not persuaded by them; for there lie in wait for him more than forty men of them, who have bound themselves by a curse neither to eat nor to drink till they shall have killed him; and now they are ready, awaiting the promise from thee.

22 Then the officer dismissed the young man, saying: I charge thee to tell no one that thou hast made these, things known to me,

23 And calling some two of the centurions to him, he said: Make ready two hundred soldiers that they may go to Caesarea, and seventy horsemen, and two hundred light-armed men, at the third hour of the night:

24 also, that they should provide beasts, that they might set Paul on them and carry him in safety to Felix the governor;

25 And he wrote a letter containing this form:

26 Claudius Lysias to the most noble Felix wishes health.

27 This man, taken by the Jews and about to be killed by them, I came with soldiers and rescued, having learned that he was a Roman;

28 wishing also to know the cause on account of which they accused him, I brought him down into their Sanhedrim:

29 I found him accused concerning questions of their law, but having nothing charged against him worthy of death or of bonds.

30 But as I was informed that a plot was about to be laid by them for the man, I sent him to thee, charging his accusers also to lay their charges before thee.

31 The soldiers therefore, as it had been appointed them, took Paul and brought him during the night to Antipatris;

32 but on the morrow, leaving the horsemen to go with him, they returned to the fortress.

33 These, after entering Caesarea and delivering the letter to the governor, presented Paul also before him.

34 But having read it, and inquired of what province he was, and having learned that he was from Cilicia, he said: I will hear thee when thy accusers also have come; and he commanded him to be kept in Herod's palace.

1 But after five days, the chief priest Ananias came down with some elders and an orator, Tertullus; and these informed the governor against Paul.

2 And when he had been called Tertullus began to accuse him saying:

3 Since through thee we enjoy much peace, and worthy deeds have been done for this nation by thy foresight, we accept it always and everywhere, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness

4 But that I may not detain thee longer, I beseech thee to hear us in thy clemency for a short time.

5 For we have found this man a pest and a mover of sedition among all the Jews that are throughout the world, a ringleader also of the sect of the Nazarenes;

6 who also at tempted to defile the temple: him we also seized,

7 [no verse]

8 from whom thou thyself canst by examination learn concerning all things of which we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also joined in, saying that these things were so.

10 And Paul answered, after the governor had nodded to him to speak: Knowing that thou hast for many years been a judge over this nation, I do readily make a defense for myself.

11 as thou canst know that there are not more than twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem to worship.

12 And neither in the temple did they find me disputing with any one, or making a tumult of the people, nor in the synagogues nor through the city:

13 nor are they able to prove the things of which they now accuse me.

14 But I confess this to thee that, according to the way which they call sect, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things that are written throughout the law, and those in the prophets,

15 having hope toward God, which they also accept, that there shall be a resurrection of both just and unjust.

16 And on this account do I exercise myself to have always a conscience void of offense toward God and man.

17 But after many years I had come to bring charities to my nation, and offerings;

18 while engaged in these things they found me purified in the temple, not with multitude, neither with tumult; but there are some Jews from Asia

19 who ought to be present before thee, and bring accusation, if they have anything against me.

20 Or let these very men say what they found as wrong, while I stood before the Sanhedrim,

21 except in this one word that I uttered while standing among them: Concerning the resurrection of the dead am I judged by you this day.

22 But Felix, as he had a more accurate knowledge concerning the way, put them off, saying: When Lysias the officer has come, I will thoroughly know your matters;

23 and he commanded the centurion to keep him, and let him have liberty, and to forbid no one of his friends to minister to him.

24 But after some days Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was a Jewess, and sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ Jesus.

25 But as he reasoned of righteousness and temperance and the judgment that is to come, Felix became alarmed and answered: Depart for the present: but I will take a convenient time and call for thee,

26 hoping also at the same time that money would be given him by Paul: wherefore he called for him more frequently and conversed with him.

27 But when two years had been completed, Felix received Porcius Festus as a successor: wishing also to confer a favor on the Jews, Felix left Paul bound.

Acts 25

1 Festus therefore, having come into the province, after three days went up from Caesarea to Jerusalem;

2 and the chief priests and the first men of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 asking a favor against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying a plot to kill him on the way.

4 Festus therefore answered that Paul was under guard in Caesarea, and that he himself would soon go forth.

5 Therefore, said he, let those amongst you that have power go down, and, if there is any wrong in this man, accuse him.

6 But after spending among them not more than eight or ten days, he went down to Caesarea: on the morrow, having sat on the tribunal, he commanded Paul to be brought.

7 But when he had come, the Jews that had come down from Jerusalem stood around him, bringing many and heavy accusations, which they were not able to prove;

8 Paul answering in defense: Neither against the law of the Jews, nor against the temple, nor against Caesar, have I sinned in any way.

9 But Festus, willing to confer favor on the Jews, answered and said to Paul: Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged before me concerning these things

10 But Paul said: Before the tribunal of Caesar am I standing where I ought to be judged. Jews have I wronged in nothing, as thou very well knowest.

11 If, then, I am a doer of wrong, and have committed any act worthy of death, I refuse not to die; but if there is nothing of the things of which these accuse me, no one can deliver me as a favor to them. To Caesar I appeal.

12 Then Festus, having conferred with the council, answered: To Caesar thou hast appealed, to Caesar thou shalt go.

13 But when some days had passed, Agrippa the king and Bernice came down to Caesarea to salute Festus.

14 And as they were spending more days there, Festus laid Paul's case before the king, saying: There is a man left in bonds by Felix,

15 concerning whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, asking for judgment against him:

16 to whom I answered that it is not the custom of the Romans to deliver any man up as a favor, before the accused has had the accusers face to face, and has taken an opportunity for defense concerning the charge.

17 When, therefore, they had come hither together, making no delay, I, on the next day, sat upon the tribunal and commanded the man to be brought;

18 against whom his accusers, when they stood up, brought no evil accusation in regard to such things as I supposed,

19 but had some questions against him concerning their own religion, and concerning a Jesus that had died, who, Paul affirmed, was alive.

20 But being in doubt with regard to the inquiry concerning these things, I asked if he would go to Jerusalem and there be judged concerning these.

21 And as Paul appealed to be kept for the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I could send him to Caesar.

22 And Agrippa said to Festus: I also could wish to hear the man myself. Tomorrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

23 On the morrow, therefore, when Agrippa and Bernice had come with great pomp, and had entered the audience-chamber with the officers and the chief men of the city, and when Festus had commanded, Paul was brought.

24 And Festus said: King Agrippa, and all men that are present with us, ye see this man concerning whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both in Jerusalem and here, crying out that he ought to live no longer.

25 But I perceived that he had done nothing worthy of death, and as this man himself has appealed to Augustus I determined to send him.

26 Concerning whom I have nothing certain to write to my Lord; wherefore I have brought him before you and especially before thee,

King Agrippa, that after the examination has been held, I may have what shall write;

27 for it seems to me unreasonable in sending a prisoner not also to make known the charge against him.

Acts 26

1 But Agrippa said to Paul: Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then Paul stretched forth his hand and made his defense.

2 I think myself happy, king Agrippa, because I shall make a defense this day before thee, concerning all things of which I am accused by the Jews;

3 especially as thou art acquainted with all the customs and questions that are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

4 My manner of life, then, from youth, which at the first was among my own nation and in Jerusalem, know all the Jews,

5 who know me from the beginning, if they would testify, that according to the strictest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand judged for the hope of the promise made by God to the fathers,

7 to which hope our twelve tribes, persistently serving night and day, hope to come; concerning which hope, O king, I am accused by the Jews.

8 Why is it judged incredible among you that God raises the dead?

9 I then thought with myself that I ought to do many things in opposition to the name of Jesus the Nazarene;

10 which I also did in Jerusalem, and many also of the saints did I shut up in prisons, having received the authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death I readily gave my vote;

11 and punishing them often throughout all the synagogues, I compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even to foreign cities.

12 While engaged in these things, and going to Damascus with the authority and commission of the chief priests,

13 at midday, while on the road, I saw, O king, a light from heaven above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and those that journeyed with me;

14 and when we had all fallen to the ground, I heard a voice saying to me in the Hebrew tongue: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the goads.

15 But I said: Who art thou, Lord? and the Lord said: I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest,

16 But rise and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared to thee for this purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a witness of the things that thou hast seen, and of those in which I will appear to thee,

17 delivering thee from the people and from the Gentiles, to whom now I send thee,

18 to open their eyes, in order to turn them from darkness to light, and from the authority of Satan to God, that they may receive remission of sins, and inheritance among the sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Wherefore, king Agrippa, I became not disobedient to the heavenly vision;

20 but, to those in Damascus first, and also to those in Jerusalem, and throughout all the country of Judea, and to the Gentiles, I announced that they should repent and turn to God, doing works worthy of repentance.

21 Because of these things, the Jews, having seized me while I was in the temple, attempted to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help that is from God, up to this day have I stood testifying to both small and great, saying nothing else than the things that the prophets and Moses did say should take place,

23 that Christ should suffer, that he first by a resurrection from the dead should show light both to the people and the Gentiles.

24 But as he spoke these things in his defense, Festus, with a loud voice, said: Paul, thou art mad: much learning leads thee to madness.

25 But Paul said: I am not mad, most noble Festus, but I utter words of truth and soberness.

26 For the king, before whom I also boldly speak, knows concerning these things; for I am persuaded that none of these things have escaped his notice; for this was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

28 But Agrippa said to Paul: With little labor thou persuadest me so as to make me a Christian.

29 And Paul said: I could pray to God that not only thou, but also all that hear me this day, would, both with little and with much labor, become such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And the king rose up, and the governor, and Bernice, and those that sat with them;

31 and having withdrawn, they conversed one with another, saying: This man does nothing worthy of death or of bonds.

32 And Agrippa said to Festus: This man could have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed to Caesar.

Acts 27

1 But when it had been determined that we should sail to Italy, they delivered Paul and some other prisoners to a centurion named Julius, of the Augustan band.

2 And embarking in a ship of Adramyttium, that would sail to the places in Asia, we set sail, Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us;

3 and on the following day we landed at Sidon, and Julius treated Paul humanely and permitted him to go to the friends and receive attention.

4 And thence, having launched, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were adverse;

5 and having sailed through the sea that is opposite to Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra of Lycia.

6 And there, the centurion, finding a ship of Alexandria sailing to Italy, put us into it.

7 But, sailing slowly for many days, and having with difficulty come opposite Knidus, the wind not permitting us to go further, we sailed under Crete, opposite Salmone;

8 and sailing along by it with difficulty we came to a place called Fair Havens, near which was a city, Lasea.

9 But as much time had been spent, and as sailing was now unsafe because the fast was already past, Paul admonished,

10 saying to them: Men, I perceive that the voyage will be with injury and much loss, not only of the cargo and of the ship, but also of our lives.

11 But the centurion had more confidence in the pilot and the owner of the ship than in the things spoken by Paul.

12 And the harbor being not well situated to winter in, the greater number resolved to set sail thence, if by any means they should be able to reach Phoenix and winter there, a harbor of Crete, looking to the southwest and northwest.

13 But as the south wind blew softly, supposing that they had gained their purpose, they loosed and sailed along near to Crete.

14 But not long after, a tempestuous wind called Euraquilon struck against it;

15 and the ship having been caught, and not being able to bear up against the wind, we gave it up and were driven.

16 And running under an island called Claudia, we were scarcely able to become masters of the boat;

17 having taken it up, they used aids, undergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the Syrtis, they lowered the tackling, and so were driven.

18 But as we were greatly tossed by the tempest, on the following day they threw out the cargo,

19 and on the third day with their own hands they threw out the furniture of the ship;

20 but neither sun nor stars appearing for many days, and no small tempest lying upon us, all hope of our being saved was finally taken away.

21 And after there had been much abstinence from food, then Paul stood in the midst of them and said: It behooved you, O men, having been persuaded by me, not to have sailed from Crete and to have avoided this injury and loss.

22 Yet, now I exhort you to be cheerful; for there shall be no loss of life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night an angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 saying: Fear not, Paul; thou must stand before Caesar; and behold. God has given thee all that sail with thee.

25 Wherefore be cheerful, O men; for I believe God, that it will be so as it has been told me.

26 But we must be cast upon some island.

27 But when the fourteenth night had come, as we were driven up and down in the Adriatic sea, about midnight the sailors supposed that some land was drawing near to them.

28 And having sounded, they found twenty fathoms; but having gone a little further and sounded again, they found fifteen fathoms;

29 and fearing lest we should fall among rocks, they threw four anchors from the stern and wished that day would come.

30 But as the sailors were seeking to flee from the ship, and were letting down the boat into the sea, under the pretence that they would let go anchors from the prow,

31 Paul said to the centurion and the soldiers: Unless these remain in the ship, you cannot be saved.

32 Then the soldiers cut away the ropes of the boat and let it fall off.

33 But till day should come, Paul exhorted all to partake of food, saying: This day is the fourteenth day since you have waited and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I exhort you to partake of food; for this is for your safety; for from the head of no one of you shall a hair perish.

35 And having said these things and taken bread, he gave thanks to God in the presence of all and after breaking, he began to eat

36 And they all became cheerful and took food.

37 But we that were in the ship were in all two hundred and seventy-six souls.

38 And having been satisfied with food, they lightened the ship by throwing the grain into the sea.

39 But when day had come, they knew not the land but they perceived an inlet that had a beach, into which they determined if possible, to thrust the ship.

40 And cutting away the anchors they let them fall into the sea at the same time loosing the fastenings of the rudders, and, hoisting the front sail to the wind, they held the ship firm to the beach.

41 But falling into a place where two seas met they ran the ship aground; and the prow, having stuck fast, remained immovable, but the stern was broken by the violence.

42 And the advice of the soldiers was that they should kill the prisoners, lest some should swim out and escape;

43 but the centurion, wishing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded those that could swim to throw themselves off first, and go to land,

44 and the rest, some on planks, and some on pieces of the ship. And so it came to pass that all got safe to land.

Acts 28

1 And when we were safe, then we learned that the island was called Melita.

2 And the barbarians showed us unusual kindness; for, having kindled a fire, they received all of us on account of the rain that had come upon us, and on account of the cold.

3 But when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks and laid it on the fire, a viper came out because of the heat and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the barbarians saw the beast hanging from his hand, they said one to another: Surely this man is a murderer, whom, though saved from the sea, justice does not permit to live.

5 He then shook the beast off into the fire, and suffered no evil;

6 and they were expecting that he would become inflamed or suddenly fall down dead. But after looking for a long time and seeing no harm come to him, they changed their mind and said that he was a god.

7 But in the neighborhood of that place were the estates of the first man of the island, named Publius, who received us and for three days entertained us courteously.

8 And it happened that the father of Publius lay sick of fever and dysentery, to whom Paul went in; and having prayed and laid his hands on him, he restored him to health.

9 But when this had been done, the rest also in the island that had diseases came and were cured;

10 who in also honored us with many honors; and when we put to sea, supplied us with what was needed.

11 But after three months we put to sea in a ship of Alexandria that had wintered in the island, that had the sign of the Dioscuri.

12 And having landed at Syracuse, we remained three days:

13 whence, coasting about, we came to Rhegium. And after one day, the south wind having risen, we came on the second day to Puteoli,

14 where we found brethren, and were entreated to remain with them seven days and so we came to Rome.

15 And thence the brethren, hearing of our affairs, came to meet us as far as Appii Forum and The Three Taverns: whom when Paul saw he thanked God and took courage.

16 But when we had come to Rome, Paul was permitted to dwell by himself with the soldier that guarded him.

17 And it came to pass after three days that he called together those that were first among the Jews; and when they had come together, he said to them: Men, brethren, though I had done nothing against the people, or the customs of the fathers, I was delivered as a prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans;

18 who, having examined me, were willing to release me, because there was no cause of death in me;

19 but as the Jews spoke against it, I was compelled to appeal to Caesar: not that I have anything to accuse my nation of.

20 I have then called you for this reason, that I may see you and speak to you; for on account of the hope of Israel am I bound with this chain.

21 And they said to him; We have neither received letters from Judea concerning thee, nor has any one of the brethren come and reported or spoken any evil concerning thee.

22 But we think worthy to hear from thee what thou thinkest; for concerning this sect we know that it is everywhere spoken against.

23 And having appointed him a day, many came to him at his lodging; to whom, with full testimony, he set forth the kingdom of God, persuading them also concerning Jesus, both from the law of Moses and the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some believed the things spoken, and some believed not;

25 but not being agreed among themselves, they departed, after Paul had spoken one word: Well did the Holy Spirit speak through Isaiah the prophet to your fathers,

26 saying: Go to this people and say: By hearing you shall hear and shall not understand, and seeing you shall see and shall not perceive;

27 for the heart of this people has become fat, and with their ears they hear heavily, and their eyes they have closed: lest perhaps they

should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and turn and I should restore them to health.

28 Be it known to you, therefore, that to the Gentiles has this salvation of God been sent; and they will hear.

30 And he dwelt two whole years in his own rented house, and received all that came to him,

31 preaching the kingdom of God and teaching the things concerning the Lord Jesus with all boldness, without hindrance.

Acts 29 (From the *Sonnini Manuscript*)

1 And Paul, full of the blessings of Christ, and abounding in the spirit, departed out of Rome, determining to go into Spain, for he had a long time proposed to journey thitherward, and was minded also to go from thence to Britain.

2 For he had heard in Phoenicia that certain of the children of Israel, about the time of the Assyrian captivity, had escaped by sea to 'the Isles afar off' as spoken by the Prophet, and called by the Romans Britain.

3 And the Lord commanded the gospel to be preached far hence to the Gentiles, and to the lost sheep of the House of Israel.

4 And no man hindered Paul: for he testified boldly of Jesus before the tribunes and among the people; and he took with him certain of the brethren which abode with him at Rome, and they took shipping at Ostium and having the winds fair, were brought safely into a haven of Spain.

5 And much people were gathered together from the towns and villages, and the hill country; for they had heard of the conversion of the Apostles, and the many miracles which he had wrought.

6 And Paul preached mightily in Spain, and great multitudes believed and were converted, for they perceived he was an apostle sent from God.

7 And they departed out of Spain, and Paul and his company finding a ship in Armorica sailing unto Britain, they were therein, and passing along the South Coast, they reached a port called Raphinus.

8 Now when it was voiced abroad that the Apostle had landed on their coast, great multitudes of the inhabitants met him, and they treated Paul courteously and he entered in at the east gate of their city, and lodged in the house of an Hebrew and one of his own nation.

9 And on the morrow he came and stood upon Mount Lud and the people thronged at the gate, and assembled in the Broadway, and he preached Christ unto them, and they believed the Word and testimony of Jesus.

10 And at even the Holy Ghost fell upon Paul, and he prophesied, saying, Behold, in the last days the God of Peace shall dwell in the cities, and the inhabitants thereof shall be numbered: and in the seventh numbering of the people, their eyes shall be opened, and the glory of their inheritance shine forth before them. The nations shall come up to worship on the mount that testifieth of the patience and long suffering of a servant of the Lord.

11 And in the latter-days new tidings of the gospel shall issue forth out of Jerusalem, and the hearts of the people shall rejoice, and behold, fountains shall be opened, and there shall be no more plague.

12 In those days there shall be wars and rumours of war; and a King shall rise up, and his sword, shall be for the healing of the nations, and His peacemaking shall abide, and the glory of His Kingdom a wonder among princes.

13 And it came to pass that certain of the Druids came unto Paul privately, and showed by their rites and ceremonies that they were descended from the Judahites which escaped from bondage in the land of Egypt, and the Apostle believed these things, and he gave them the kiss of peace.

14 And Paul abode in his lodgings three months confirming in the faith and preaching Christ continually.

15 And after these things, Paul and his brethren departed from Raphinus and sailed unto Atium in Gaul.

16 And Paul preached in the Roman garrison and among the people, exhorting all men to repent and confess their sins.

17 And there came to him certain of the Belgae to enquire of him of the new doctrine, and of the man Jesus; and Paul opened his heart unto them and told them all things that had befallen him, howbeit that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; and they departed pondering among themselves the things which they had heard.

18 And after much preaching and toil, Paul and his fellow labourers passed into Helvetia, and came to Mount Pontius Pilate, where he who condemned the Lord Jesus dashed himself down headlong, and so miserably perished.

19 And immediately a torrent gushed out of the mountain and washed his body, broken in pieces, into a lake.

20 And Paul stretched forth his hands upon the water, and prayed unto the Lord saying, O Lord God, give a sign unto all nations that here Pontius Pilate which condemned thine only-begotten Son, plunged down headlong into the pit.

21 And while Paul was yet speaking, behold, there came a great earthquake, and the face of the waters was changed, and the form of the lake like unto the Son of Man hanging in an agony upon the Cross.

22 And a voice came out of Heaven saying, Even Pilate hath escaped the wrath to come for he washed his hands before the multitude at the blood shedding of the Lord Jesus.

23 When, therefore, Paul and those that were with him saw the earthquake, and heard the voice of the angel, they glorified God, and were mightily strengthened in the spirit.

24 And they journeyed and came to Mount Julius where stood two pillars, one on the right hand and one on the left hand, erected by Caesar Augustus.

25 And Paul, filled with the Holy Ghost, stood up between the two pillars, saying, Men and brethren these stones which ye see this day shall testify of my journey hence; and verily I say, they shall remain until the outpouring of the spirit upon all nations, neither shall the way be hindered throughout all generations.

26 And they went forth and came unto Illtricum, intending to go by Macedonia into Asia, and grace was found in all the churches, and they prospered and had peace. Amen

Paul to the RomansRomans 1

1 Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, a called apostle, set apart to the gospel of God,

2 which he announced beforehand through his prophets in the holy Scriptures,

3 concerning his Son, who was born of the posterity of David according to the flesh,

4 who was constituted Son of God in power, according to the spirit of holiness, from the resurrection of the dead, Jesus Christ our Lord,

5 through whom we received grace and apostleship in order to the obedience of faith among all the nations for his name's sake,

6 among whom are you also the called, of Jesus Christ:

7 to all that are in Rome, beloved of God, called saints. Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ concerning you all, that your faith is spoken of in all the world.

9 For God is my witness, whom I serve in my spirit in the gospel of his Son, how unceasingly I make mention of you,

10 always in my prayers making request if by any means now at last I may be prospered in the will of God to come to you.

11 For I greatly desire to see you, that I may share with you some spiritual gift, in order that you may be strengthened;

12 that is, that I may be comforted together among you through the faith that is in each other, both yours and mine.

13 But I desire that you be not ignorant, brethren, that I often purposed to come to you, and have been hindered to the present time, that I might have some fruit also among you, even as among the rest of the Gentiles.

14 Both to Greeks and to Barbarians, both to wise and to unwise, am I debtor:

15 so as far as I am able, I am ready to preach the gospel to you also that are in Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel; for it is the power of God in order to salvation to every one that believes, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For in it is revealed God's righteousness by faith for faith; as it is written: He that is righteous by faith shall live.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men that repress the truth in unrighteousness;

19 because that which is known of God is manifest in them, for God has manifested it to them.

20 For his attributes which are invisible, since the creation of the world, are clearly seen, being perceived by the things that are made, both his eternal power and divinity, so that they are without excuse;

21 because, though they knew God, they did not glorify him as God, or give him thanks, but became vain in their reasonings, and their heart, void of understanding, was darkened.

22 Professing to be wise, they became fools,

23 and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for the likeness of an image of corruptible man, and of birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

24 Wherefore God delivered them up in the desires of their hearts to uncleanness, so that their bodies were dishonored among no them;

25 and these exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever: Amen.

26 For this reason God delivered them up to dishonorable passions; for their females exchanged the natural use for that against nature,

27 and in like manner also the males, leaving the natural use of the female, were inflamed in their lust one for another, males with males working the indecency, and receiving in themselves the due reward of their error.

28 And as they did not approve of holding God in their knowledge, God delivered them up to a mind incapable of approving, that they might do things unbecoming,

29 having been filled with all unrighteousness, wickedness malice, covetousness; full of envy murder, strife, deceit, malignity

30 whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, insolent, haughty, boasters: inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

31 without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, unmerciful:

32 who, acknowledging the just decree of God, that those who practice such things are worthy of death, not only do them, but approve those that practice them.

Romans 2

1 Wherefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whoever thou art that judges! For in what thou judgest the other, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things.

2 For we know that the judgment of God is according to truth, against those that practice such things.

3 But thinkest thou this, O man that judgest those who practice such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

4 Or dost thou despise the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering, not understanding that the goodness of God leads thee to repentance?

5 But, according to thy hardness and impenitent heart, thou dost treasure up for thyself wrath in a day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God,

6 who will render to each one according to his works;

7 to those that, by perseverance in good work, seek for glory and honor and incorruptibility, eternal life;

8 but to those that are of party-spirit, and obey not the truth, but obey unrighteousness, wrath and indignation shall be rendered.

9 Affliction and anguish shall be on every soul of man that works out that which is evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Greek;

10 but glory and honor and peace to every one that works that which is good, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

11 For there is no acceptance of persons with God.

12 For as many as sinned without law shall also perish without law; and as many as sinned under the law shall be judged by the law;

13 for not the hearers of law are righteous before God, but the doers of law shall be declared righteous.

14 For whenever Gentiles, that have no law, do by nature the things of the law, these, not having law, are a law to themselves:

15 who show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing testimony, and their reasonings between one another bringing accusation, or also making excuse

16 in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men through Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

17 But if thou art named Jew, and retest on the law, and makest thy boast in God,

18 and knowest his will, and provest things that differ, being instructed out of the law;

19 and art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light to those that are in darkness,

20 an instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, having the form of knowledge and of truth in the law:

21 thou, then, that teachest another, teachest not thou thyself? Thou that preachest that men should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 Thou that sayest that men should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? Thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou rob temples?

23 Thou that makest thy boast in the law, through transgression of the law dishonorest thou God?

24 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles because of you, as it is written.

25 For circumcision indeed profits if thou keep the law; but if thou be a transgressor of law, thy circumcision has become uncircumcision.

26 If, then, the uncircumcision keep the judgments of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And that which is by birth uncircumcision, if it keep the law, will judge thee, who with letter and circumcision art a transgressor of law.

28 For he is not a Jew that is one outwardly, neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh;

29 but he is a Jew who is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart, in spirit, not in letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

Romans 3

1 What, then, the pre-eminence of the Jew, or what the profit of circumcision?

2 Much in every way. First, indeed, that they were intrusted with the oracles of God.

3 What then? if some were unfaithful, will their unfaithfulness make null the faithfulness of God?

4 Let it not be; but let God become true, but every man a liar, as it is written: That thou mayest be declared just in thy words and mayest overcome when thou art judged.

5 But if our unrighteousness renders God's righteousness conspicuous, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who brings on us the punishment? I speak as a man.

6 Let it not be; since how shall God judge the world?

7 For if the truth of God has, through my lie, become more abundant for his glory, why am I also still judged as a sinner?

8 And why not say (as we are blasphemously reported, and as some affirm that we do say): Let us do the evil, that the good may come? whose condemnation is just.

9 What then? Do we excel? Not at all; for we have before accused both Jews and Greeks all of being under sin,

10 as it is written: There is none righteous, no, not one;

11 there is none that understands, there is none that seeks after God:

12 they have all gone out of the way, they have together become unprofitable: there is none that does good, there is not even one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulcher; with their tongues they have used deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips.

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness.

15 Swift are their feet to shed blood,
16 destruction and misery are in their ways,
17 and the way of peace have they not known.
18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.
19 But we know that whatever things the law says, it speaks to those under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world become guilty before God.
20 Because by works of law shall no flesh be declared righteous in his sight; for through law is the knowledge of sin.
21 But now without law the righteousness of God has been made manifest, being witnessed by the law and the prophets:
22 I say, the righteousness of God, through faith in Jesus Christ, to all that believe. For there is no difference;
23 for all sinned and do come short of the glory of God,
24 being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus,
25 whom God set forth as a propitiatory sacrifice through faith in his blood, for a manifestation of his righteousness, because of the passing by of past sins
26 in the forbearance of God, with a view to the manifestation of his righteousness in the present time, in order that he might be righteous, and declare righteous him that is of the faith of Jesus.
27 Where, then, is the boasting? It is excluded. Through what law? Of works? No; but through the law of faith.
28 We conclude, then, that a man is declared righteous by faith, without works of law.
29 Is he the God of the Jews only? Is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also.
30 Seeing there is one God who will declare the circumcision righteous by faith and the uncircumcision through the faith.
31 Do we, then, make law void through faith? Let it not be: on the other hand, we establish law.

Romans 4

1 What, then, shall we say that Abraham, our forefather, has found according to the flesh?
2 For, if Abraham was justified by works, he has cause for boasting, but not before God.
3 For what says the Scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness.
4 But to him that works, the reward is not counted as a favor, but as a debt:

5 to him, however, that works not, but believes on him that justifies the ungodly man, his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Even as David also speaks of the blessedness of the man to whom God counts righteousness without works:

7 Blessed are they whose transgressions are forgiven, and whose sins are covered:

8 blessed is the man whose sin the Lord will not count.

9 Is this blessedness, then, upon the circumcision only, or also upon the uncircumcision? For we say: Faith was counted to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How, then, was it counted? While he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received a sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had while in uncircumcision, that he might be the father of all that believe while yet in uncircumcision, that righteousness might be counted to them,

12 and the father of circumcision to them that are not of the circumcision only, but that also walk in the steps of the faith of our father Abraham, which he had while in uncircumcision.

13 For not through law was the promise to Abraham, or to his posterity, that he should be heir of the world, but through the righteousness of faith.

14 For if they that are of law are heirs, faith is made void, and the promise is rendered powerless;

15 for the law works wrath; for where no law is, neither is there transgression.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be according to grace, in order that the promise may be sure to all the posterity; not to that of the law only, but also to that of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all.

17 As it is written: A father of many nations have I made thee before him whom he believed, even God, who makes the dead alive and calls things that are not as if they are:

18 who against hope on hope believed, in order that he might become a father of many nations, according to that which was spoken: So shall thy posterity be;

19 and not being weak in faith, he considered his own body that had become dead, being about a hundred years old and the deadness of Sarah's womb;

20 but in regard to the promise of God he doubted not through unbelief, but grew strong in faith, giving glory to God,

21 and being fully persuaded that what he had promised he was able also to perform.

22 Wherefore also it was counted to him for righteousness.

23 It was not written, however, for his sake, only that it was counted to him,

24 but also for the sake of us. to whom it shall be counted if we believe on him that raised Jesus our Lord from the dead,

25 who was delivered up because of our offenses, and raised because of our justification.

Romans 5

1 Therefore, being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,

2 through whom, also, we have had the access, by faith, into this grace in which we stand, and we boast in hope of the glory of God.

3 And not only so, but we also boast in afflictions, knowing that affliction works endurance,

4 and endurance approval, and approval, hope;

5 and hope makes not ashamed, because the love of God has been poured out in our hearts through the Holy Spirit that was given to us.

6 Furthermore, we being yet without strength, at the proper time Christ died for the ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die; though for the good man perhaps some one would even dare to die;

8 but God renders his love for us conspicuous in this, that, we being yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more, then, being now justified in his blood, we shall be saved through him from the wrath.

10 For if being enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of his Son, much more having been reconciled we shall be saved in his life;

11 and not only so, but also glorying in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.

12 Therefore, as through one man sin entered into the world, and through sin death, and so death passed through upon all men, inasmuch as all sinned;

13 for till the law sin was in the world, but sin is not imputed where there is no law;

14 yet, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those that did not sin after the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is a type of the coming one.

15 Yet, not as the offense, so also the gracious gift; for if through the offense of the one the many died, much more did the grace of God and the gift in the grace of the one man, Jesus Christ, abound to the many.

16 And not as through one that sinned is the gift; for the judgment passed from one offense to condemnation, but the gracious gift from many offenses to the righteous decree.

17 For if, in the offense of one, death reigned through the one, much more shall they that receive the abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one, Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore, as through one offense judgment came upon all men to condemnation, so also through one righteous deed, judgment came upon all men to justification of life.

19 For as through the disobedience of the one man the many were constituted sinners, so also through the obedience of the one shall the many be constituted righteous.

20 But law came in beside, that the offense might abound; but where sin abounded, grace exceedingly abounded,

21 that, as sin reigned in death, so also grace might reign through righteousness to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Romans 6

1 What, then, shall we say? Let us continue in sin, that grace may abound?

2 Let it not be. How shall we that died to sin live any longer in it?

3 Know you not that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus, were baptized into his death?

4 We were, therefore, buried with him through baptism into death, that as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we, also, might walk in newness of life.

5 For if we have grown together with the likeness of his death, we shall grow together also with the likeness of his resurrection,

6 knowing this, that our old man was crucified with him, that the body of sin might be made powerless, that we should no longer serve sin;

7 for he that has died has been acquitted of sin.

8 But if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him,

9 knowing that Christ, having been raised from the dead, dies no more: death no longer has dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, to sin he died once for all; but in that he lives, he lives to God.

11 Thus do you also count yourselves dead indeed to sin, but living to God in Christ Jesus.

12 Therefore let not sin reign in your mortal body, in order to obey its desires;

13 neither present your members as instruments of unrighteousness to sin, but present yourselves to God as being alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you; for you are not under law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin because we are not under law, but under grace? Let it not be.

16 Know you not that to whom you present yourselves servants for obedience, his servants you are whom you obey, either of sin to death, or of obedience to righteousness?

17 But thanks to God that you were servants of sin, but you obeyed from the heart the form of teaching into which you were delivered,

18 and having been made free from sin, you became servants to righteousness.

19 I speak as a man, because of the weakness of your flesh. For as you present your members servants to uncleanness and to lawlessness in order to lawlessness, so now present your members servants to righteousness in order to sanctification.

20 For when you were servants of sin you were free in respect to righteousness.

21 What fruit, therefore, had you then? Of which things you are now ashamed; for the end of those things is death.

22 But now, having been made free from sin, and having become servants to God, you have your fruit to sanctification, and the end, life eternal.

23 For the wages of sin is death; but the gracious gift of God is life eternal in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Romans 7

1 Know you not, brethren, for I speak to those that know law, that the law has dominion over the man as long as he lives?

2 For the married woman is bound by the law to the living husband; but if the husband shall have died, she is loosed from the law of the husband.

3 So then, if, while her husband lives, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress; but if her husband shall have died, she is free from his law, so that she is not an adulteress, though she be married to another man.

4 So then, my brethren, you also became dead to the law through the body of Christ, in order that you should be married to another, him that was raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit to God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the passions of sins which were through the law wrought in our members to bring forth fruit to death;

6 but now we have been delivered from the law, having died to that in which we were held, so that we serve in newness of spirit and not in oldness of letter.

7 What, then, shall we say? Is the law sin? Let it not be; but I had not known sin except through law; for I had not known desire unless the law had said: Thou shalt not desire.

8 But sin, taking occasion, through the commandment wrought in me all manner of desire; for without law sin is dead.

9 Now, I was alive without law once; but when the commandment came, sin became alive,

10 and I died; and the commandment which was for life, this was found by me to be for death.

11 For sin, taking occasion, through the commandment deceived me, and through it slew me.

12 So, then, the law is holy, and the commandment holy and just and good.

13 Did, then, that which is good become death to me? Let it not be; but sin, that it might appear sin, working out death to me through that which is good, that sin through the commandment might become exceedingly sinful.

14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am flesh, sold under sin.

15 For what I work I know not; for I practice not what I wish, but what I hate this I do.

16 But if I do this that I wish not, I agree with the law that it is good;

17 and now I no longer do it, but sin that dwells in me.

18 For I know that there dwells in me, that is, in my flesh, no good. For to will is present with me, but to work out the beautiful, not;

19 for the good that I wish I do not, but the evil that I hate, this I practice.

20 But if I do this that I wish not, I no longer do it, but sin that dwells in me.

21 I find, then, the law, to me wishing to do the good, —That evil is present with me;

22 for I delight in the law of God according to the inward man,

23 but I see a different law in my members warring against the law of my mind, and making me a captive in the law of sin that is in my members.

24 Wretched man that I am: who shall deliver me from the body of this death?

25 Thanks to God, through Jesus Christ our Lord: so, then, I myself with the mind indeed serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin.

Romans 8

1 There is, therefore, now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus made thee free from the law of sin and of death.

3 For what the law could not do, because it was weak through the flesh, God, sending his own Son in the likeness of the flesh of sin, and on account of sin, condemned sin in the flesh,

4 that the righteous demand of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

5 For those that are according to the flesh mind the things of the flesh, but those that are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For the mind of the flesh is death, but the mind of the Spirit is life and peace.

7 Because the mind of the flesh is enmity towards God; for it is not subjected to the law of God, neither indeed can it be.

8 And they that are in the flesh can not please God.

9 You, however, are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwells in you. And if any one has not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 But if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the spirit is life because of righteousness.

11 And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, he who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also make your mortal bodies alive through his Spirit that dwells in you.

12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, that we should live according to the flesh.

13 For if you live according to the flesh, you shall die; but if through the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God.

15 For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you received the Spirit of adoption, in which we cry: Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit itself bears testimony with our spirit that we are children of God.

17 But if children, also heirs: heirs, indeed, of God, but joint-heirs with Christ, if so be that we suffer with him. that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I reckon that the sufferings of the present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed for us.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creation awaits the revelation of the sons of God.

20 For the creation was subjected to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who subjected it,

21 in hope that the creation itself shall be freed from the bondage of corruption into the liberty of the glory of the children of God.

22 For we know that the whole creation groans together and is in pain together till now;

23 and not only so, but ourselves also, having the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, awaiting the adoption, the redemption of our body.

24 For by hope were we saved; but hope seen is not hope; for what any one sees, why does he also hope for it?

25 But if we hope for that which we see not, we with patience wait for it.

26 And in like manner the Spirit also helps our weakness. For we know not what we shall pray for as we ought, but the Spirit itself intercedes with groanings unutterable:

27 he, however, who searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, that he intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.

28 But we know that to those who love God all things work together for good, to those who are called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he foreknew, he also predestinated to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be firstborn among many brethren;

30 and whom he predestinated, these he also called; and whom he called, these he also declared righteous; and whom he declared righteous, these he also made glorious.*

* By conferring on them the *doxa*—glory of the New Covenant.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God is for us, who is against us?

32 He indeed that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how will he not also with him freely give us all things?

33 Who shall bring a charge against God's elect? It is God who justifies.

34 Who is he that condemns? It is Christ Jesus who died; yes, more, who has risen, who is at the right hand of God; who also intercedes for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall affliction, or distress, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or danger, or the sword?

36 as it is written: For thy sake we are killed all the day; we are counted as; sheep for slaughter.

37 But in all these things we do more than conquer through him that loved us.

38 For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities, nor things present nor things to come, nor powers

39 nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Romans 9

1 I speak the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing me testimony in the Holy Spirit,

2 that I have great grief and unceasing sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that I myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh,

4 who are Israelites, to whom belong the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the religious service, and the promises;

5 whose are the fathers, and from whom is Christ according to the flesh: who is over all, God blessed for ever, Amen.

6 But I do not say such a thing as: The word of God has failed. For these are not all Israel, who are of Israel;

7 neither, because they are the posterity of Abraham, are all children; but; In Isaac shall thy posterity be called:

8 that is, the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God, but the children of the promise are counted as the posterity.

9 For the word of promise was this: According to this season will I come, and Sarah shall have a son.

10 And not only this, but also Rebecca, having conceived by one, our father Isaac, —

11 for the children not yet having been born, neither having done any good or ill, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calls, —

12 it was said to her: The elder shall serve the younger,

13 as it is written: Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated.

14 What, then, shall we say? Is there unrighteousness with God? Let it not be.

15 For he says to Moses: I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion.

16 So, then, not of him that wills nor of him that runs, but of God who has mercy.

17 For the Scripture says to Pharaoh: For this same purpose did I raise thee up, that I might show in thee my power, and that my name might be published in all the earth.

18 Therefore, on whom he wills he has mercy, and whom he wills he hardens.

19 Thou wilt say to me therefore: Why does he yet find fault? For who has resisted his will?

20 Yes, rather, O man, who art thou that replies against God? Shall the thing moulded say to him that moulded it: Why didst thou make me thus?

21 Has not the potter right over the clay to make of the same lump one vessel for honor and another for dishonor?

22 But if God—willing to show his wrath, and to make known his power, endured in much longsuffering vessels of wrath fitted for destruction,

23 also that he might make known the riches of his glory on vessels of mercy, which he before prepared for glory?

24 whom he also called, us not only from among the Jews, but also from among the Gentiles,

25 as he also says in Hosea: I will call that my people which was not my people, and her beloved, that was not beloved;

26 and it shall come to pass in the place where it was said to them: You are not my people, there shall they be called sons of the living God.

27 But Isaiah cries concerning Israel: Though the number of the sons of Israel be as the sand of the sea, the remnant shall be saved.

28 For a fulfilling and cutting short of the word will the Lord make on the earth.

29 And as Isaiah predicted: Unless the Lord of Sabaoth had left us posterity, we had become as Sodom and had been made like Gomorrah.

30 What, then, shall we say? that the Gentiles, that were not following after righteousness, attained to righteousness, the righteousness that is of faith;

31 but Israel, following after a law of righteousness, did not attain to a law.

32 Why? because they sought it not by faith, but as by works: for they stumbled at the stone of stumbling,

33 as it is written: Behold, I lay in Zion a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense; and he that believes on him shall not be ashamed.

Romans 10

1 Brethren, the good pleasure of my heart, and my prayer to God for them, is for their salvation;

2 For I bear them testimony that they have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For, being ignorant of God's righteousness, and seeking to establish their own righteousness, they have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believes.

5 For Moses writes that the man that does the righteousness of the law shall live in it.

6 But the righteousness that is of faith speaks thus: Say not in thy heart: Who shall ascend into heaven? that is, to bring Christ down:

7 or, Who shall descend into the abyss? that is, to bring Christ up from the dead.

8 But what says it? The word is near thee, in thy mouth and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith which we preach.

9 Because, if thou shalt confess with thy mouth that Jesus is Lord, and shalt believe in thy heart that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved;

10 for with the heart faith is exercised in order to righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made in order to salvation.

11 For the Scripture says: Whoever believes on him shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between Jew and Greek; for the same is Lord of all, rich toward all that call upon him.

13 For every one that calls on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

14 How, then, shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? And how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach unless they be sent? As it is written: How beautiful are the feet of them that bring glad tidings of good things.

16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Isaiah says: Lord, who has believed that which was heard by us?

17 So, then, faith comes from what is heard, and that which is heard comes through the word of God.

18 But I say, have they not heard? Yes, verily, Their sound went forth into all the earth, and their words to the end of the world.

19 But I say, did not Israel know? First Moses says: I will provoke you to jealousy by that which is no nation, by a foolish nation I will excite you to anger.

20 But Isaiah is very bold, and says: I was found by them that sought me not, I became manifest to them that asked not after me.

21 But of Israel he says: All day long I stretched forth my hands to a disobedient and contradicting people.

Romans 11

1 I say, then, Did God cast away his people? It can not be; for I am an Israelite, of the posterity of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God did not cast away his people whom he foreknew. Know you not what the Scripture says in speaking of Elijah, how he complains to God against Israel?

3 Lord, thy prophets they have killed, thy altars they have dug down, and I am left the only one, and they seek my life.

4 But what says the answer of God to him? I have reserved for myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal.

5 So, then, even in the present time there is a remnant according to the election of grace;

6 now if by grace, no longer of works, since grace no longer becomes grace.

7 What then? That which Israel seeks for, this he did not obtain, but the election obtained it, and the rest were hardened,

8 as it is written: God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, till this day.

9 And David says: Let their table become a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompense to them:

10 let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back always.

11 I say, then, did they stumble that they should fall? It can not be; but by their fall salvation has come to the Gentiles, in order to excite them to emulation,

12 But if their fall is the riches of the world and their worse estate the riches of the Gentiles, how much more their fulness.

13 But I speak to you, the Gentiles. Inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I glorify my office,

14 if in any way I may excite to emulation my own flesh and save some of them.

15 For, if the casting away of them is the reconciliation of the world, what shall their reception be but life from the dead?

16 But if the firstfruit is holy, so also the lump; and if the root is holy, so also the branches.

17 But if some of the branches were broken off, and thou, being a wild olive, wert grafted in among them, and made a joint-partaker of the root and the fatness of the olive,

18 boast not against the branches; but if thou boastest, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then: The branches were broken off that I might be grafted in.

20 Well: because of unbelief they were broken off, but thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear;

21 for if God spared not the natural branches, neither will he spare thee.

22 Behold, then, the goodness and severity of God: towards those that fell severity, but towards thee the goodness of God, if thou continue in his goodness, otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And these, moreover, if they continue not in unbelief, shall be grafted in; for God is able to graft them in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of an olive tree that is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree, how much more shall these the natural be grafted into their own olive tree.

25 For I do not wish you, brethren, to be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own conceits, that hardness, in part, has come upon Israel till the fulness of the Gentiles shall have come in;

26 and so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written: There shall come out of Zion the deliverer, he shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.

27 And this is the covenant which they shall have from me, when I take away their sins.

28 As to the gospel they are enemies for your sake, but as to the election they are beloved for the fathers' sakes:

29 for the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable.

30 For as you in time past believed not God, but now have obtained mercy through the unbelief of these,

31 so also have these now believed not, that through your mercy they also may now obtain mercy;

32 for God has shut up all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches and wisdom and knowledge of God: how unsearchable are his judgments and his ways past finding out.

34 For who has known the mind of the Lord? or who has been his counsellor?

35 or who has first given to him, and a recompense shall be made him?

36 For of him, and through him, and for him, are all things: to him be glory through the ages. Amen.

Romans 12

1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, through the mercies of God, to present your bodies a sacrifice: living, holy, acceptable to God, which is your rational service.

2 And be not conformed to this age, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, the good, and acceptable, and perfect.

3 For I say, through the grace that was given to me, to every one that is among you, that he think not of himself more highly than he ought to think, but that he think soberly, as God distributed to each a measure of faith.

4 For as in one body we have many members, but all the members have not the same office,

5 so we the many are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another,

6 but having gifts differing according to the grace that was given to us; whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith;

7 or ministry, let us wait on our ministry; or he that teaches, on his teaching;

8 or he that exhorts, on his exhortation: he that gives, let him do it with simplicity: he that rules, with diligence: he that shows mercy, with cheerfulness.

9 Let love be unfeigned. Abhor that which is evil, cleave to that which is good:

10 in brotherly love, be affectionate one toward another: in honor, preferring one another:

11 in diligence, not slothful: in spirit, fervent; serving the Lord;

12 in hope, rejoicing: in affliction, patient: in prayer, persevering;

13 communicating to the necessities of the saints; following hospitality:

14 bless them that persecute you; bless, and curse not.

15 Rejoice with them that rejoice, weep with them that weep.

16 Be of the same mind one toward another; mind not high things, but condescend to things that are lowly: be not wise in your own conceits.

17 Render to no one evil for evil; provide for things honorable in the sight of all men;

18 if possible, as far as it is of you, be at peace with all men;

19 avenge not yourselves, beloved, but give place to the wrath; for it is written: Vengeance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord.

20 If, then, thy enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink; for in doing this thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

21 Be not overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good.

1 Let every soul submit himself to the authorities that are over him. For there is no authority except of God, and those that are have been appointed by God.

2 So, then, he that sets himself against the authority resists the appointment of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves condemnation.

3 For rulers are not a terror to the good work, but to the evil. And dost thou desire not to be afraid of the authority? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise from the same;

4 for he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he wears not the sword in vain; for he is the minister of God, an avenger to execute wrath on him that practices that which is evil.

5 Wherefore it is needful that you submit yourselves, not only because of wrath, but also because of conscience.

6 For, for this reason you pay tribute also; for they are the ministers of God attending continually to this very thing.

7 Render to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor.

8 Owe no one any thing, except to love one another; for he that loves another has fulfilled the law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not desire, and, if there is any other commandment, it is briefly summed up in this saying, in this: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.

10 Love works no evil to the neighbor: love, therefore, is the fulfillment of the law.

11 And this, knowing the time, that it is the hour, at which we should have already awaked out of sleep; for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand. Let us therefore put off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light.

13 Let us walk becomingly as in the day, not in riotings and drunkenness, not in lewdness and wantonness, not in contention and envy;

14 but put on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the desires of the flesh.

Romans 14

1 Now, him that is weak in the faith receive, not to judgments of thoughts.

2 One believes that he may eat all things, another who is weak eats herbs.

3 Let not him that eats despise him that eats not; and let not him that eats not judge him that eats; for God has received him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? To his own master he stands or falls; but he shall stand, for the Lord is able to make him stand.

5 One esteems one day better than another; another esteems every day alike: let each one be fully persuaded in his own mind.

6 He that regards the day, to the Lord he regards it. And he that eats, to the Lord he eats, for he gives thanks to God; and he that eats not, to the Lord he eats not, and gives thanks to God.

7 For no one of us lives to himself, and no one dies to himself;

8 for if we live, to the Lord we live, and if we die, to the Lord we die. If, then, we live, and if we die, the Lord's are we.

9 For, for this purpose Christ died and lived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the living.

10 But why judgest thou thy brother? And why dost thou despise thy brother? For we must all stand before the judgment-seat of God.

11 For it is written: As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.

12 So, then, each one of us shall give an account of himself to God.

13 No longer, therefore, let us judge one another; but judge this rather, to put no stumbling-block or occasion of falling in your brother's way.

14 I know and am persuaded in the Lord Jesus that nothing is unclean of itself, but to him that thinks that anything is unclean, to him it is unclean.

15 For if on account of meat thy brother is grieved, thou no longer walkest according to love. Do not by thy meat destroy him for whom Christ died.

16 Let not, then, your good be evil spoken of.

17 For the kingdom of God is not eating and drinking, but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit;

18 for he that in this serves Christ is acceptable to God and approved by men.

19 So, then, let us pursue the things of peace, and things by which we may edify one another.

20 Do not for the sake of meat overthrow the work of God. All things, indeed, are clean; but it is evil for the man that eats so as to give offense:

21 it is good not to eat flesh, neither to drink wine, nor anything by which thy brother stumbles.

22 The faith that thou hast, have thou to thyself in the sight of God. Blessed is he that judges not himself in that which he allows;

23 he that doubts is condemned if he eat, because he eats not from faith; and everything that is not from faith is sin.

Romans 15

1 Now we the strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.

2 Let each one of us please his neighbor, for his good with a view to edification;

3 for Christ pleased not himself, but, as it is written: The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.

4 For whatever things were formerly written, were written for our instruction, that we, through the patience and the comfort of the Scripture, might have hope.

5 Now may the God of patience and of comfort grant to you to be of the same mind one toward another according to Christ Jesus,

6 that with one mind you may with one mouth glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore, receive one another, as Christ also received you, to the glory of God.

8 For I say that Christ became a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, that he might confirm the promises made to the fathers,

9 and that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy, as it is written: For this cause will I give thanks to thee among the Gentiles, and to thy name will I sing.

10 And again he says: Rejoice, you Gentiles, with his people.

11 And again: Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles, and applaud him, all you peoples.

12 And again Isaiah says: There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that rises to rule the Gentiles; in him shall Gentiles hope.

13 Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, in order that you may abound in hope in the power of the Holy Spirit.

14 Now, my brethren, I am persuaded, even I myself, concerning you, that you also yourselves are full of goodness, having been filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 I have, however, written more boldly to you, brethren, in some measure, as putting you in mind because of the grace that is given to me by God,

16 that I should be a minister of Christ Jesus to the Gentiles, ministering as a priest in the gospel of God, that the offering of the Gentiles might become acceptable, being sanctified in the Holy Spirit.

17 I have, therefore, my boasting in Christ Jesus in things pertaining to God;

18 for I will not dare to speak of any of the things that Christ did not work through me for the obedience of the Gentiles, by word and deed,

19 in the power of signs and wonders, in the power of the Spirit of God, so that from Jerusalem and round about as far as Illyricum I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 But so making it a point of honor, I have preached the gospel not where Christ was named, that I might not build on another's foundation,

21 but as it is written: They to whom no message came concerning him, shall see, and they who have not heard, shall understand.

22 For which cause also I have been hindered many times from coming to you;

23 but now, no longer having a place in these parts, and having for many years a strong desire to come to you,

24 whenever I take my journey into Spain; for I hope, in passing through, to see you, and by you to be sent forward thither, if first I may be in some measure filled with you.

25 But now I am going to Jerusalem, ministering to the saints.

26 For Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased to make a contribution for the poor of the saints that are in Jerusalem.

27 For they have been pleased, and their debtors they are; for if the Gentiles have shared in their spiritual things, they ought also to minister to them in carnal things.

28 Having, therefore, performed this, and having secured to them this fruit, I will return through you into Spain;

29 but I know that in coming to you I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of Christ.

30 But I beseech you, brethren, through our Lord Jesus Christ, and through the love of the Spirit, that you strive together with me in prayers to God for me,

31 that I may be delivered from the disobedient in Judea, and that my service which is for Jerusalem may be acceptable to the saints,

32 that, coming to you, in joy through the will of God, I may with you be refreshed.

33 The God of peace be with you all. Amen.

Romans 16

1 I commend to you Phebe, our sister, who is a deaconess of the church that is in Cenchrea,

2 that you receive her in the Lord in a manner worthy of saints, and that you aid her in whatever matter she may have need of you; for she has been a helper of many, of myself also.

3 Salute Prisca and Aquila, my fellow-laborers in Christ Jesus,

4 who for my life laid down their own necks, to whom not I only give thanks, but all the churches of the Gentiles:

5 salute also the church that is in their house. Salute Epenetus, my beloved, who is the firstfruits of Asia to Christ.

6 Salute Mary, who labored much for us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junias, my kinsmen and my fellow-prisoners, who are well known among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Salute Amplias, my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbanus, my fellow-laborer in Christ, and Stachys, my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles, approved in Christ. Salute those who are of the household of Aristobulus.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Salute those who are of the household of Narcissus, who are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphsena and Tryphosa, who labored in the Lord. Salute Persis the beloved, who labored much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus, the chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the brethren that are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints that are with them.

16 Salute one another with a holy kiss. All the churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, to mark those that cause divisions and offenses contrary to the teaching that you learned, and turn away from them;

18 for such serve not our Lord Christ, but their own belly, and through good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience has come abroad to all; I therefore rejoice over you: I desire, however, that you be wise in regard to that which is good, but harmless in regard to that which is evil.

20 And the God of peace will bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

21 Timothy my fellow-laborer salutes you: Lucius also, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsman.

22 I Tertius, who wrote the letter, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius my host, and the host of the whole church, salutes you. Erastus, the treasurer of the city, salutes you; and Quartus, our brother.

25 Now to him who is able to establish you according to my gospel and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery that was kept in silence during eternal times,

26 but is now made manifest, and through the Scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the eternal God, made known for obedience of faith among all nations,

27 to the only wise God, through Jesus Christ: to whom be glory through the ages. Amen.

Paul to the Corinthians 11 Corinthians 1

1 Paul, a called apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of God, and Sosthenes my brother,

2 to the church of God that is in Corinth, to the sanctified in Christ Jesus, called saints, with all that call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place, both theirs and ours:

3 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God always on your account for the grace of God that was given to you in Christ Jesus,

5 that in everything you were enriched in him, in all utterance and all knowledge,

6 inasmuch as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you,

7 so that you come behind in no gift, waiting for the revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ,

8 who will also confirm you to the end that you may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 God is faithful through whom you were called into the fellowship of his Son, Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 But I exhort you, brethren, through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you all speak the same thing; and that there be no schisms among you; but that you be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.

11 For it has been declared to me concerning you, my brethren, by those of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 And I say this, that each of you says: I am of Paul, and, I of Apollos, and, I of Cephas, and, I of Christ.

13 Is Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you, or were you baptized into the name of Paul?

14 I thank God that I baptized no one of you except Crispus and Gaius:

15 that no one might say that you were baptized into my name.

16 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel, not in wisdom of speech, lest the cross of Christ should be made of no effect.

18 For the preaching of the cross is to those that perish foolishness, but to those that are saved it is the power of God.

19 For it is written: I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and I will set aside the prudence of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise man? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world?

21 For since, in the wisdom of God, the world, through wisdom, knew not God, it pleased God through the foolishness of what is preached, to save those that believe:

22 since Jews ask for signs, and Greeks seek for wisdom,

23 we, however, preach Christ crucified, to Jews indeed a stumbling-block, and to Gentiles foolishness,

24 but to these the called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ God's power and God's wisdom;

25 because the foolishness of God is wiser than men, and the weakness of God is stronger than men.

26 For see your calling, brethren, that not many wise men according to the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble;

27 but the foolish things of the world has God chosen, that he may shame the wise, and the weak things of the world has God chosen, that he may shame the strong,

28 and the ignoble things of the world and things that are despised has God chosen, things that are not, that he may bring to nought things that are,

29 to the end that no flesh should glory in the sight of God.

30 But of him are you in Christ Jesus, who has become to us wisdom from God, righteousness also, and sanctification, and redemption,

31 that as it is written: He that glories, in the Lord let him glory.

1 Corinthians 2

1 And I, brethren, on coming to you, came not according to excellence of speech or of wisdom, announcing to you the testimony of God.

2 For I determined not to know anything among you except Jesus Christ and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in great trembling;

4 and my speech and what I preached was not in persuasive words of wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power:

5 that your faith might not be in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

6 Wisdom, however, we do speak among the perfect, yet wisdom not of this age, nor of the rulers of this; age who are brought to naught;

7 but we speak God's wisdom in a mystery, the hidden which God ordained before the ages for our glory;

8 which no one of the rulers of this age knew; for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written: Which things eye has not seen, and ear has not heard, and into the heart of man have not entered, as many as God has prepared for those that love him.

10 For to us has God revealed them through his Spirit. For the Spirit searches all things, even the depths of God.

11 For what one of men knows the thoughts of man but the spirit of man which is in him? So also the thoughts of God has no one known but the Spirit of God.

12 But we have received not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit that is from God, that we may know the things that are freely given to us by God;

13 which things we also speak not in words taught by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit explaining spiritual things to spiritual men.

14 But the psychical* man receives not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness to him, and he is not able to know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

*psychical = we would say the "soulish man." *ed.*

15 But the spiritual man discerns all things; he himself, however, is discerned by no one.

16 For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

1 Corinthians 3

1 And I, brethren, was not able to speak to you as to spiritual, but as to flesh, as to babes in Christ.

2 I fed you with milk, not with meat; for you were not yet able. No, not even yet now are you able;

3 for you are yet carnal. For whereas there is among you envy and strife, are you not carnal, and do you not walk according to man?

4 For when one says: I am of Paul; and another: I of Apollos, are you not men?

5 Who, then, is Apollos? and who is Paul? Ministers through whom you believed, even as the Lord gave to each one.

5 I planted, Apollos watered, but God made to grow:

6 [no verse]

7 so, then, neither is he that plants anything, nor he that waters, but he that makes to grow, who is God.

8 Now, he that plants and he that waters are one, but each shall receive his own reward according to his own labor.

9 For we are God's fellow-laborers: God's field. God's building are you.

10 According to the grace of God that is given to me, as a wise architect I have laid the foundation, and another builds upon it. But let each one take heed how he builds upon it.

11 For other foundation no one can lay beside that which is laid, which is Christ Jesus.

12 Now, if any one builds on this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;

13 each man's work shall become manifest; for the day shall make it known, because it is revealed in fire; and each one's work, what kind it is, the fire itself shall prove.

14 If any one's work shall abide, which he has built on this, he shall receive a reward:

15 if any one's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss, but himself shall be saved, so, however, as through fire.

16 Know you not that you are the temple of God, and the Spirit of God dwells in you?

17 If any one destroys the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, and such are you.

18 Let no one deceive himself: if any one seems to be wise among you in this age, let him become a fool, that he may become wise.

19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written: He takes the wise in their own craftiness.

20 And again: The Lord knows the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

21 So, then, let no one glory in men; for all things are yours;

22 whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours,

23 and you are Christ's, and Christ is God's.

1 Corinthians 4

1 So let a man regard us as ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Here, moreover, it is required in stewards that one be found faithful.

3 But to me it is the very least thing that I be judged by you or by human judgments; yes, I judge not even myself;

4 for I am conscious of no wrong, yet not in this am I justified: but he that judges me is the Lord.

5 So, then, judge nothing before the time, till the Lord come, who will also bring to light the secret things of darkness, and will make

manifest the counsels of the hearts; and then shall each one have his praise from God.

6 And these things, brethren, I have transferred in figure to myself and Apollos for your sakes, that in us you may learn "Think not above what things are written," that you be not puffed up one for one against another.

7 For who makes thee to differ? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? and, if thou really didst receive, why dost thou boast as if not having received?

8 Already are you full: already are you rich: without us have you reigned as kings; and I would indeed that you did reign, that we also might reign with you.

9 For, I think, God has set forth us the apostles last, as appointed to death; for we have become a spectacle to the world, both to angels and men.

10 We, fools for Christ's sake, but you, wise in Christ; we, weak, but you, strong; you, honored, but we, dishonored.

11 Till this present hour we both hunger and thirst, and are poorly clad, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place,

12 and labor, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we endure;

13 being defamed, we entreat: as the refuse of the world have we become, of all things the offscouring till this day.

14 Not to shame you do I write these things, but as my beloved children I admonish you.

15 For, though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet not many fathers; for in Christ Jesus I begot you through the gospel.

16 I beseech you, therefore, become imitators of me.

17 For this cause have I sent to you Timothy, who is my son, beloved and faithful in the Lord, who will remind you of my ways that are in Christ, as I teach everywhere in every church.

18 Now some have been puffed up as if I were not coming to you:

19 but I will come to you quickly, if the Lord will: and I will know not the speech of those that are puffed up, but the power;

20 for the kingdom of God is not in speech, but in power.

21 What will you? With a rod shall I come to you, or in love, also in the spirit of meekness?

1 Corinthians 5

1 Lewdness is commonly heard of as being among you, and such lewdness as is not even among the Gentiles, that one has his father's wife.

2 And are you puffed up, and did you not rather mourn, that he that has done this deed might be taken from among you?

3 For I indeed, as absent in body but present in spirit, have already judged, as if I were present, him that has so perpetrated this thing:

4 in the name of our Lord Jesus, when you have come together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus,

5 to deliver such a one to Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord.

6 The ground of your glorying is not good. Know you not that a little leaven leavens the whole mass?

7 Cleanse out the old leaven, that you may be a fresh lump, as you are unleavened; for our passover also has been sacrificed for us -Christ.

8 So, then, let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote to you in the letter not to keep company with lewd persons, 10 not altogether with the lewd persons of this world, or with the covetous and extortioners, or idolaters, for then you ought to have gone out of the world.

11 But now I wrote to you not to keep company, if any one called brother be a lewd person, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such a one not even to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge those also without? Do you not judge those within?

13 But those without God judges. Put away from among yourselves the wicked man.

1 Corinthians 6

1 Dare any one of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust and not before the saints?

2 Or know you not that the saints shall judge the world? and if among you the world is judged, are you unworthy of the smallest judgments?

3 Know you not that we shall judge angels? much more then things pertaining to this life.

4 If you have, then, judgments pertaining to this life, those who are esteemed as nothing in the church, these do you set up?

5 For shame to you do I speak. So, is there not among you a wise man, not even one, who shall be able to arbitrate between his brethren?

6 But brother goes to law with brother, and this, too, before unbelievers?

7 Now, assuredly there is wholly a loss to you, that you have lawsuits with yourselves. Why do you not rather take injustice? Why do you not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded?

8 But you do injustice, and defraud, and this to brethren.

9 Or know you not that the unrighteous shall not inherit God's kingdom? Be not deceived: neither lewd persons, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor catamites, nor sodomites.

10 nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And these things were some of you; but you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and in the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are in my power, but not all things are profitable: all things are in my power, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats; but God will destroy both it and them. But the body is not for lewdness, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body;

14 and God both raised up the Lord, and will raise us up through his power.

15 Know you not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I, then, take the members of Christ and make them the members of a harlot? Let it not be.

16 Know you not that he that is joined to a harlot is one body? For the two, says he, shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is joined to the Lord is one spirit.

18 Flee from lewdness. Every sin whatever a man might commit is without the body; but he that commits lewdness sins against his own body.

19 Or know you not that your bodies are the temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, which you have from God, and you are not your own? for you were bought with a price: now, then, glorify God in your body.

1 Corinthians 7

1 But concerning the things of which you wrote, it is good for a man not to touch a woman;

2 yet, on account of lewdness, let each one have his own wife, and let each woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render to the wife the duty, and in like manner also the wife to the husband.

4 The wife has not power over her own body, but the husband; and in like manner also the husband has not power over his own body, but the wife.

5 Debar not one another, unless perhaps by consent for a time, that you may give yourselves to prayer; and be together again, lest Satan tempt you on account of your incontinency.

6 But this I speak as a permission, not as a commandment.

7 Yet I would that all men be as I myself also am; but each one has his own gift from God, one thus, another thus.

8 But I say to the unmarried and to the widows, it is good for them if they remain even as I;

9 yet, if they have not self-control, let them marry; for it is better to marry than to burn.

10 But to the married I give command, not I, but the Lord, that the wife depart not from the husband;

11 but if she have actually departed, let her remain unmarried or be reconciled to her husband; and that the husband put not away the wife.

12 But to the rest speak I, not the Lord; if any brother has an unbelieving wife, and she is well pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away;

13 and if any woman has an unbelieving husband, and he is well pleased to dwell with her, let her not put away her husband.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified in the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified in the brother: otherwise your children are unclean, but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart: the brother or the sister is not bound in such cases. But in peace has God called you.

16 For what knowest thou, O woman, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or what knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

17 But as the Lord has allotted to each one, as God has called each one, so let him walk. And so I ordain in all the churches.

18 Was any one called, having been circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. Has any one been called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing; but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let each one, in the calling in which he was called, in this abide.

21 Thou wast called being a servant; let it not be a care to thee; but if thou also canst become free, use it rather.

22 For he that is in the Lord, having been called as a servant, is the Lord's freedman: in like manner, the free man that has been called is Christ's servant.

23 You were bought with a price: become not servants of men.

24 Brethren, let each one, in what condition he was called, in this abide with God.

25 But concerning virgins, a commandment of the Lord I have not: yet advice I give as one that has obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.

26 I suppose therefore this to be good on account of the present distress, that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Hast thou been bound to a wife? seek not a separation: hast thou been loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.

28 If however thou hast also married, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she has not sinned; yet affliction in the flesh shall such persons have; but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is shortened: it remains that those who have wives be as though they had none,

30 and those who weep as though they wept not, and those who rejoice as though they rejoiced not, and those who buy as not possessing,

31 and those who use the world as not abusing it; for the fashion of this world passes away.

32 But I wish you to be without care. The unmarried man cares for the things of the Lord, how he shall please the Lord;

33 but the married man cares for the things of the world, how he shall please his wife.

34 Both the wife and the virgin are divided: the unmarried woman cares for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy in both body and spirit; but the married woman cares for the things of the world, how she shall please her husband.

35 But this I say for your profit, not that I may throw a snare over you, but with a view to propriety and assiduous attention to the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any one thinks that he acts in an unbecoming manner towards his virgin daughter, if she be past the flower of age, and it must needs so be, let him do what he will; he sins not: let them marry.

37 But he that has stood steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but has power over his own will, and has determined this in his own heart, to keep his daughter a virgin, does well.

38 So then even he that gives her in marriage does well, and yet he that gives her not in marriage does better.

39 A wife is bound as long as her husband lives; but if the husband shall have fallen asleep, she is free to be married to whom she will, only in the Lord.

40 But she is more blessed if she so abide, according to my judgment. I think too, even I, that I have the Spirit of God.

1 Corinthians 8

1 But concerning idol-sacrifices we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up.

2 If any one thinks that he knows anything, not yet has he known anything as he ought to know it;

3 but if any one loves God, he is known by him.

4 Concerning therefore the eating of idol-sacrifices we know that there is no idol in the world, and that there is no God other than the one.

5 For although indeed there are those called gods, whether in heaven or on earth; as there are gods many and lords many;

6 but for us there is one God the Father, from whom are all things and we to him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, through whom are all things and we through him.

7 However there is not, in all this, knowledge; but some with conscience till now of the idols eat as a thing offered to an idol, and their conscience being weak is defiled.

8 But meat will not commend us to God: neither if we eat not, are we the worse, neither if we eat, are we the better.

9 But take heed lest perhaps this right of yours become a stumbling-block to the weak.

10 For if any one see thee that hast knowledge reclining at table in an idol's temple, will not the conscience of him that is weak be edified, so as to eat things sacrificed to idols?

11 For the weak one perishes in thy knowledge, the brother for whom Christ died.

12 Now in so sinning against the brethren and wounding their weak conscience, you sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore if meat cause my brother to fall, I will never eat flesh, lest I cause my brother to fall.

1 Corinthians 9

1 Am I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen Jesus our Lord? Are you not my work in the Lord?

2 If to others I am not an apostle, yet certainly to you I am; for the seal of my apostleship are you in the Lord.

3 This is my defense to them that examine me.

4 Have we not a right to eat and drink?

5 Have we not a right to lead about a sister wife, as the rest of the apostles also, and the brothers of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I only and Barnabas, have we no right to forbear working?

7 Who ever goes to war at his own charges? Who plants a vineyard, and eats not its fruit? Or who feeds a flock, and eats not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man, or does the law also not speak these?

9 For in the law of Moses it is written: Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treads out the grain. Is it for oxen that God cares?

10 Or on our account altogether does he speak? For on our account was it written, that he that thrashes ought to thrash in hope, and he that plows, in hope of partaking.

11 If we have sown to you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we reap your carnal things?

12 If others partake of this right over you, should not we rather? But we used not this right; but we endure all things, that we may give no hindrance to the gospel of Christ.

13 Know you not that those who perform sacred rites eat from the temple? Those who attend the altar are partakers with the altar?

14 So also has the Lord commanded those that preach the gospel to live of the gospel;

15 but I have used none of these things. And I have not written these things that it should be so done in my case; for it were better for me to die, than that any one should make my cause of glorying void.

16 For if I preach the gospel, I have no cause for glorying; for necessity is laid upon me; for woe is to me if I preach not the gospel.

17 For if I do this willingly, I have a reward; but if unwillingly, I am intrusted with a stewardship.

18 What then is my reward? that in preaching the gospel I make the gospel without charge, that I may not abuse my right in the gospel.

19 For being free from all I made myself servant to all, that I might gain the greater number;

20 and I became to the Jews as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to those under law as under law, not being myself under law, that I might gain those under law;

21 to those without law as without law, not being without law to God, but under law to Christ, that I might gain those without law;

22 to the weak I became weak, that I might gain the weak: to all I became all things, that by all means I might save some.

23 And all things I do for the sake of the gospel, that a fellow-partaker of it I may become.

24 Know you not that those who run in the racecourse all run, but one takes the prize? So run that you may obtain it.

25 And every one that contends for a prize is temperate in all things: they indeed then that they may take a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so run not as uncertainly, so fight I as not beating the air;

27 but I bruise my body and bring it into subjection, lest perhaps having preached to others I myself should become rejected.

1 Corinthians 10

1 For I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea,

2 and were all baptized into Moses in the cloud and in the sea,

3 and all ate the same spiritual food,

4 and all drank the same spiritual drink; for they drank of the spiritual rock that followed, and the rock was Christ.

5 But in the greater number of them God had no pleasure; for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

6 Now these things became types of us, that we should not be desirers of evil things as they also desired.

7 Neither become idolaters, as some of them, as it is written: The people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to sport.*

*In idolatrous dance

8 Neither let us commit lewdness, as some of them committed lewdness, and fell in one day twenty-three thousand.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them tempted, and were destroyed by serpents.

10 Neither murmur, as some of them murmured, and were destroyed by the destroyer.

11 Now these things happened to them as examples, but were written for the instruction of us, on whom the ends of the ages have come.

12 So then let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.

13 A temptation has not taken you except such as is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above what you are able, but will make with the temptation a way also of escape, that you may be able to endure.

14 Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 As to wise men I speak: judge you what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 Because one bread, one body we the many are; for we all partake of the one bread.

18 See Israel according to the flesh: are not those that eat the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

19 What then do I say? that an idol-sacrifice is any thing, or that an idol is any thing?

20 But, that the things which they sacrifice, to demons they sacrifice and not to God; and I would not have you become partakers with demons.

21 You can not drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons: you can not partake of the table of the Lord and the table of demons.

- 22 Or do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he?
23 All things are in my power, but not all things are profitable: all things are in my power, but not all things edify.
24 Let no one seek that which is his own, but that which is the other's.
25 Everything that is sold in the meat-market, eat, examining nothing on account of conscience;
26 for the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness of it.
27 And if any one of the unbelievers invites you, and you be disposed to go, everything that is set before you eat, examining nothing on account of conscience.
28 But if any one say to you. This is offered in sacrifice; eat not for his sake that showed it, and for conscience' sake.
29 Conscience I say, not thy own, but that of the other. For why is my freedom judged by another's conscience?
30 If I partake with gratitude, why am I evil spoken of on account of that for which I give thanks?
31 Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or do any thing, do all to the glory of God.
32 Give no occasion for stumbling either to Jews or to Greeks or to the church of God,
33 as I also please every one in all things, not seeking my own profit, but that of the many, that they may be saved.

1 Corinthians 11

- 1 Become imitators of me, as I also am of Christ.
2 But I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and hold fast the traditions as I delivered them to you.
3 But I wish you to know that the head of every man is Christ, and the head of every woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.
4 Every man praying or prophesying having any thing on his head shames his head.
5 And every woman praying or prophesying with her head uncovered shames her own head; for it is one and the same thing as if she were shaved.
6 For if a woman is not covered, let her also be shorn; but if it is a shame to a woman to be shorn or shaved, let her be covered.
7 For a man indeed should not cover his head, as he is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of man.
8 For man is not from woman, but woman from man;
9 for man was not created for the woman, but woman for the man.
10 For this reason ought the woman to have authority* on her head because of the angels.

*A token of subjection.

11 Nevertheless neither is woman without man, nor man without woman in the Lord;

12 for as the woman is from the man, so also is the man through the woman, but all things from God.

13 Judge among yourselves; is it becoming that a woman pray to God uncovered?

14 Does not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a dishonor to him,

15 but if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her? because her hair is given for a covering.

16 But if any one seems to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God.

17 Now this I announce not in praise, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first indeed when you come together in the church, I hear that schisms are among you, and I in some measure believe it.

19 For there must be parties also among you that the approved also may become manifest among you.

20 When therefore you come together to the same place, it is not to eat the Lord's supper;

21 for in eating, each one takes before another his own supper; and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 Why, have you not houses to eat and drink in? Or the church of God do you despise, and shame those that have nothing? What shall I say to you? Shall I praise you? In this I praise you not.

23 For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you, that the Lord Jesus, on the night in which he was delivered up, took bread,

24 and after giving thanks he broke and said: This is my body which is for you; this do in remembrance of me.

25 In like manner also the cup, after he had supped, saying: This cup is the new covenant in my blood: this do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, the death of the Lord you announce, till he come.

27 So then whoever shall eat the bread or drink the cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner, shall be guilty of the body and of the blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himself, and so of the bread let him eat, and of the cup let him drink;

29 for he that eats and drinks condemnation to himself, eats and drinks not discerning the body.

30 For this reason many among you are weak and sickly, and very many sleep.

31 But if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged;

32 but being judged by the Lord we are chastened, that we may not be condemned with the world.

33 So then, my brethren, in coming together to eat, wait one for another.

34 If any one is hungry, let him eat at home, that you come not together to condemnation. But the rest will I set in order when I come.

1 Corinthians 12

1 But concerning spiritual things, brethren, I do not wish you to be ignorant.

2 You know that when you were Gentiles you were carried away to the dumb idols as you were led.

3 Wherefore I make known to you that no one speaking in the Spirit of God says: Accursed is Jesus; and no one can say: Lord Jesus, unless in the Holy Spirit.

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit;

5 and there are diversities of ministries, and the same Lord;

6 and there are diversities of operations, and the same God who works all things in all.

7 But to each one is given the manifestation of the Spirit with a view to the profit of all.

8 For to one is given, through the Spirit, the word of wisdom; to another, the word of knowledge, according to the same Spirit;

9 to another faith, in the same Spirit; to another gifts of healing, in the same Spirit;

10 to another the workings of mighty deeds, to another prophecy, to another discernings of spirits, to another kinds of tongues, to another interpretation of tongues;

11 but all these work the one and the same Spirit, distributing to each severally as he wills.

12 For as the body is one, and yet has many members, but all the members of the body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ;

13 for in one Spirit were we all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether bond or free, and were all made to drink one Spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot should say: Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, it is not therefore not of the body.

16 And if the ear should say: Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body, it is not therefore not of the body.

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now God set the members, each one of them in the body as it pleased him.

19 But if they all were one member, where were the body?

20 But now many members, but one body.

21 And the eye can not say to the hand; I have no need of thee: or, again, the head to the feet: I have no need of you:

22 yes, much more the members of the body that seem to be weaker are necessary;

23 and those members of the body, which we think to be more dishonorable, around these we put more abundant honor; and our uncomely members have more abundant comeliness;

24 and our comely members have no need. But God has well ordered the body, giving more abundant honor to that which lacked,

25 that there should be no schism in the body, but that the members should have the same care one for another.

26 And whether one member suffers, all the members sympathize; or if one member is honored, all the members rejoice with it.

27 Now you are the body of Christ and members in particular.

28 And God has set some in the church, first apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly teachers, after that powers, after that gifts of healing, helps, governments, kinds of tongues.

29 Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all powers? Have all gifts of healing? Do all speak with tongues? Do all interpret?

31 But ardently desire the greater gifts; and yet I show you a more excellent way.

1 Corinthians 13

1 Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal.

2 And though I have prophecy, and know all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith so as to remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing.

3 And though I give all my goods away in food, and though I deliver up my body that I may be burned, but have not love, I am profited nothing.

4 Love suffers long, is kind; love envies not; love is not boastful, is not puffed up;

5 does not behave itself improperly, seeks not her own, is not provoked, charges not the evil,

6 rejoices not in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth:

7 bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

8 Love never fails; but whether prophecies, they shall come to naught; or tongues, they shall cease; or knowledge, it shall come to naught.

9 But we know in part, and we prophesy in part:

10 when, however, the perfect has come, that in part shall come to naught.

11 When I was a child, I talked as a child, I thought as a child, I reasoned as a child: when I became a man, I put away the things of a child.

12 For now we see by means of a mirror in an enigma, but then face to face: now I know in part, but then I shall know even as I was known.

13 And now abides faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

1 Corinthians 14

1 Pursue love, but ardently desire spiritual gifts, rather, however, that you may prophesy.

2 For he that speaks in a tongue speaks not to men, but to God; for no one understands, though in spirit he speaks mysteries;

3 but he that prophesies speaks to men edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaks in a tongue edifies himself; but he that prophesies edifies the church.

5 Now, I wish you all to speak in tongues, but rather that you prophesy; and greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks in tongues, unless he interpret, that the church may receive edification.

6 But now, brethren, if I come to you speaking in tongues, what shall I profit you, unless I shall speak to you either in revelation, or in knowledge, or in prophecy, or in teaching?

7 Even things without life, giving sound, whether pipe or harp, yet, if they give not a distinction in tones, how shall that be known which is piped or harped?

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself for battle?

9 So, unless you also, through the tongue, give a word easy to be understood, how shall that be known which is spoken? for you shall speak into the air.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and no one of them without signification:

11 if, then, I know not the power of the voice, I shall be to him that speaks a barbarian, and he that speaks a barbarian, in my judgment.

12 So also you, since you are ardently desirous of spirits, seek that you may abound with a view to the edification of the church.

13 Wherefore, let him that speaks with a tongue pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray with a tongue, my spirit prays, but my mind is unfruitful.

15 What, then, is it? I will pray with the spirit, but I will pray with the mind also: I will sing with the spirit, but I will sing with the mind also.

16 Else, if thou shalt have blessed with the spirit, he that occupies the place of the unlearned, how shall he say the amen at thy giving of thanks? since he knows not what thou sayest;

17 for thou indeed givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank God, I speak with a tongue more than you all;

19 but in the church I prefer to speak five words through my mind, that I may instruct others also, than ten thousand words in a tongue.

20 Brethren, become not little children in understanding, but in malice be childlike, but in understanding become full-grown men.

21 In the law it is written: In words of another tongue and in other lips will I speak to this people, and not even thus will they hearken to me, says the Lord.

22 So, then, the tongues are for a sign, not for the believers, but for the unbelievers, but prophecy, not for the unbelievers, but for the believers.

23 If, then, the whole church shall have come together into the same place, and all speak with tongues, but there come in unlearned men or unbelievers, will they not say that you are mad?

24 But if all prophesy, and there come in any unbeliever or unlearned man, he is convinced by all, he is judged by all;

25 the secrets of his heart become manifest; and so, falling on his face, he will worship God, reporting that in reality God is in you.

26 What, then, is it, brethren? When you come together, each one of you has a psalm, has a teaching, has a revelation, has a tongue, has an interpretation: let all things be done with a view to edification.

27 If any one speaks with a tongue, by twos, or, at most, by threes, and in turn, and let one interpret;

28 but if there be no interpreter, let him be silent in the church, but let him speak to himself and to God.

29 And let two or three prophets speak, and let the others discern;

30 but if a revelation be made to another sitting by, let the first be silent.

31 For you can all prophesy one by one, that all may learn and all be comforted.

32 And the spirits of prophets are subject to prophets;

33 for God is not of disorder, but of peace. As in all the churches of the saints,

34 let your women be silent in the churches; for it is not permitted to them to speak, but to be in subjection, as the law also says.

35 But if they wish to learn any thing, let them ask their own husbands at home; for it is a shame to a woman to speak in a church.

36 Or came the word of God out from you, or to you only did it come?

37 If any one thinks he is a prophet or spiritual, let him acknowledge the things which I write. that they are of the Lord;

38 but if one is ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 So then, brethren, ardently desire to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues;

40 but let all things be done in a becoming manner and in order.

1 Corinthians 15

1 Moreover, I make known to you, brethren, the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received, in which also you have stood.

2 through which also you are saved, if you hold fast with what word I preached to you, unless you believed in vain.

3 For I delivered to you, among the first things, that which I also received; that Christ died for our sins, according to the Scriptures;

4 and that he was buried; and that he rose from the dead on the third day, according to the Scriptures;

5 and that he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve.

6 After that he appeared to more than five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain till now, but some have also fallen asleep.

7 After that he appeared to James, after that to all the apostles.

8 But, last of all, as to the one born out of due time, he appeared to me also.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, who am not worthy to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God;

10 but by the grace of God I am what I am, and his grace which was for me became not vain, but I labored more abundantly than they all: not I, however, but the grace of God which was with me.

11 Whether, therefore, I or they, so we preach, and so you believed.

12 But if Christ is preached that he has risen from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there is no resurrection of the dead, neither has Christ been raised;

14 and if Christ has not been raised, vain then both what we preached, and vain also your faith:

15 further, we are also found false witnesses of God, because we testified against God that he raised up Christ whom lie did not raise, if indeed then the dead are not raised.

16 For if the dead are not raised, neither has Christ been raised;

17 but if Christ has not been raised, fruitless your faith, you are yet in your sins:

18 then also those that have fallen asleep in Christ have perished.

19 If only in this life we have been hoping in Christ, more miserable than all men are we.

20 But now has Christ been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those that have slept.

21 For since through man death, through man also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But each one in his own order; the firstfruit Christ, afterward those that are Christ's at his coming:

24 then the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to the God and Father, when he shall have destroyed all principality and all authority and power.

25 For he must reign till he shall have put all enemies under his feet.

26 Death, the last enemy, shall be destroyed.

27 For he has put all things under his feet. But when he shall have said that all things have been subjected, it is evident that he is excepted who subjected all things to him;

28 but when all things shall have been subjected to him, then shall the Son also be subjected to him who subjected all things to him, that God may be the all in all.

29 Otherwise, what shall they do who are baptized for the dead? If the dead are not raised at all, why are they even baptized for them?

30 Why also are we in danger every hour?

31 I protest by the rejoicing over you, brethren, which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If as a man I fought with wild beasts in Ephesus, what advantage is it to me? If the dead are not raised, let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.

33 Be not deceived: Evil communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to sobriety, as it is right, and sin not: for ignorance of God some have. For shame to you I speak.

35 But some one will say: How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

36 Foolish man, that which thou sowest is not made alive unless it die;

37 and that which thou sowest, thou sowest not the body that shall be produced, but naked grain it may be of wheat, or some of the rest;

38 but God gives it a body as it pleased him, and to each of the seeds its own body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but one indeed of men, but another flesh of beasts, but another flesh of birds, but another of fishes.

40 And there are bodies celestial, and bodies terrestrial; but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for star differs from star in glory.

42 So also the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power:

44 it is sown a psychical body*, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a psychical body, there is also a spiritual body.

* *soma psuchikon* = flesh soulish or *soulish flesh*. ed.

45 So also it is written: The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam a life-giving spirit.

46 But not first the spiritual, but the psychical: after that the spiritual.

47 The first man is from the earth, earthy; the second man, from heaven.

48 As the earthy, such also the earthy; and as the heavenly, such also the heavenly;

49 and as we have worn the image of the earthy, we shall also wear the image of the heavenly.

50 But this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, neither does corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I tell you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruptibility, and this mortal must put on immortality.

54 And when this corruptible shall have put on incorruptibility, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying that is written: Death is swallowed up in victory.

55 Where thy sting, O death? Where thy victory, O death?

56 The sting of death is sin, but the strength of sin is the law.

57 But thanks to God who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 So then, my beloved brethren, become steadfast, immovable, abounding in the work of the Lord always, knowing that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.

1 Corinthians 16

1 But concerning the collection which is for the saints, as I gave order to the churches of Galatia, so also do you.

2 On every first day of the week let each one of you lay by himself, treasuring up whatever he has been prospered, that there be no collections when I come.

3 And when I have come, whomever you may approve, these will I send with letters to bear your favor to Jerusalem;

4 and if it be worth my going also, they shall go with me.

5 But I will come to you when I shall have passed through Macedonia;

6 for I am going through Macedonia, but with you, it may be, I shall remain or even spend the winter, that you may send me forward wherever I may go.

7 For I do not wish to see you now in passing; for I hope to remain some time with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I shall abide in Ephesus till Pentecost;

9 for there has been opened to me a door great and effectual, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timothy come, see that he be with you without fear; for he works the work of the Lord as I also do:

11 let no one therefore despise him. But send him forward in peace, that he may come to me; for I wait for him with the brethren.

12 But concerning Apollos the brother, I exhorted him much to come to you with the brethren; and his will was not at all to come now; but he will come when he shall have opportunity.

13 Watch, stand firm in the faith, act like men, be strong.

14 Let all your deeds be done in love.

15 Now I beseech you, brethren: you know the house of Stephanas, that it is the firstfruit of Achaia, and they have given themselves to the ministry of the saints:

16 that you also submit yourselves to those that are such, and to every one that works with me and labors.

17 But I rejoice at the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus, because they have supplied the want of you;

18 for they have refreshed my spirit and yours. Therefore acknowledge those that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Prisca, with the church that is in their house, salute you much in the Lord.

20 All the brethren salute you. Salute one another with a holy kiss.

21 The salutation of Paul with my own hand.

22 If any one loves not the Lord, let him be accursed. The Lord comes.

23 The grace of the Lord Jesus be with you.

24 My love with you all in Christ Jesus.

Paul to the Corinthians 22 Corinthians 1

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of God, and Timothy the brother, to the church of God which is in Corinth, with all the saints that are in all Achaia.

2 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and God of all comfort,

4 who comforts us in all our affliction, that we may be able to comfort those that are in all affliction through the comfort with which we ourselves are comforted by God;

5 for as the sufferings of Christ abound toward us, so through Christ our comfort also abounds.

6 But whether we are afflicted, it is for your comfort and salvation which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer; and our hope of you is firm: or if we are comforted, it is for your comfort and salvation,

7 knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so also of the comfort.

8 For we do not wish you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning our affliction that came upon us in Asia, that we were exceedingly pressed beyond our strength, so that we despaired even of life;

9 but we ourselves have had in ourselves the sentence of death, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God who raises the dead,

10 who delivered us from so great a death and does deliver, on whom we hope that he will even yet deliver,

11 you also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed on us because of the prayers of many persons, thanks may be given through many on our behalf.

12 For our glorying is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not in carnal wisdom, but in the grace of God, have we conducted ourselves in the world, but more abundantly with you.

13 For we write no other things to you than what you read or even acknowledge; and I hope you will acknowledge even to the end,

14 even as you also acknowledge us in part, that we are your cause of glorying as you also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

15 And in this confidence I intended before to come to you, that you might have a second benefit;

16 and through you to pass into Macedonia, and to come again from Macedonia to you; and by you to be sent forward into Judea.

17 Intending this, then, did I use lightness? Or the things which I intend, do I intend according to the flesh, that there should be with me the yes yes and the no no?

18 But as God is faithful, our word which is toward you is not yes and no.

19 For the Son of God, Christ Jesus, who was preached among you through us-through me, and Silvanus, and Timothy: was not yes and no, but in him was yes.

20 For as many promises of God as there are, in him is the yes, and in him the amen to the glory of God through us.

21 Now he who establishes us with you in Christ, and has anointed us is God,

22 who has also sealed us and given us the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 But I call God as a witness against my soul, that, because I would spare you, I came no more to Corinth.

24 Not that we are lords over your faith, but we are helpers of your joy; for by faith you stand.

2 Corinthians 2

1 But I determined this for myself, that I would not come to you again in sorrow.

2 For if I give you sorrow, who then is he that gives me joy but he that is made sorrowful by me?

3 And I wrote this very thing, that I might not on coming have sorrow from those from whom I ought to have joy, having confidence in you all that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and distress of heart I wrote to you through many tears, not that you might be made sorrowful, but that you might know the love that I have more abundantly toward you.

5 But if any one has caused sorrow, he has not made me sorrowful, but in part, that I may not overcharge all of you.

6 Sufficient for such a one is this punishment that was inflicted by the many:

7 so that on the other hand you should rather forgive and comfort that one, lest exceeding sorrow should swallow up such a one.

8 Wherefore I exhort you to confirm to him your love;

9 for to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether you are obedient in all things.

10 Now to whom you forgive anything, I also forgive; for what I have forgiven, if I have forgiven anything, for your sakes I forgive it in the person of Christ,

11 lest Satan should gain an advantage over us; for of his devices we are not ignorant.

12 But when I came to Troas for the gospel of Christ, and a door was opened to me in the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit because I found not Titus my brother; but taking leave of them I went forth into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks to God, who always causes us to triumph in Christ, and makes manifest the odor of his knowledge through us in every place;

15 for we are to God a sweet odor of Christ in the saved and in the lost:

16 to the one an odor from death to death, to the other an odor from life to life. And for these things, who is sufficient?

17 For we are not as the many that corrupt the word of God, but as from sincerity, but as from God, in the sight of God we speak in Christ.

2 Corinthians 3

1 Do we begin again to commend ourselves? Or need we, as some, letters of commendation to you, or of commendation from you?

2 You are our epistle, written in our hearts, known and read by all men:

3 being made manifest that you are an epistle of Christ, ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God. Not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.

4 But such trust have we through Christ toward God.

5 Not that we are sufficient to think anything from ourselves as of ourselves, but our sufficiency is of God,

6 who also made us sufficient as ministers of the new covenant, not of letter, but of spirit; for the letter kills, but the spirit makes alive.

7 But if the ministration of death in letters, which was engraved on stones, was made in glory, so that the sons of Israel were not able to look steadfastly upon the face of Moses because of the glory of his face, which glory was to be done away,

8 how shall not the ministration of the spirit be in glory?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation is glory, much more does the ministration of the spirit abound in glory.

10 For that which has been made glorious has not been made glorious in this respect because of the excelling glory.

11 For if that which is done away was through glory, much more that which remains is in glory.

12 Having therefore this hope, we use great boldness of speech,

13 and not as Moses put a veil over his face, that the sons of Israel might not look steadfastly to the end of that which was to be done away.

14 But their understandings were hardened. For till this day the same veil in the reading of the old covenant remains, not taken away because in Christ it is done away;

15 but till this day when Moses is read a veil lies over their heart;

16 but when it has turned to the Lord, the veil is taken away.

17 Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, is freedom.

18 But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Lord the Spirit.

2 Corinthians 4

1 Wherefore, having this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not,

2 but have renounced the secret things of shame, not walking in craftiness, nor falsifying the word of God, but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

3 But if our gospel is also veiled, among those that perish it is veiled,

4 among whom the god of this age has darkened the understandings of the unbelieving, that the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, might not shine forth.

5 For not ourselves do we preach, but Christ Jesus the Lord, but ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.

6 For the God who said that out of darkness light should shine, he has shined in our hearts for the shining of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the exceeding greatness of the power may be God's, and not of us:

8 we are pressed in every way, but not straitened; perplexed, but not in despair;

9 persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

10 always bearing about in the body the dying of Jesus, that the life also of Jesus may be made manifest in our body.

11 For we that live are always delivered up to death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus may be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

12 So that death works in us, but life in you.

13 But having the same spirit of faith, according to that which is written: I believed, therefore I spoke; we also believe, and therefore also speak:

14 knowing that 1 he who raised up the Lord Jesus, will also raise us up with Jesus, and present us with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the grace that abounds through: the greater number may multiply thanksgiving to the glory of God.

16 Wherefore, we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward is renewed day by day.

17 For the momentary lightness of our affliction works for us exceeding abundantly an eternal weight of glory,

18 while we look not at the things seen, but at the things not seen; for the things seen are temporal, but those not seen are eternal.

2 Corinthians 5

1 For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, a building from God have we, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to put on over it our house that is from heaven,

3 since, indeed, having been clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in the tabernacle do groan, being burdened, because we do not wish to be unclothed, but clothed upon, that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life.

5 Now he that has wrought us up to this very thing is God, who has also given us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Being confident therefore always, and knowing that being at home in the body we are away from home from the Lord;

7 for by means of faith we walk, not by means of sight:

8 we are confident, I say, and well pleased to be away from home out of the body, and to be at home with the Lord.

9 Wherefore also we make our aim, whether at home or away from home, to be well-pleasing to him.

10 For we must all be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things done in the body according to what he has done, whether good or evil.

11 Knowing therefore the fear of the Lord, we persuade men; but we have been made manifest to God; and I hope also that we have been made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we do not again commend ourselves to you, but are giving you an occasion for glorying on our behalf, that you may have an answer to those who glory in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For if we have been beside ourselves, it is for God: if we are sober, it is for you.

14 For the love of Christ constrains us,

15 because we thus judged, that if one died for all, then all died; and he died for all that they that live should live no longer for themselves, but for him who died and rose for them.

16 So that henceforth we know no one according to the flesh; and even if we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet now no longer do we know him.

17 So that if any one is in Christ, he is a new creature: the old things have passed away, behold, all things have become new.

18 And all things are from God, who has reconciled us to himself through Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation,

19 seeing that God was reconciling to himself a world in Christ, not charging to them their offenses, and deposited in us the word of reconciliation.

20 For Christ, then, we act as ambassadors, as if God is beseeching through us: we pray in behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God.

21 Him that knew no sin made he sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in him.

2 Corinthians 6

1 Now working together with him, we also beseech that you receive not the grace of God in vain

2 (for he says: In an acceptable season I heard thee, and in a day of salvation I helped thee: behold, now is a well-accepted season; behold, now is a day of salvation).

3 Giving no occasion for stumbling in any thing that the ministry be not blamed,

4 but as ministers of God commending ourselves in everything; in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in straits,

5 in stripes, in imprisonment's, in tumults, in labors, in watchings, in fastings,

6 in purity, in knowledge, in longsuffering, in kindness, in the Holy Spirit, in love unfeigned,

7 in the word of truth, in the power of God; through the armor of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,

8 through glory and dishonor, through evil and good report: as deceivers and true;

9 as unknown and well known; as dying; and behold, we live; as chastened and not killed;

10 as sorrowing, but always rejoicing; as poor, but making many rich; as having nothing, and possessing all things.

11 Our mouth has been opened to you. Corinthians, our heart has been enlarged;

12 you are not straitened in us, but you are straitened in your own bowels:

13 now that you may repay me in like manner, I speak as to children, be you also enlarged.

14 Be not yoked with others, unbelievers: for what participation have righteousness and lawlessness? or what communion has light with darkness?

15 and what concord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has a believer with an unbeliever?

16 And what agreement has the temple of God with idols? For you are the temple of the living God, as God has said: I will dwell in them and walk among them, and I will be their God and they shall be to me a people.

17 Wherefore come out from the midst of them, and be separated, says the Lord, and touch not an unclean thing; and I will receive you,

18 and I will be to you a Father, and you shall be to me sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty.

2 Corinthians 7

1 Having therefore these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Receive us: we wronged no man, we corrupted no man, we defrauded no man.

3 Not with a view to condemnation do I speak; for I have said before that you are in our hearts to die and live with.

4 Great is my boldness toward you, great is my glorying concerning you: I have been filled with comfort, I exceedingly abound in joy in all our affliction.

5 For when we came into Macedonia our flesh had no rest, but in every way were we pressed: fightings without, fears within.

6 But God who comforts those that are cast down comforted us in the coming of Titus;

7 and not only in his coming, but also with the comfort with which he was comforted among you, when he told us of your strong desire, your mourning, your zeal for me, so that I rejoiced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry by means of the letter, I do not regret it: though I did regret it (for I see that that letter made you sorry, though for an hour),

9 now I rejoice, not that you were made sorry, but that you sorrowed to repentance; for you sorrowed according to God, that you might receive injury from us in nothing.

10 For sorrow according to God works repentance to salvation not to be regretted; but the sorrow of the world works out death.

11 For behold, this very thing that you sorrowed according to God, what diligence it wrought out in you, yes rather, defense, yes rather, indignation, yes rather, fear, yes rather, strong desire, yes rather,

zeal, yes rather, infliction of punishment. In every respect you have shown yourselves to be pure in this matter.

12 Therefore, although I wrote to you, I wrote not for his sake who had done the wrong, nor for his sake who had suffered the wrong, but that your zeal for us might be made manifest to you in the sight of God.

13 Therefore we have been comforted. But in addition to our comfort we rejoiced exceedingly more at the joy of Titus, because his spirit has been refreshed by you all;

14 for if in anything I boasted of you to him, I was not made ashamed; but as we spoke all things to you in truth, so also our boasting which was before Titus was found to be truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, while he remembers the obedience of you all. How with fear and trembling you received him.

16 I rejoice that I have confidence in you in everything.

2 Corinthians 8

1 But we make known to you, brethren, the grace of God which has been bestowed among the churches of Macedonia,

2 that in a great trial of affliction the excess of their joy and their deep poverty abounded to the riches of their liberality;

3 for according to their power, I testify, and beyond their power, being willing of themselves,

4 with much entreaty beseeching of us the favor and the participation in the ministration which is for the saints,

5 and not as we had hoped, but themselves they gave first to the Lord and to us through the will of God,

6 so that we have besought Titus, that as he had before begun, so also he would complete among you this grace.

7 But as you abound in everything, in faith, and speech, and knowledge, and all diligence, and your love to us, see that you abound also in this grace.

8 Not as a commandment do I speak it, but by means of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love;

9 for you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that you through his poverty might become rich.

10 And I give an opinion in this matter; for this is profitable for you, who began before them not only to do, but also to be willing since last year;

11 but now complete also the doing, that as there was the readiness of willing, so also there may be the completion out of what you have.

12 For if the readiness of mind is present, it is accepted according to what it may have, not according to what it has not.

13 For it is not that there should be ease to others, but burden to you, but by equality: at the present time your abundance may be for their want,

14 that their abundance may be for your want, that there may be equality,

15 as it is written: He that gathered much had nothing over, and he that gathered little had no lack.

16 But thanks to God who is putting the same zeal for you into the heart of Titus;

17 for he accepted indeed the exhortation; but being more zealous, he went to you of his own accord.

18 And we sent with him the brother, whose praise in the gospel is through all the churches,

19 and not that only, but who also was chosen by the churches as our fellow-traveler with this grace which is ministered by us with a view to the glory of the Lord himself, and the manifestation of our readiness of mind,

20 avoiding this: that no one should reproach us in this abundance that is ministered by us;

21 for we provide for things honorable, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have in many things and at many times proved to be diligent, but now much more diligent because of the great confidence he has in you.

23 Whether any one inquire of Titus, he is my companion and fellow-workman for you: or if our brethren be inquired of, they are the apostles of churches, the glory of Christ.

24 Therefore, the proof of your love and of our glorying concerning you, to them you will show in the presence of the churches,

2 Corinthians 9

1 For indeed concerning the relief which is for the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you;

2 for I know your forwardness, of which I boast concerning you to the Macedonians, that Achaia has been ready since last year, and your zeal has roused the greater number.

3 But have sent the brethren, that our boasting concerning you may not be in vain in this respect; that, as I said, you may be ready:

4 lest perhaps if Macedonians come with me, and find you unprepared, we, that we say not you, should be ashamed in this confidence.

5 I thought it necessary therefore to exhort the brethren, that they would go before to you, and make up beforehand your blessing that was promised before, that this may be ready as a blessing, and not as covetousness.

6 But as to this, he that sows sparingly shall also reap sparingly, and he that sows with blessings shall also reap with blessings.

7 Let each one give as he purposes in his heart, not from sorrow or from necessity; for God loves a cheerful giver.

8 And God is able to make every grace abound to you, that you having always all sufficiency in everything, may abound for every good work;

9 as it is written: He scattered abroad, he gave to the poor, his righteousness remains for ever.

10 But he that supplies seed for the sower, and bread for eating, will supply and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness:

11 being enriched in everything for all liberality, which works out through us thanksgiving to God.

12 Because the administration of this service not only supplies the wants of the saints, but also abounds through many thanksgivings to God:

13 as, through the proof which this ministration gives, they glorify God for the subjection that is caused by your confession in respect to the gospel of Christ, and for the liberality of the contribution for them and for all,

14 and by their prayer for you, since they long for you on account of the exceeding grace of God that is in you.

15 Thanks to God for his unspeakable gift.

2 Corinthians 10

1 Now I Paul myself beseech you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in presence indeed am lowly among you, but being absent am bold towards you;

2 but I entreat that I may not when present be bold with that confidence, with which I think to be bold against some who think of us as if we walk according to the flesh.

3 For though walking in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh

4 (for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God for the pulling down of strongholds),

5 casting down reasonings and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and leading captive every thought to the obedience of Christ,

6 and having in readiness to inflict punishment on every failure in obedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do you look on things according to outward appearance? If anyone confides in himself that he is Christ's, let him conclude this again of himself, that as he is Christ's, so also are we Christ's.

8 For even if I should boast somewhat more abundantly of our authority, which the Lord gave us for edification, and not for your destruction, I shall not be made ashamed.

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters.

10 For his letters, say they, are weighty and powerful, but his bodily presence weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such a one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when absent, such are we also in deed, when present.

12 For we dare not number ourselves among or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves; but they, measuring themselves among themselves, and comparing themselves with themselves, are not wise.

13 But we will not boast without measure, but according to the measure of the rule, which God has apportioned to us, a measure to reach even to you.

14 For we do not stretch ourselves too far, as if we do not come to you; for even as far as to you did we come first in the gospel of Christ,

15 not boasting without measure in the labors of others; but having hope, when your faith is increased, to be enlarged among you according to our rule, abundantly,

16 to preach the gospel in regions beyond you, not to boast ourselves in things made ready in another man's line.

17 But he that boasts, in the Lord let him boast;

18 for not he that commends himself is approved, but he whom the Lord commends.

2 Corinthians 11

1 Would that you could bear with some little of my folly; but indeed you do bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband that I may present a chaste virgin to Christ:

3 I fear, however, lest perhaps, as the serpent completely deceived Eve in his craftiness, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

4 For if indeed he that comes preaches another Jesus whom we did not preach, or you receive another spirit which you did not receive, or another gospel which you did not accept, you might well bear with him;

5 for I think that I am in nothing inferior to these very great apostles.

6 If, however, I am rude in speech, yet not in knowledge, but in everything we have made it manifest toward you among all.

7 Or did I commit a sin in abasing myself that you might be exalted, because I preached to you the gospel of God without charge?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages to do you service; and when present with you, though in want, I was a burden to no one;

9 for my want the brethren who came from Macedonia supplied; and in everything I have kept myself from being burdensome to you, and will keep myself.

10 The truth of Christ is in me, that this boasting shall not be stopped in my case in the regions of Achaia.

11 Why? Because I love you not? God knows.

12 But what I do, I will also do, that I may cut off occasion from them that desire the occasion, that in what they boast they may be found even as we.

13 For such as they are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ.

14 And no wonder; for Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light.

15 No great thing, then, if his ministers also transform themselves as ministers of righteousness: whose end shall be according to their works.

16 I say again, let no one think that I am foolish; but if otherwise at least as foolish receive me, that I also may boast myself some little.

17 What I say, I say not according to the Lord, but as in folly, in this confidence of boasting.

18 Since many boast according to the flesh I also will boast.

19 For you bear with the foolish with pleasure, since you are wise;

20 for you bear with it if any one brings you into bondage, if any one devours you, if an one seizes upon you, if any one exalts himself, if any one smite you on the face.

21 To my reproach I say it, that we were weak but in whatever any one is bold, in folly I say it. I also am bold.

22 Are they Hebrews? I also. Are they Israelites? I also. Are they the posterity of Abraham? I also.

23 Are they ministers of Christ? Speak as if beside myself, I more in labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequently, in deaths often;

24 of the Jews five times received forty stripes save one,

25 three times was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, three times have I been shipwrecked, a night and a day; spent I in the deep:

26 in journeying; often, in dangers of rivers, in dangers of robbers, in dangers from my countrymen, in dangers from Gentiles, in dangers

in the city, in dangers in the desert, in danger; in the sea, in dangers among false brethren,

27 in labor and toil, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

28 Apart from things besides these, that which presses upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? Who is ensnared, and I burn not?

30 If I must boast, of the things that concern my infirmities will I boast.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus, who is blessed throughout the ages, knows that I lie not.

32 In Damascus, the governor under Aretas the king guarded the city of the Damascenes, that he might apprehend me;

33 and through a window, I was let down in a basket, through the wall, and escaped his hands.

2 Corinthians 12

1 To boast surely profits me not; for I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I know a man in Christ, fourteen; years ago, whether in the body I know not, or out of the body I know not, God knows, such a one was caught away even to the third heaven.

3 And I know such a man, whether in the body or apart from the body I know not, God knows;

4 that he was caught away into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for man to utter.

5 Concerning such a one I will boast, but concerning myself I will not boast, except in my infirmities.

6 For though I should desire to boast, I shall not be foolish, for I will speak the truth; but I forbear, lest any one should think with regard to me above what he sees me, or hears anything from me.

7 And, lest I might be exalted above measure through the exceeding greatness of the revelations, there was given me a thorn in the flesh, a message of Satan that he might buffet me, that I might not be exalted above measure.

8 Concerning this, three times did I beseech the Lord that it might depart from me.

9 And he said to me: My grace is sufficient for thee; for my power is perfected in weakness. Most gladly; then will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may abide upon me.

10 Wherefore I am well pleased in infirmities, in outrages, in necessities, in persecutions. in straits, for Christ's sake; for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I have become foolish: you have compelled me. For I ought to be commended by you; for in nothing was I inferior to these very great apostles, though I am nothing.

12 The signs indeed of the apostle were wrought out among you in all patience, in signs and wonders and mighty deeds.

13 For what is that in which you were inferior to the other churches, except that I did not become a burden to you? Forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, I am ready, to come to you the third time, and I will not be a burden to you; for I seek not yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay up treasure for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will most gladly spend and be spent for your souls, though the more abundantly I love you, the less I am loved.

16 But be it so, I did not become a burden to you; but, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make gain of you by any one of those that I sent to you?

18 I besought Titus, and with him sent the brother. Did Titus make gain of you? Walked we not in the same spirit? not in the same steps?

19 For a long time you are thinking that to you we are making a defense. In the presence of God in Christ do we speak; but all things, beloved, for your edification.

20 For I fear lest perhaps on coming I shall find you not such as I wish, and I shall be found to you as you do not wish; lest perhaps there be contentions, envyings, wraths, factions, evil-speakings, whisperings, high-mindedness, tumults:

21 lest when I come again my God will humble me with respect to you, and I shall bewail many of them that have sinned before, and have not repented because of the uncleanness, and lewdness, and wantonness which they have committed.

2 Corinthians 13

1 This third time am I am coming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2 I have said before, and I foretell, as when present the second time, also now in my absence, to those who have sinned before and to all the rest, that if I come again. I will not spare.

3 Since you seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, who toward you is not weak, but is mighty in you;

4 for though he was crucified through weakness, yet he lives by the power of God; for we are weak in him, but we shall live with him through the power of God toward you.

5 Try yourselves, whether you are in the faith, prove yourselves: or do you not know yourselves, that Christ Jesus is in you? unless you are disapproved.

6 But I hope that you shall know that we are not disapproved.

7 But we pray to God that you may do no evil, not that we may appear approved, but that you may do what is excellent, though we be as disapproved.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we rejoice when we are weak, and you are strong: this also we pray for, your perfect union.

10 For this reason I write these things while absent, that I may not, when present, use severity, according to the authority which the Lord gave me for edification, and not for destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, rejoice; be perfectly united, be comforted, be of the same mind, live in peace, and the God of love and of peace shall be with you.

12 Salute one another with a holy kiss.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

Paul to the GalatiansGalatians 1

1 Paul an apostle, not of men, neither through man, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 and all the brethren that are with me, to the churches of Galatia.

3 Grace to you and peace from God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father,

5 to whom be glory from age to age: amen.

6 I wonder that you are so soon turning away from him that called you into the grace of Christ, to a different gospel,

7 which is not another, except that there are some that trouble you, and wish to pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though even we or an angel from heaven preach to you a gospel beside that which we preached to you, let him be accursed.

9 As we have said before, even now I say again, if any one preach to you a gospel beside that which you received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now persuade men or God? or seek I to please men? For if I yet pleased men, Christ's servant I should not be.

11 But I make known to you, brethren, the gospel that was preached by me, that it is not according to man;

12 for neither received I it from man, nor was I taught it, but through a revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For you have heard of my former conduct in Judaism, that I exceedingly persecuted the church of God and laid it waste;

14 and I made progress in Judaism beyond many of my own age in my nation, being exceedingly a zealot for the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when he that set me apart from my mother's womb, and called me through his grace, was pleased

16 to reveal his Son in me that I might preach him among the Gentiles, immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood;

17 neither went I up to Jerusalem to those who were apostles before me; but I went away into Arabia, and returned again to Damascus.

18 Then after three years, I went up to Jerusalem to become acquainted with Cephas; and I abode with him fifteen days;

19 but another of the apostles saw I not, except James the brother of the Lord.

20 Now as to the things that I write to you, behold, in the presence of God I lie not.

21 After that I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia,

22 but was not known personally to the churches of Judea that were in Christ;

23 but they had only heard that he that once persecuted us now preaches the faith which he once destroyed;

24 and they glorified God in me.

Galatians 2

1 Then, fourteen years after, I again went up to Jerusalem, with Barnabas, taking with me Titus also;

2 but I went up according to a revelation, and laid before them the gospel that I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them that were of reputation, lest I should run or had run in vain.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised;

4 but* because of brethren that were stealthily brought in, who had come in stealthily to spy out our freedom which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

* Supply: The matter concerning Titus took place.

5 to whom, not even for an hour, did we yield by subjection, that the truth of the gospel might abide with you.

6 But from those that seemed to be something, whatever they were is a matter of no importance with me; God accepts not the person of a man; for to me those that seemed to be something added nothing:

7 but, on the other hand, seeing that I had been entrusted with the gospel of the uncircumcision, as Peter with that of the circumcision;

8 for he that wrought mightily in Peter for the apostleship of the circumcision, wrought mightily in me also for the Gentiles;

9 and, knowing the grace that had been given to me, James and Cephas and John, who seemed to be pillars, gave to me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship, that we should go to the Gentiles, but they to the circumcision:

10 only that we should remember the poor, which very thing I have also been diligent to do.

11 But when Cephas came to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he had been blamed.

12 For before some had come from James, he ate with the Gentiles; but when they had come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing those of the circumcision;

13 and the rest of the Jews also acted hypocritically with him, so that Barnabas also was carried away with their hypocrisy.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly with the truth of the gospel, I said to Cephas before them all: If thou, being a Jew, livest as a Gentile and not as a Jew, why dost thou compel the Gentiles to live as the Jews?

- 15 We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles,
16 but knowing that a man is not justified by works of law, but through faith of Christ Jesus, even we have believed on Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith of Christ, and not by works of law; because by works of law shall no flesh be justified.
17 But if in seeking to be justified in Christ we are found even ourselves to be sinners, is Christ then a minister of sin? it can not be.
18 For if I build again those things that I have destroyed, I constitute myself a transgressor.
19 For through law I died to law, that I might live to God.
20 With Christ have I been crucified: I live; however, no longer I, but Christ lives in me; and the life that I now live in the flesh, I live in the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and delivered himself up for me.
21 I do not set aside the grace of God; for if righteousness is through law, then Christ has died in vain.

Galatians 3

- 1 O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been set forth among you as crucified?
2 This only I wish to learn of you, by works of law did you receive the Spirit, or by the message of faith?
3 Are you so foolish? Haying begun in spirit, are you now made perfect in flesh?
4 Have you suffered so many things in vain? If indeed it be yet in vain.
5 He then that supplies to you the Spirit, and works mighty deeds among you, is it by works of law or by the message of faith?
6 As Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness.
7 Know you then that they that are of faith, these are sons of Abraham.
8 But the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, preached beforehand the gospel to Abraham: In thee shall all the nations be blessed.
9 So then they that are of faith are blessed with believing Abraham.
10 For as many as are of works of law, are under a curse; for it is written: Cursed is every one that abides not in all things that are written in the book of the law, to do them.
11 But that in law no one is justified with God is evident; because the just by faith shall live;
12 and the law is not of faith, but he that does them shall live in them.

13 Christ has bought us off from the curse of the law, having become a curse for us; for it is written: Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree;

14 that upon the Gentiles the blessing of Abraham might come in Christ Jesus, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speak as a man. No one sets aside or adds to a covenant when confirmed, though it be a man's.

16 Now to Abraham were the promises spoken and to his offspring. It does not say: And to offsprings, as of many, but as of one: And to thy offspring, who is Christ.

17 But this I say: A covenant confirmed by God, the law which was four hundred and thirty years after does not annul, so as to make the promise of no effect.

18 For if the inheritance is of law, it is no longer of promise; but God has given it as a favor to Abraham through promise.

19 Why then the law? Because of transgressions was it added, till the offspring should come, to whom the promise has been made, having been appointed through angels, in the hand of a mediator.

20 Now there is no mediator of one, but God is one.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God? It cannot be. For if a law had been given that could have made alive, verily righteousness would have been by law:

22 but the Scripture has shut up all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to those that believe.

23 But before faith came we were kept in guard under law, shut up for the faith that was to be revealed.

24 So, then, the law was our pedagogue* to Christ, that we might be justified by faith;

* Pedagogue—a servant that led his master's children to school.

25 but since faith has come we are no longer under a pedagogue.

26 For you are sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus;

27 for as many of you as were baptized into Christ, put on Christ.

28 There is not Jew, neither Greek; there is not servant, neither freeman; there is not male and female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 But if you are Christ's, then are you Abraham's posterity, heirs according to promise.

Galatians 4

1 But I say, as long as the heir is a minor, he differs nothing from a servant, though he is lord of all;

2 but is under tutors and stewards till the time appointed by the father.

3 So also we, when we were minors, were in bondage under the elements of the world;

4 but when the fulness of the time had come. God sent forth his Son, born of a woman, born under law,

5 that he might buy off those under law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

6 And because you are sons. God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying: Abba, Father.

7 So then thou art no longer a servant, but a son; and if a son, an heir also through God.

8 But then, indeed, not having known God, you were in bondage to them that by nature are not gods:

9 now, however, having known God, rather having been known by God, how turn you again to the weak and poor elements, to which you desire again to be in bondage?

10 You observe days and months and seasons and years.

11 I am afraid of you lest perhaps I have bestowed on you labor in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, become as I am, for I was as you are. You have injured me in nothing;

13 but you know that because of weakness of the flesh I preached to you the gospel formerly,

14 and my trial that is in my flesh you did not despise, neither loathe, but you received me as an angel of God, as Christ Jesus.

15 What, then, was your happiness? for I testify for you that if possible you would have pulled out your eyes and given them to me.

16 So, then, have I become your enemy because I tell you the truth?

17 They are zealous for you, not honorably: yes, they desire to exclude you, that you may be zealous for them.

18 But it is honorable to be zealous in what is honorable, always, and not only when I am present with you.

19 My little children, for whom I again suffer the pains of childbirth till Christ be; formed in you,

20 I was wishing, however, to be, present with you now, and to change my voice, for I am in doubt with regard to you.

21 Tell me, you that desire to be under law, do you not understand the law?

22 for it is written that Abraham had two sons, one by the maidservant and one by the free woman.

23 But the one by the maidservant was born according to the flesh, that by the free woman through the promise.

24 Which things are allegorized; for these are two covenants, one indeed from Mount Sinai, bringing forth for bondage, which is Hagar.

25 For this Hagar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and corresponds to the present Jerusalem, for she is in bondage with her children.

26 But the Jerusalem above is free, which is the mother of us all;

27 for it is written: Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not, break forth and cry out, thou that travailest not, for many more are the children of the deserted, than of her that had the husband.

28 But you, brethren, as Isaac, are children of promise.

29 But as then he that was born according to the flesh persecuted him that was born according to the spirit, so also now.

30 But what says the Scripture? Cast out the maidservant and her son; for the son of the maidservant shall not be heir with the son of the free woman.

31 Wherefore, brethren, we are not children of the maidservant, but of the free woman.

Galatians 5

1 In the freedom with which Christ has freed us, stand fast, and be not again subject to the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say to you, that if you be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 But I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

4 You have withdrawn from Christ, whoever of you are justified in law: you have fallen from grace.

5 For we, through the Spirit, by faith wait for the hope of righteousness.

6 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision, but faith working through love.

7 You were running well: who hindered you, that you should not obey the truth?

8 The credulity is not of him that calls you.

9 A little leaven leavens the whole mass.

10 I have confidence in you in the Lord, that you will have no other mind; but he that troubles you shall bear the condemnation, whoever he be.

11 But I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why am I yet persecuted? Then has the offense of the cross ceased.

12 I would that they that subvert you would even cut themselves off.

13 For you, brethren, were called for freedom: only use not your freedom as an occasion for the flesh, but through love serve one another.

14 For the whole law has been fulfilled in one word, in this: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.

15 But if you bite and devour one another, see that you be not destroyed one by another.

16 But, I say, walk in the Spirit and you shall not fulfill the desire of the flesh.

17 For the flesh has desires against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these array themselves one against the other, so that you can not do the things that you would.

18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law.

19 But the works of the flesh are manifest, which are lewdness, uncleanness, wantonness,

20 idolatry, witchcraft, enmities, strife, emulation, wraths, contentions, divisions, heresies,

21 envyings, drunkenness, revellings, and things like these; as to which I foretell you as I have also said before, that those that do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23 meekness, self-control: against such things there is no law.

24 But they that are Christ Jesus' have crucified the flesh with the passions and the desires.

25 If we live in the Spirit, in the Spirit also let us walk.

26 Become not vainglorious, provoking one another, envying one another.

Galatians 6

1 Brethren, if a man shall have been also overtaken in any fault, do you that are spiritual restore such a one in the spirit of meekness, considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Bear the griefs of one another, and so fulfil the law of Christ.

3 For if any one thinks himself to be something, being nothing, he deceives himself. But let each one prove his own work, and then shall he have cause of boasting in regard to himself, and not in regard to another:

5 for each one shall bear his own burden.

6 But let him that is instructed in the word communicate to him that instructs, in all good things.

7 Be not deceived, God is not mocked. For whatever a man sows, this also shall he reap;

8 for he that sows for his own flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption, but he that sows for the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life eternal.

9 But let us not be weary in doing that which is beautiful; for in the proper time we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 Therefore, as we I have opportunity, let us do good to all, but especially to those of the household of faith.

11 See in how large letters* I have written to you with my own hand.

* The form of the Greek requires us to understand that Paul wrote in large letters for emphasis, as we sometimes use capitals.

12 As many as wish to make a fair show in the flesh, these compel you to be circumcised, only that they are not persecuted for the cross of Christ.

13 For neither do they themselves that are circumcised keep the law, but they wish you to be circumcised that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But may it not happen to me that I glory except in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom the world has been crucified to me, and I to the world;

15 for neither circumcision is anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk by this rule, peace upon them and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 Finally, let no one give me trouble; for I bear in my body the marks of Jesus.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, brethren: amen.

Paul to the EphesiansEphesians 1

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of God, to the saints that are [in Ephesus] and to the faithful in Christ Jesus.

2 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who blessed us in every spiritual blessing in the heavenly things in Christ,

4 as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him,

5 having in love predestinated us for the adoption of sons to himself through Jesus Christ, according to the good pleasure of his will,

6 for the praise of the glory of his grace, in which he has graced us in the Beloved,

7 in whom we, have redemption through his blood, the remission of offenses, according to the riches of his grace,

8 which he made to abound to us in all wisdom and prudence,

9 having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he purposed in himself,

10 for a dispensation of the fulness of the seasons, to gather together for himself all things in Christ, things in the heavens and things on the earth, in him,

11 in whom also we have obtained inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things according to the counsel of his will,

12 in order that we should be for the praise of his glory, who before trusted in Christ:

13 in whom you also trusted, having heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, in whom also having believed, you were sealed with the Spirit of promise, the Holy,

14 who is the earnest of our inheritance in order to the redemption of the purchased possession, for the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, having heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and your love for all the saints,

16 cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and of revelation in the acknowledgment of him,

18 that the eyes of your heart being enlightened, you may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

19 and what the exceeding greatness of his power toward us that believe according to the energy of the might of his strength,
20 which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and caused him to sit at his right hand in the heavenly places,
21 far above every principality and authority and power and lordship and every name that is named, not only in this age, but also in that to come,
22 and subjected all things under his feet, and gave him as the head over all things to the church,
23 which is his body, the fulness of him that fills all in all.

Ephesians 2

1 And you being dead to your offences and sins,
2 in which you formerly walked according to the age of this world, according to the prince of the authority of the air, the spirit that now works in the sons of disobedience,
3 among whom we all also lived formerly in the desires of our flesh, doing the wishes of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath as the rest also;
4 but God being rich in mercy, because of his great love with which he loved us,
5 even us being dead to offenses he made alive with Christ — by grace are you saved —
6 and raised us up and made us sit together in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus,
7 that he might show in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness to us in Christ Jesus.
8 For by grace are you saved through faith; and this not of you, the gift of God;
9 not of works, lest any one should boast;
10 for we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them.
11 Wherefore remember that formerly you Gentiles in the flesh — who are called Uncircumcision by that called Circumcision in the flesh, made with hands —
12 that you were at that time without Christ, alienated from the polity of Israel, and strangers to the covenants of promise, not having hope, and without God in the world;
13 but now in Christ Jesus you, who were formerly far off, have become near in the blood of Christ.
14 For he is our peace, who has made both one, and broken down the middle wall of separation,

15 the enmity, having in his flesh caused to cease the law of commandments in ordinances, that the two he might create in himself one, a new man, making peace;

16 and might reconcile both in one body to God through the cross, having in it put to death the enmity;

17 and he came and preached peace to you the far off, and peace to the near,

18 for through him we both have access in one Spirit to the Father.

19 Therefore, then, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but you are fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God,

20 having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being the chief cornerstone;

21 in whom all the building fitly framed together grows into a holy temple in the Lord:

22 in whom you also are builded together for a dwelling-place of God in Spirit.

Ephesians 3

1 For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for you Gentiles,

2 if indeed you have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which was given to me for you,

3 that according to revelation was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief,

4 by which you may be able, when you read, to understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ;

5 which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it is now revealed to his holy apostles and prophets in the Spirit:

6 that the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel,

7 of which I became a minister according to the gift of the grace of God, which was given to me according to the energy of his power.

8 To me who am far the least of all the saints was this grace given, that I might preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ,

9 to enlighten all men as to what is the dispensation of the mystery that has been hid from the ages in God, who created all things;

10 that there might be made known now to the principalities and the authorities in the heavenly regions, through the church, the much-diversified wisdom of God,

11 according to the purpose of the ages, which he established in Christ Jesus our Lord,

12 in whom we have boldness and access in confidence through the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I beseech that you faint not in my afflictions for you, which are your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees to the Father,

15 from whom all the family in the heavens and on the earth is named,

16 that he may grant to you according to the riches of his glory, that with power you may receive strength, through the Spirit, into the inner man,

17 that Christ may dwell, through faith, in your hearts,

18 that you, being rooted and founded in love, may be able to comprehend with all the saints what is the breadth and length and depth and height,

19 and to know the love of Christ that passes knowledge, that you may be filled to* all the fulness of God.

* That is, till you attain to the fulness of God.

20 Now to him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us,

21 to him be glory in the church in Christ Jesus through all the generations of the age of ages: amen.

Ephesians 4

1 I therefore the prisoner in the Lord beseech you, that you walk in a manner worthy of the calling with which you were called;

2 with all lowliness of mind and meekness, with longsuffering, bearing with one another in love:

3 giving diligence to keep the oneness of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 One body and one Spirit, even as you were called in one hope of your calling;

5 one Lord, one faith, one baptism:

6 one God and Father of all, who is over all and through all and in all.

7 But to each one of us was given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he says: Having ascended on high he led captivity captive and gave gifts to men.

9 But this: He ascended; what is it but that he also descended into the lower regions of the earth?

10 He that descended is the same that ascended far above all the heavens, that he might fill all things.

11 And he gave some apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, some pastors, and teachers,

12 for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the building up of the body of Christ,

13 till we all come into the oneness of the faith, and of the acknowledgment of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ;

14 that we be no longer children, tossed and carried about by every wind of teaching in the sleight of men, in craftiness used with a view to the art of deception:

15 but speaking truth in love may grow up into him in all things, who is the head, Christ;

16 from whom all the body, fitly framed together and compacted through every joint of supply, according to the energy in the measure of each part, makes increase of the body for the building up of itself in love.

17 This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you walk no longer as the rest of the Gentiles also walk in the vanity of their mind, 18 being darkened in understanding, alienated from the life of God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardness of their heart:

19 who, being past feeling, have delivered themselves up to lasciviousness for the working of all uncleanness in their greediness.

20 But you did not so learn Christ,

21 if indeed you heard him and in him were taught as the truth is in Jesus,

22 that you put off, according to the former behavior, the old man who is corrupt according to the deceitful desires;

23 but be renewed in the spirit of your mind,

24 and put on the new man which, according to God, has been created in righteousness and holiness of truth.

25 Wherefore having put away what is false, speak truth each one with his neighbor; for we are members one of another.

26 Be angry and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath,

27 neither give place to the devil.

28 Let him that steals, steal no more, but rather let him labor, making with his hands that which is good, that he may have to distribute to him that has need.

29 Let no corrupt word proceed out of your mouth, but if any is good for needful edification, that may give grace to the hearers.

30 And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, in which you have been sealed for a day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness, and anger, and wrath, and clamor, and blasphemy, be taken away from you, with all malice.

32 But become kind one toward another, compassionate, forgiving one another as God also in Christ forgave you.

Ephesians 5

1 Become, therefore, imitators of God, as beloved children,

2 and walk in love, as Christ also loved us, and delivered himself up for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for an odor of a sweet smell.

3 But lewdness, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let them not be named among you, as it becomes saints,

4 and filthiness and foolish talking or jesting, which are not becoming, but rather giving of thanks.

5 For this you know, that no lewd, or unclean person, or covetous man, who is an idolater, has inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

6 Let no one deceive you with vain words; for because of these things comes the wrath of God upon the sons of disobedience.

7 Become not therefore partakers with them.

8 For you were formerly darkness, but now light in the Lord: walk as children of light —

9 for the fruit of light is in all goodness and righteousness and truth —

10 proving what is acceptable to the Lord;

11 and have no communication with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather even reprove them.

12 For the things done by them in secret, it is a shame even to speak of; but all things that are reprovèd are made manifest by light; for everything that is made manifest is light.

14 Wherefore he says: Awake, thou that sleepest, and rise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

15 See, therefore, how exactly you walk, not as unwise, but as wise,

16 redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

17 Therefore become not foolish, but understand what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunk with wine, in which is revelry; but be filled in Spirit;

19 speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs; singing and chanting in your heart to the Lord;

20 giving thanks always to the God and Father for all things, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ:

21 being subject one to another in the fear of Christ.

22 Let wives be subject to their own husbands as to the Lord;

23 for the husband is the head of the wife, as Christ also is the head of the church, himself the saviour of the body.

24 But as the church is subject to Christ, so also the wives to their husbands in everything.

25 Husbands, love your wives, as Christ also loved the church, and delivered himself up for it,
26 that he might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the bath of water in the word,
27 that himself might present to himself the glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish.
28 So ought men to love their own wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself;
29 for no one ever yet hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, as Christ also the church;
30 for we are members of his body, of his flesh and of his bones.
31 For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall I be one flesh.
32 This mystery is great; but I speak in regard to Christ and the church.
33 Nevertheless, do you each one of you so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife see that she reverence her husband.

Ephesians 6

1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord; for this is right.
2 Honor thy father and mother, which is the first commandment with a promise,
3 that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.
4 And, you fathers, provoke not your children to wrath, but bring them up in the training and admonition of the Lord.
5 Servants, obey your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in the simplicity of your heart as to Christ;
6 not according to eye-service as pleasing men, but as servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the soul;
7 with good will doing service as to the Lord and not to men:
8 knowing that whatever good thing any one does, for this he shall receive from the Lord, whether he be bond or free.
9 And, you masters, do the same thing towards them, forbearing threatening, knowing that the Lord of both them and of you is in the heavens, and there is no respect of persons with him.
10 Finally, be strong in the Lord and in the might of his strength.
11 Put on the whole armor of God, so that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil;
12 for we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against the principalities, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against bands of wicked spirits in the heavenly regions.

13 Wherefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having wrought out all things, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having put on the breastplate of righteousness,

15 and having your feet shod with the readiness of the gospel of peace;

16 over all taking up the shield of faith, with which you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one.

17 And receive the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God;

18 through every prayer and supplication, praying at every season in spirit, and in it being watchful in all perseverance and supplication for all the saints,

19 and for me, that speech may be given to me in the opening of my mouth, that I may in boldness make known the mystery of the gospel,

20 for which I am an ambassador in a chain, that in it I may speak boldly as I ought to speak.

21 But that you also may know my affairs, how I do, Tychicus, the beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, will make known all things to you:

22 whom I have sent to you for this very purpose, that you may know what concerns us, and that he may comfort your hearts.

23 Peace to the brethren and love with faith from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Grace with all those that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.

Paul to the PhilippiansPhilippians 1

1 Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ Jesus, to all the saints in Christ Jesus, that are in Philippi, with the bishops and deacons.

2 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thank my God on every remembrance of you,

4 always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy,

5 for your contribution for the gospel from the first day till now,

6 having confidence in this very thing, that he that began a good work in you will accomplish it till the day of Christ Jesus,

7 as it is right for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart, that all of you are both in my bonds and in my defense and confirmation of the gospel, partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my witness, how I long after you all in the bowels of Christ Jesus.

9 And I pray for this, that your love may abound yet more and more in all knowledge and understanding,

10 that you prove the things that are excellent, that you may be pure and without offense to the day of Christ,

11 having been filled with the fruit of righteousness, which is through Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God.

12 But I wish you to know, brethren, that what has happened to me has turned out rather to the furtherance of the gospel,

13 so that my bonds have become manifest in Christ in the whole of the pretorium, and in all other places,

14 and the greater number of the brethren in the Lord, having confidence in my bonds, are more abundantly bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some both because of envy and strife, some also because of good will, preach Christ:

16 the one part from love, knowing that I am appointed to the defense of the gospel,

17 the other from contention announce Christ not sincerely, thinking to awake affliction to my bonds.

18 What then? Yet in every way, whether in pretense or in truth, Christ is announced, and in this I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice;

19 for I know that this will turn out to me for salvation through your prayer and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 according to my earnest expectations and hope that in nothing shall I be ashamed, but in all boldness, as at all times, even now

Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether through life or through death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22 But if to live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my work, and what I shall choose I know not.

23 But I am in a strait between two, having the desire to depart and be with Christ; for this is far better:

24 yet to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your advancement, and the joy of your faith,

26 that your rejoicing may be abundant in Christ Jesus, in me, through my coming again to you.

27 Only conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you or be absent I shall hear of your affairs, that you stand fast in one spirit, with one soul striving together for the faith of the gospel,

28 and in nothing terrified by the adversaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition, but of your salvation, and this from God;

29 for to you has been graciously given in behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for him,

30 having the same contest which you saw in me and now hear to be in me.

Philippians 2

1 If therefore there is any exhortation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies,

2 fulfil my joy that you think the same thing, having the same love, being of one soul, thinking the one thing,

3 nothing according to contention, neither according to vainglory, but in lowliness of mind esteeming one another better than yourselves,

4 not considering each of you your own things, but each of you also the things of others.

5 For let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus,

6 who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God,

7 but he emptied himself, taking the form of a servant, having been born in the likeness of men; and found in fashion as a man,

8 he humbled himself, having become obedient even to death, and the death of the cross.

9 Wherefore God also highly exalted him and gave him a name that is above every name,

10 that in the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those in the heavens and those on the earth and those under the earth,

11 and every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 So then, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, with fear and trembling work out your own salvation;

13 for it is God that works in you both to will and to work for* his good pleasure.

*That is, because he is pleased so to do.

14 Do all things without murmurings and disputings,

15 that you may become blameless and harmless, children of God, unrebukable in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom you shine as lights in the world,

16 holding forth the word of life, for my rejoicing till the day of Christ, that I ran not in vain, neither labored in vain.

17 But if I am even poured out upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I rejoice, and rejoice with you all;

18 and for the same do you also rejoice, and rejoice with me.

19 But I trust in the Lord to send Timothy to you soon, that I may be of good cheer by knowing of your affairs.

20 For I have no one of a like soul, who will sincerely care for your affairs;

21 for all seek their own, not the things of Christ Jesus.

22 But you know the proof of him, that as a child for a father he served with me for the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send as soon as I know certainly of my matters;

24 but I have confidence in the Lord that I myself also will come soon.

25 But I thought it needful to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and fellow-worker and fellow-soldier, but your apostle and minister to my need,

26 because he was longing after you all and greatly grieved, because you had heard that he was sick.

27 For he was sick near to death; but God had mercy on him, and not on him only, but on me also, that I might not have sorrow on sorrow.

28 More diligently therefore did I send him, that on seeing him again you might rejoice and I be less sorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all joy, and hold such in honor.

30 for because of the work he came near to death, not regarding his life, that he might fill up that which was wanting of your service to me.

Philippians 3

1 Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not burdensome, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of the dogs, beware of the evil-workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, who worship God in spirit, and glory in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh,

4 though indeed I have confidence in the flesh. If any other one thinks that he has confidence in the flesh, I more:

5 circumcised the eighth day, of the race of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews, according to law a Pharisee,

6 according to zeal persecuting the church, according to the righteousness that is in law having been blameless.

7 But the things that were gain to me, these I have counted loss for Christ.

8 Yes, indeed, then I even count all things to be loss for the excellence of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, for whom I suffered the loss of all things, and count them to be refuse, that I may gain Christ,

9 and be found in him, not having my righteousness which is of law, but that through faith of Christ, the righteousness of God on faith,

10 that I may know him and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of his sufferings, being conformed to his death.

11 if by any means I may attain to the resurrection from the dead.

12 Not that I have already grasped [the prize] or have already become perfect, but I am pursuing if I also may apprehend, because I was also apprehended by Christ.

13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended;

14 but one thing I do; forgetting the things that are behind, and stretching myself forward to those that are before, I press along the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as are perfect, have this mind; and if as to anything you have a different mind. God will reveal even this to you;

16 but to what we have attained, walk by the same.

17 Become imitators of me, brethren, and consider those that so walk, as you have us for an example.

18 For many walk, of whom I told you, and now tell you, even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ,

19 whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.

20 For our commonwealth is in the heavens, whence we look for a Saviour, also the Lord Jesus Christ,

21 who shall transform the body of our humiliation, that it may be like the body of his glory, according to the energy of his ability, even to subdue all things to himself.

Philippians 4

1 So then, my brethren beloved and longed for, my joy and my crown, so stand fast in the Lord, beloved.

2 I exhort Euodia and I exhort Syntyche, that they have the same mind in the Lord.

3 Yes, I beseech thee also, true yokefellow, aid these women, who aided me in the gospel, with Clement also and the rest of my fellow-laborers, whose names are in the book of life.

4 Rejoice in the Lord always: again I say: Rejoice.

5 Let your moderation be known to all men: the Lord is near.

6 Be anxious for nothing, but in everything, by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God.

7 And the peace of God, which passes all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever honorable, whatever right, whatever pure, whatever lovely, whatever of good report, if there is any virtue, and if any praise, think on these things;

9 what things you have both learned and received and heard and seen in me, these do; and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at length you have flourished* in your care for me; in which you also cared, but lacked opportunity.

*A figure from the putting forth of leaves.

11 Not that I speak in respect to want; for I have learned in what condition I am to be content.

12 I know how to be abased, I know also how to abound: in everything and in all things I have been instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer want.

13 I have strength for all things in him that gives me power.

14 Nevertheless you did well in communicating with my affliction.

15 But you also know, Philippians, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me as to an account of giving and receiving, but you only;

16 for even in Thessalonica you sent once and again to my need.

17 Not that I desire the gift, but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But I have all in full and abound; I have been filled, having received of Epaphroditus your gifts, an odor of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

19 But my God will fill all your need according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus.

20 Now to our God and Father be glory from age to age. Amen.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren that are with me salute you.

22 All the saints salute you, but especially they of Caesar's household.

23 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.

Paul to the ColossiansColossians 1

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of God, and Timothy the brother,

2 to the saints that are in Colossae and the faithful brethren in Christ. Grace to you and peace from God our Father.

3 We thank God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you,

4 since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and the love you have for all the saints,

5 because of the hope that is laid up for you in the heavens, of which you heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel,

6 which is present among you, as also in all the world, and is bringing forth fruit and increasing as also among you, from the day you heard and knew the grace of God in truth:

7 as you learned from Epaphras, our beloved fellow-servant, who is faithful in behalf of you, a minister of Christ,

8 who also made known to us your love in the Spirit.

9 Wherefore we also, from the day we heard, cease not to pray for you and to ask that you may be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding,

10 so that you walk in a manner worthy of the Lord, to all pleasing, in every good work bringing forth fruit and increasing in the knowledge of God,

11 in all power made powerful according to the might of his glory for all patience and longsuffering, with joy,

12 giving thanks to the Father who made us fit for the portion of the inheritance of the saints in light,

13 who delivered us from the authority of darkness and translated us into the kingdom of the Son of his love,

14 in whom we have redemption, the remission of sins,

15 who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature,

16 for in him were all things created that are in the heavens and that are on the earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or lordships, or principalities or authorities: all things have been created through him and for him,

17 and he is before all things, and all things in him consist;

18 and he is the head of the body, and the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that he himself might become in all things pre-eminent;

19 for he was well pleased that all the fulness should dwell in him

20 and through him to reconcile all things to himself, having made peace through the blood of his cross, through him, whether things on the earth or things in the heavens;

21 and you being formerly alienated and enemies in mind in the wicked works, now, however, he has reconciled

22 in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and without fault and blameless in his presence;

23 if indeed you continue in faith founded and settled, and not moved away from the hope of the gospel which you heard, which was preached to every creature that is under heaven, of which I Paul became a minister.

24 Now I rejoice in sufferings for you, and, in your stead, I fill up that which remains of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church,

25 of which I became a minister according to the dispensation of God, which was given to me for you to fulfil the word of God,

26 the mystery that having been hid from the ages and from the generations, now, however, has been made manifest to his saints,

27 to whom God wished to make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory,

28 whom we announce, admonishing every man and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ;

29 for which I also labor, striving according to his energy that is active in me in power.

Colossians 2

1 For I wish you to know how great a conflict I have for you and those in Laodicea and as many as have not seen my face in the flesh,

2 that their hearts may be comforted, they being knit together in love, and for all the riches of the full assurance of understanding, for the acknowledgment of the mystery of God,

3 in which are laid up all the treasures of wisdom and of knowledge.

4 But this I say , that no one may beguile you with persuasive words.

5 For though in the flesh I am absent, yet in the spirit I am with you, rejoicing and I beholding your order and the steadfastness of your faith in Christ.

6 As therefore you received Christ Jesus the Lord, in him walk,

7 rooted and builded up in him and strengthened in the faith as you were taught, abounding in it in thanksgiving.

8 Take care that there shall be no one that leads you astray through philosophy and vain deceit, according to the tradition of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not according to Christ,

9 for in him dwells all the fulness of the Godhead bodily,

10 and you are complete in him, who is the head of all principality and authority,

11 in whom you were also circumcised with a circumcision made without hands, in the putting off of the body of the flesh, in the circumcision of Christ,

12 having been buried with him in baptism, in which you were also raised with him through faith in the energy of God who raised him from the dead;

13 and you being dead in the offenses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, he made alive together with him, having forgiven us all offenses;

14 having blotted out the handwriting in ordinances that was against us, which was opposed to us, he also took it out of the midst, having nailed it to the cross:

15 after spoiling principalities and authorities, he made a show of them openly, having triumphed over them in it.

16 Let no one therefore judge you in eating or in drinking or in respect of a feast or of a new moon or of sabbaths,

17 which are a shadow of things to come, but the body of Christ is the substance.

18 Let no one deprive you of your reward by delighting in humility and worship of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by the mind of his flesh,

19 and not holding the head, from whom all the body, through joints and bands, having nourishment, ministered and being knit together, increases with the increase of God.

20 If you die with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why as living in the world are you subject to dogmas, —

21 Touch not, neither taste nor handle, —

22 which things are all to perish in the using, according to the commandments and teachings of men.

23 And these have indeed a show of wisdom in will-worship and humility and austerity of the body, not in any honor for the satisfying of the flesh.

Colossians 3

1 If then you were raised with Christ, seek the things that are above, where Christ is sitting at the right hand of God:

2 think of things that are above, not of things that are on the earth.

3 For you died, and your life has been hid with Christ in God:

4 when Christ, our life, shall be made manifest, then shall you also be made manifest with him in glory.

5 Put to death therefore your members that are on the earth, lewdness, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry;

6 because of which things comes the wrath of God;

7 in which you also walked formerly when you lived in them;

8 but now do you also put off all these, anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy speech out of your mouth:

9 lie not one to another, as you have put off the old man with his deeds,

10 and have put on the new, that is renewed for knowledge according to the image of him that created him,

11 where there is not Greek and Jew, circumcision and uncircumcision, barbarian, Scythian, bondman, freeman, but Christ is all and in all.

12 Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercy, kindness, lowliness of mind, meekness, longsuffering,

13 bearing with one another and forgiving one another, if any one have a quarrel with any, as Christ also forgave you, so also do you;

14 but over all these put on love, which is the bond of perfectness.

15 And let the peace of Christ reign in your hearts, to which you were also called in one body, and become thankful.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly, in all wisdom teaching and admonishing each other, in psalms, hymns, spiritual songs, in gratitude singing in your heart to God;

17 and everything whatever you do in word or in deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

18 Wives, be subject to your husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things; for this is well-pleasing in the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not in eye-service, as pleasing men, but in simplicity of heart, fearing the Lord.

23 Whatever you do, work from the soul as to the Lord, and not to men,

24 knowing that from the Lord you shall receive the reward of the inheritance. Serve the Lord Christ;

25 for he that does wrong shall receive for the wrong that he has done, and there is no respect of persons.

Colossians 4

1 Masters, give to your servants that which is just and equal, knowing that you also have a Master in heaven,

2 Persevere in prayer, watching in it in thanksgiving,

3 praying at the same time also for us, that God would open for us a door of the word to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I also have been bound,

4 that I may make it manifest as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in wisdom toward those who are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be always in grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know of how you ought to answer every one.

7 All things that concern me will Tychicus, the beloved brother and to faithful minister and fellow-servant in the Lord, make known to you,

8 whom I sent to you for this very purpose, that he may know your state, and comfort your hearts,

9 and Onesimus, the faithful and beloved brother, who is of you; they will make known all things here.

10 Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, salutes you, and so does Mark, the nephew of Barnabas, concerning whom you received commandments, —if he come to you, receive him,—

11 and Jesus who is called Justus, who are of the circumcision: these only are my fellow-workers for the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort to me.

12 Epaphras, who is of you, salutes you, a servant of Christ Jesus, always striving for you in prayers, that you may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.

13 For I testify for him that he has great travail for you and for those in Laodicea and those in Hierapolis.

14 Luke, the beloved physician, salutes you, and Demas.

15 Salute the brethren in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church that is in his house.

16 And when the epistle has been read among you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans, and see that you also read that from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus: Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

18 The salutation of Paul with my own hand. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you.

Paul to the Thessalonians 11 Thessalonians 1

1 Paul and Silvanus and Timothy, to the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace to you and peace.

2 We thank God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 incessantly remembering your work of faith, and labor of love, and patience of hope of our Lord Jesus Christ before our God and Father,

4 knowing, brethren beloved of God, your election,

5 because our gospel came not to you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Spirit, and in much assurance, as you know what sort of persons we were among you for your sake.

6 And you became imitators of us and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction with joy of the Holy Spirit,

7 so that you became a pattern to all that believe in Macedonia and in Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but in every place your faith toward God has gone forth, so that we have no need to say anything;

9 for they themselves declare concerning us what manner of entrance we had to you, and how you turned to God from the idols, to serve the living and true God,

10 and to await his Son from the heavens, whom he raised from the dead, Jesus, who delivers us from the coming wrath.

1 Thessalonians 2

1 For yourselves know, brethren, our entrance to you, that it has not been vain;

2 but having suffered before, and having been outraged, as you know, in Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak to you the gospel of God in a great contest.

3 For our exhortation was not from delusion, neither from uncleanness, nor in guile;

4 but as we have been approved by God to be intrusted with the gospel, so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, who proves our hearts.

5 For neither used we at any time words of flattery, as you know; nor a pretext of covetousness. God is witness;

6 neither sought we glory from men, neither from you nor from others, when we could have been burdensome as Christ's apostles;

7 but we were gentle in the midst of you, as if a nurse should nourish her own children,

8 so, having strong affection for you, we were well pleased to impart to you, not only the gospel of God, but our own souls also, because you had become dear to us.

9 For you remember, brethren, our labor and toil: working night and day that we might not burden any one of you, we preached to you the gospel of God.

10 You are witnesses, and God, how holily and righteously and blamelessly we conducted ourselves for you that believe,

11 even as you know how we exhorted, and comforted, and charged you, each one of you, as a father his own children,

12 that you should walk in a manner worthy of God, who calls you into his own kingdom and glory.

13 And for this reason we also thank God without ceasing, because on receiving from us the word of the message of God, you accepted not the word of men, but as it is in truth the word of God, which also works in you that believe.

14 For you, brethren, became imitators of the churches of God that are in Judea in Christ Jesus; for you also suffered the same things from your own countrymen, even as they have from the Jews,

15 who killed both the Lord Jesus and the prophets, and persecuted us, and please not God, and are opposed to all men,

16 forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they may be saved, so as to fill up their sins always. But the wrath has come upon them to completion.

17 But we, brethren, having been bereaved and separated from you for the space of an hour, in presence, not in heart, the more abundantly endeavored to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we wished to come to you, I Paul indeed, both once and again, and Satan hindered us.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing, are not even you before our Lord Jesus at his coming?

20 For you are our glory and joy.

1 Thessalonians 3

1 Wherefore, no longer enduring, we thought good to be left behind in Athens alone,

2 and sent Timothy, our brother, and God's fellow-workman in the gospel of Christ, to establish you and exhort you concerning your faith,

3 that no one should be moved in these afflictions. For yourselves know that we are appointed to this:

4 for even when we were with you, we told you before that we are to be afflicted, as it also came to pass, and you know.

5 For this reason, I also, no longer enduring, sent to know your faith, lest perhaps the tempter had tempted you, and our toil should have been in vain.

6 But Timothy, having just now come to us from you, and brought us good news of your faith and love, and that you have a good remembrance of us always, greatly desiring to see us, even as we also to see you,

7 for this reason we were comforted over you, brethren, in all our distress and affliction through your faith;

8 for now we live if you stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God concerning you, for all the joy with which we rejoice for your sakes before our God,

10 night and day praying exceedingly that we may see your face, and complete what is lacking in your faith?

11 Now he himself, our God and Father, and our Lord Jesus, direct our way to you;

12 and the Lord make you increase and abound in love toward one another and toward all, even as we toward you,

13 in order that he may establish your hearts blameless in holiness before our God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all his holy ones.

1 Thessalonians 4

1 Finally then, brethren, we beseech you and exhort in the Lord Jesus, that as you received from us how you ought to walk and please God, even as you do walk, that you would abound the more.

2 For you know what precepts we gave you through the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, your sanctification, that you abstain from lewdness;

4 that each one of you know how to acquire for himself his own vessel in sanctification and honor,

5 not in the passion of desire, even as the Gentiles who know not God;

6 that no one go beyond and defraud in the matter his brother, because the Lord is an avenger for all such things, as we also told you before, and fully testified.

7 For God called us not for uncleanness, but in sanctification.

8 Therefore, he that rejects, rejects not man, but God, who also gave his Holy Spirit to you.

9 But concerning brotherly love, you have no need that I write to you; for you yourselves are taught of God to love one another;

10 for you also do it toward all the brethren that are in all Macedonia. But we exhort you, brethren, to abound the more,

11 and make it your honor to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we charged you;

12 that you may walk in a becoming manner toward those that are without, and have need of nothing.

13 But we do not wish you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those that have fallen asleep, that you sorrow not as the rest also who have no hope.

14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, so also those that have fallen asleep, will God through Jesus bring with him.

15 For this we say to you in the word of the Lord, that we, the living, who remain over to the coming of the Lord, shall not precede those that have fallen asleep;

16 because the Lord himself, with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God, shall descend from heaven, and the dead in Christ shall arise first;

17 then we, the living, who remain over, shall, together with them, be caught away in clouds to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we always be with the Lord.

18 So then comfort one another in these words.

1 Thessalonians 5

1 But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that I write to you;

2 for yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night.

3 When they say: Peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes upon them, as pain upon her that is with child, and they shall not escape.

4 But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that the day should overtake you as a thief;

5 for you all are sons of light and sons of day; we are not of night, neither of darkness:

6 therefore let us not sleep as do also the rest, but let us watch and be sober.

7 For those that sleep, sleep by night, and those that are drunk are drunk by night;

8 but let us, as we are of day, be sober, having put on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet the hope of salvation;

9 because God did not appoint us to wrath, but to the obtaining of salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ,

10 who died for us that, whether we be awake or asleep, we should live together with him.

11 Wherefore comfort one another, and edify one the other, as you also do.

- 12 But we beseech you, brethren, to know those that labor among you, and preside over you in the Lord, and admonish you,
13 and to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. Be at peace among yourselves.
14 But we exhort you, brethren, admonish the disorderly, encourage the fainthearted, assist the weak, be longsuffering toward all.
15 See that no one render evil for evil to any one, but always pursue that which is good, both toward one another and toward all.
16 Rejoice always,
17 pray without ceasing,
18 in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.
19 Quench not the Spirit,
20 despise not prophesyings.
21 But prove all things, hold fast the excellent:
22 abstain from every appearance of evil.
23 But may the God of peace himself sanctify you wholly, and entire may your spirit and soul and body be kept without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
24 Faithful is he that calls you, who will also do it.
25 Brethren, pray for us.
26 Salute all the brethren with a holy kiss.
27 I adjure you by the Lore that the letter be read to all the holy brethren.
28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

Paul to the Thessalonians 22 Thessalonians 1

1 Paul and Silvanus and Timothy to the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Grace to you and peace from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ,

3 We are bound to give thanks to God always concerning you, brethren, as it is fit, because your faith grows exceedingly, and the love of each one of you all toward one another increases,

4 so that we ourselves glory in you among the churches of God, on account of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and afflictions which you endure,

5 a proof of the righteous judgment of God, that you may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which you also suffer,

6 since it is a righteous thing with God to repay to those that afflict you, affliction,

7 and to you that are afflicted, rest with us, at the revelation of the Lord Jesus from heaven with the angels of his power

8 in naming fire, rendering vengeance to those that know not God and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus;

9 and these shall suffer punishment, an eternal destruction from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of his might;

10 when he shall have come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all that believed (because our testimony to you was believed) in that day.

11 To which end also we pray always for you, that our God may count you worthy of the calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of goodness, and the work of faith in power,

12 that the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you, and you in him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Thessalonians 2

1 But we beseech you, brethren, in respect to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together to him,

2 that you be not so quickly shaken from the right understanding, nor yet be troubled, neither through spirit, nor through word, nor through letter as through us, as that the day of the Lord is at hand.

3 Let no one deceive you in any way, because, unless the apostasy come first, and the man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition,

4 who opposes and exalts himself against every one that is called God, or an object of worship, so that he sits in the temple of God, openly showing himself that he is God.

5 Remember you not that while I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now you know what withholds, that he may be revealed in his own time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity already works, only till he that withholds be taken out of the way;

8 and then shall be revealed the lawless one, whom the Lord Jesus shall destroy with the breath of his mouth, and bring to naught by the appearance of his coming;

9 even him whose coming is according to the working of Satan, in all power and signs and wonders of falsehood,

10 and in all deceitfulness of unrighteousness for those that perish, because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

11 And for this reason God sends them the strength of delusion, that they may believe the lie.

12 that all may be condemned that believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

13 But we are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren beloved by the Lord, that God from the beginning chose you to salvation in sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth,

14 to which he called you through our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 So then, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which you were taught, whether through word or through our letter;

16 and may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and our God and Father, who loved us and gave eternal consolation and good hope in grace,

17 comfort your hearts, and establish you in every good work and word.

2 Thessalonians 3

1 Finally pray, brethren, for us, that the word of the Lord may run and be glorified as also among you,

2 and that we may be delivered from unreasonable and bad men, for not all have faith.

3 But the Lord is faithful, who will establish you, and keep you from the evil one.

4 But we have confidence in the Lord with respect to you, that you both do and will do the things which we give in charge.

5 And may the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God and into the patience of Christ.

6 But we charge you, brethren, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, that you withdraw yourselves from every brother that walks

disorderly, and not according to the tradition which they received from us.

7 For yourselves know how you ought to imitate us, because we were not disorderly among you,

8 neither ate we bread from any one for naught, but in labor and toil working night and day, that we might not burden any one of you:

9 not that we have not authority, but that we might give ourselves as a pattern to you to imitate us.

10 For when we were with you, this we charged you, that if any one will not work, neither let him eat.

11 For we hear of some walking among you disorderly, working not at all, but being busybodies:

12 now such we charge and exhort in the Lord Jesus Christ, that working with quietness they eat their own bread.

13 But you, brethren, be not weary in well doing.

14 And if any one obey not our word through the letter, mark that man, and keep no company with him, that he may be put to shame;

15 and count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now may the Lord of peace himself give you peace always in every way. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with my own hand, which is the token in every letter: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

Paul to Timothy 11 Timothy 1

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus according to the appointment of God our Saviour and Christ Jesus our hope,

2 to Timothy, a true son in the faith. Grace, mercy, peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide in Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some to teach no strange things,

4 neither to give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause questionings rather than a dispensation of God which is in faith:

5 now the end of the charge is love out of a pure heart, and out of a good conscience, and out of faith unfeigned,

6 which some having missed have turned aside to vain talking,

7 desiring to be teachers of law, understanding neither what they say, nor concerning what they strongly affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if any one would use it lawfully,

9 knowing this, that law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 for lewd persons, for sodomites, men-stealers, liars, false swearers, and if any other thing is opposed to healthful teaching,

11 according to the gospel of the glory of the blessed God, with which I have been entrusted.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord who gave me strength, because he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry,

13 who before was a blasphemer, and persecutor, and overbearing; but I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief,

14 and the grace of our Lord was very abundant with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 Faithful is the word and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief:

16 however, for this reason I obtained mercy, that in me first Christ Jesus might show forth the whole of his longsuffering, for a pattern of those who should believe on him to life eternal.

17 Now to the King of the ages, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory from age to age: Amen.

18 This charge I commit to thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies that went before on this. that in them thou mightest war the good warfare,

19 holding faith and a good conscience, which some having thrust away concerning faith have made shipwreck:

20 of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have delivered over to Satan that they may be taught not to blaspheme.

1 Timothy 2

1 I exhort therefore, first of all, that supplications, prayers, intercessions, thanksgivings, be made for all men,

2 for kings and all that are in an eminent station, that we may lead a tranquil and undisturbed life in all godliness and gravity.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour,

4 who wills that all men be saved and come to the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus,

6 who gave himself a ransom for all; the testimony in its proper times;

7 for which I was appointed a preacher and an apostle, I speak the truth, I lie not, a teacher of the Gentiles in faithfulness and truth.

8 I will therefore that the men pray in every place, lifting up holy hands without wrath and disputations:

9 in like manner also, that women in decorous dress adorn themselves with modesty and soberness of mind, not in braided hair and gold, or pearls, or costly raiment,

10 but, which becomes women professing godliness, by means of good works.

11 Let a woman in silence learn in all subjection;

12 but I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over a man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in transgression.

15 But she shall be saved through child-bearing, if they abide in faith and love and holiness with sobriety.

1 Timothy 3

1 Faithful is the saying: If any one aspires to the office of bishop, he desires a good work.

2 The bishop must then be blameless, the husband of one wife, watchful, sober-minded, of good behavior, given to hospitality, apt to teach,

3 not fond of wine, no striker; but gentle, not quarrelsome, not a lover of money;

4 one that rules his own house well — having his children in subjection with all gravity; —

5 but if any one knows not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God? —

6 not a new convert, lest having become conceited he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

7 Moreover he must also have a good report from those that are without, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

8 Deacons must likewise be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy after base gain,

9 holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also be first proved, then let them use the office of a deacon, being blameless.

11 Their wives likewise must be grave, not slanderers, watchful, faithful in all things.

12 Let the deacons be husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

13 For they that have acted well as deacons purchase for themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith that is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I to thee, hoping to come to thee shortly;

15 but if I delay, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and support of the truth.

16 And confessedly great is the mystery of godliness: He who was manifested in flesh, was justified in spirit, seen by angels, preached among the Gentiles, believed on in the world, taken up in glory.

1 Timothy 4

1 But the Spirit speaks expressly that in latter times some shall apostatize from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and teachings of demons,

2 through the hypocrisy of liars, seared as to their own conscience,

3 forbidding to marry, commanding to abstain from meats, which God created to be partaken of with thanksgiving by those that believe and acknowledge the truth.

4 For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be thrown away, being received with thanksgiving;

5 for it is sanctified through the word of God and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou wilt be a good minister of Christ Jesus, nourished in the words of the faith and good teaching which thou hast followed;

7 but profane and old wives' fables reject; and exercise thyself to godliness.

8 For bodily exercise is profitable for little; but godliness is profitable for all things, having the promise of the life that now is and of that to come.

9 Faithful is the word and worthy of all acceptance.

10 For this reason we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, especially of believers.

11 Give these things in charge and teach.

12 Let no one despise thy youth, but become a pattern for the believers, in word, in behavior, in love, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come give attention to reading, to exhortation, to teaching.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee through prophecy with the laying on of the hands of the eldership.

15 Meditate on these things, be engaged in them, that thy advancement may be manifest to all.

16 Give heed to thyself and the teaching, continue in them; for in doing this thou shalt save both thyself and them that hear thee.

1 Timothy 5

1 Rebuke not an aged man, but entreat him as a father, younger men as brethren,

2 older women as mothers, younger women and sisters in all purity.

3 Honor widows that are widows indeed.

4 But if any widow has children or grandchildren, let them learn first to show piety at home, and to requite their parents; for this is acceptable in the sight of God.

5 But she that is a widow indeed and left alone trusts in God, and continues in supplications and prayers night and day;

6 but she that lives in pleasure is dead while she lives.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless.

8 But if any one provides not for his own, and especially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an unbeliever.

9 Let not a widow be taken into the number under sixty years of age, the wife of one husband,

10 well reported of for good works, if she has brought up children, if she has taken care of strangers, if she has washed the saints' feet, if she has relieved the afflicted, if she has diligently followed every good work.

11 But younger widows reject; for when they shall become wanton against Christ, they will marry,

12 having condemnation, because they have set aside their first faith;

13 and at the same time also they being idle learn to wander about from house to house, and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things that they ought not.

14 I will therefore that younger widows marry, bear children, manage the house, give no occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully;

15 for some have already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any believing man or woman has widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be burdened, that it may relieve those that are widows indeed.

17 Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they that labor in word and teaching.

18 For the Scripture says: Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treads out the grain, and: The laborer is worthy of his hire.

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, unless before two or three witnesses.

20 Those that sin rebuke before all, that the rest also may fear.

21 I solemnly charge thee in the sight of God, and Christ Jesus, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without prejudice, doing nothing according to partiality.

22 Lay hands hastily on no one, neither be partaker of other men's sins. Keep thyself pure.

23 No longer drink water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thy frequent infirmities.

24 The sins of some men are manifest beforehand, going before to judgment, but some they also follow after:

25 in like manner also works that are good are manifest beforehand, and those that are otherwise can not be hid.

1 Timothy 6

1 Let as many as are under the yoke as servants, count their own masters worthy of all honor, that the name of God and the teaching be not blasphemed.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather serve them, because they are faithful and beloved who are partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any one teach otherwise, and assent not to healthful words, those of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the teaching which is according to godliness,

4 he is conceited, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and word-fightings, from which come envy, contention, blasphemies, evil surmisings,

5 wranglings of men corrupt in mind, and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a source of gain.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into the world: it is evident that we can carry nothing out;

8 and having food and raiment, with these let us be content.

9 But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and many foolish and hurtful desires, which sink men into destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil, which some in longing after have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, for which thou wast called and didst confess the good confession before many witnesses.

13 I charge thee before God, who makes all things alive, and Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed the good confession,

14 that thou keep the commandment without spot, blameless, till the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 which in his own times he will show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords;

16 who only has immortality, dwelling in light unapproachable, whom no one of men has seen, nor can see: to whom be honor and strength eternal. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in the present age that they be not high-minded, nor trust in the uncertainty of riches, but in God who gives us all things richly for enjoyment;

18 that they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, liberal,

19 treasuring up for themselves a good foundation, for the time to come, that they may lay hold of the real life.

20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane, vain babblings and oppositions of falsely named knowledge,

21 which some professing concerning the faith have erred.

22 Grace be with thee.

Paul to Timothy 22 Timothy 1

1 Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus through the will of God, according to the promise of life that is in Christ Jesus,

2 to Timothy, my beloved son. Grace, mercy, peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers in a pure conscience, that I have unceasing remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears that I may be filled with joy,

5 having taken in memory the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and in thy mother Eunice, and I am persuaded that in thee also.

6 For which cause I put thee in remembrance to kindle up the gift of God, which is in thee through the laying on of my hands.

7 For God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of soberness of mind.

8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, neither of me his prisoner; but suffer evil with the in the gospel, according to the power of God,

9 who saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace that was given us in Christ Jesus before the times of the ages,

10 but is manifested now through the appearing of our Saviour Christ Jesus, who indeed abolished death, and brought life and incorruptibility to light through the gospel,

11 to which I was appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles;

12 for which cause I also suffer these things, but I am not ashamed; for I know in whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed to him to that day.

13 Hold fast the form of healthful words, which thou hast heard from me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus:

14 the excellent trust committed to thee, keep through the Holy Spirit that dwells in us.

15 Thou knowest this, that all those in Asia, of whom are Phygelus and Hermogenes, have turned away from me.

16 The Lord grant mercy to the house of Onesiphorus, because he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

17 but, when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently and found me.

18 The Lord grant to him to find mercy from the Lord in that day. And in how many things he ministered to me in Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

2 Timothy 2

1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus,

2 and the things which thou hast heard from me through many witnesses, these commit to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Suffer affliction with me as a good soldier of Christ Jesus.

4 No one that wars entangles himself with the matters of life, that he may please him that has chosen him to be a soldier.

5 And if any one also contend in the games, he is not crowned unless he contend lawfully.

6 The laboring farmer must first partake of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say; for the Lord will give thee understanding in all things.

8 Keep in memory Jesus Christ raised from the dead, of the posterity of David, according to my gospel,

9 in which I suffer evil, even to bonds as an evil-doer, but the word of God is not bound.

10 For this reason I endure all things for the sake of the elect, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with glory eternal.

11 Faithful is the saying: For if we have died with him, we shall also live with him;

12 if we are patient, we shall also reign with him; if we shall deny him, he will also deny us;

13 if we believe not, he abides faithful; for he can not deny himself.

14 Put them in remembrance of these things, charging them before the Lord not to fight about words, to no profit, for the subverting of the hearers.

15 Study to present thyself to God approved, a workman not to be made ashamed, cutting straight the word of truth.

16 But the profane vain-babblings avoid, for they will increase to a greater degree of ungodliness,

17 and their word will eat as a gangrene. Of whom are Hymenseus and Philetus,

18 who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is already past, and overthrow the faith of some.

19 Nevertheless the firm foundation of God stands fast, having this seal: The Lord knows them that are his, and: Let every one that names the name of the Lord depart from iniquity.

20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth, and some for honor, and some for dishonor:

21 if then any one will cleanse himself from these, he shall be a vessel for honor, sanctified, fit for the Master's use, prepared for every good work.

22 But flee youthful desires, and pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, with those that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But the foolish and unlearned questions reject, knowing that they gender fightings;

24 and the servant of the Lord must not fight, but be gentle towards all apt to teach, patient under evils,

25 in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, if perhaps God may give them repentance to the acknowledgment of the truth,

26 and they may awake to soberness out of the snare of the devil, being taken captive by him at his will.

2 Timothy 3

1 But know this, that in the last days perilous times shall come.

2 For men shall be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, haughty, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

3 without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, without self-control, fierce, that love not the good,

4 traitors, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God,

5 having a form of godliness, but denying its power; from these also turn away.

6 For of such are they that enter into houses, and lead captive silly women burdened with sins, led away by various desires,

7 always learning and never able to come to the acknowledgment of the truth.

8 But as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so also these resist the truth, men corrupt in mind, disapproved concerning the faith.

9 But they shall not proceed further; for their madness shall be manifest to all, as theirs also became.

10 But thou hast followed my teaching, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, love, patience,

11 persecutions, sufferings, such as came on me in Antioch, in Iconium, in Lystra; which persecutions I endured, and out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 And all indeed that desire to live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

13 But wicked men and seducers shall advance to the worse, deceiving and being deceived.

14 But abide thou in the things which thou hast learned and been assured of knowing from whom thou hast learned them,

15 and that from a child thou hast known the holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise to salvation, through faith that is in Christ Jesus.

16 All scripture is by inspiration of God, and is profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness,

17 that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished for every good work.

2 Timothy 3

I charge thee before God, and Christ Jesus, who shall judge the living and dead; I also charge thee by his appearing and his kingdom,

2 preach the word, be urgent in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort, in all longsuffering and teaching.

3 For a time will come when they will not endure healthful teaching, but according to their own desires they will heap up to themselves teachers, having itching ears,

4 and will turn away their ears from the truth, and be turned to fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure evil, do the work of an evangelist, fully accomplish thy ministry.

6 For I am now ready to be poured out, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought the good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith:

8 henceforth there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will give to me in that day, and not to me only, but also to all those that love his appearing.

9 Be diligent to come to me shortly.

10 For Demas has forsaken me, having loved the present age, and has gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia:

11 only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee; for he is useful to me for service.

12 But Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloak, which I left in Troas with Carpus, bring when thou comest, and the books, especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith laid many evil charges against me: the Lord render to him according to his works.

15 Do thou also be on thy guard against him; for he has greatly withstood our words.

16 In my first defense no one was present with me, but all forsook me; may it not be charged against them;

17 but the Lord stood by me, and gave me strength, that through me what is preached might be fully known, and all the Gentiles might hear; and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 The Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and will keep me safe to his heavenly kingdom: to whom be the glory from age to age. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the house of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus remained in Corinth, but Trophimus I left in Miletus sick.

21 Be diligent to come before winter. Eubulus salutes thee, Pudens also, and Linus, and Claudia, and the brethren all.

22 The Lord be with thy spirit. Grace be with you.

Paul to TitusTitus 1

1 Paul, a servant of God, but an apostle of Christ Jesus, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledgment of truth that is according to godliness,

2 in hope of eternal life, which God who lies not promised before the times of the ages,

3 but in his own times manifested his word in what is preached, with which I was intrusted according to the appointment of our Saviour God,

4 to Titus, my true son according to the common faith. Grace and peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou mightest further set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee:

6 if any one is blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children that are not accused of riotous living, nor unruly.

7 For the bishop must be blameless as the steward of God, not self-willed, not soon angry, not fond of wine, no striker, not eager after base gain,

8 but a lover of hospitality, a lover of the good, sober-minded, just, holy, having self-control,

9 holding fast the faithful word according to the teaching, that he may be able, in the teaching that gives health, both to exhort and convince the gainsayers.

10 For there are many and unruly vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision,

11 whose mouths must be stopped: who subvert whole houses, teaching things that they ought not, for the sake of base gain.

12 Some one of them, a prophet of their own, has said: The Cretans are always liars, evil wild beasts, lazy bellies.

13 This testimony is true. For which cause reprove them with severity, that they may be healthy in the faith,

14 not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men that turn away from the truth.

15 To the pure all things are pure; but to the defiled and unbelieving nothing is pure, but both their mind and conscience are defiled.

16 God they profess to know, but in their works they deny him, being abominable and disobedient and, with regard to every good work, disapproved.

Titus 2

1 But speak thou the things that become the teaching that gives health.

2 That aged men be watchful, grave, sober-minded, healthy in faith, in love, in patience:

3 that aged women in like manner be, in behavior, reverent, not false accusers, not addicted to much wine, teachers of what is good,

4 that they teach the young women to love their husbands, to love their children,

5 to be sober-minded, chaste, workers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 The younger men in like manner exhort to be sober-minded,

7 in all things showing thyself an example of good works, in teaching showing uncorruptness, gravity.

8 healthful speech that can not be condemned, that the opponent may be ashamed, having nothing evil to say of us.

9 Servants exhort to be subject to their own masters, to be acceptable to them in all things, not contradicting,

10 not taking a part for themselves, but showing all good faithfulness. that they may adorn the teaching of our Saviour God in all things.

11 For the grace of God that brings salvation to all men has appeared,

12 instructing us, that, denying ungodliness and worldly desires, we should live soberly and righteously and godly in the present age,

13 waiting for the blessed hope, and the appearing of the glory of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ,

14 who gave himself for us that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify for himself a peculiar people, zealous for good works.

15 These things speak and exhort and reprove with all authority: let no one despise thee.

Titus 3

1 Put them in mind to be subject to rulers, to authorities, to obey, to be ready for every good work,

2 to revile no one, to be without contention, gentle, showing all meekness to all men.

3 For we also were once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various desires and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another;

4 but when the kindness and philanthropy of our Saviour God appeared,

5 not by works of righteousness which we had done, but according to his mercy, he saved us through the bath of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit,

6 which he poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Saviour,

7 that having been justified by his grace, we might become heirs according to the hope of life eternal.

8 Faithful is the saying, and concerning these things I will that thou affirm strongly, in order that those that believe in God may be careful to practice good works. These things are honorable and profitable for men;

9 but foolish questions, and genealogies, and strifes, and contentions about law, reject; for they are unprofitable and fruitless.

10 An heretical man, after the first and second admonition, reject,

11 knowing that such a man is perverted, and sins, being self-condemned.

12 When I shall send Artemas to thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me to Nicopolis: for there have I determined to winter.

13 Zenas, the lawyer, and Apollos send forward diligently, that nothing be wanting to them.

14 But let ours also learn to practice honorable works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Salute those that love us in the faith.

16 Grace be with you all.

Paul to PhilemonPhilemon

1 Paul, a prisoner of Christ Jesus, and Timothy the brother, to Philemon the beloved, and our fellow-laborer,

2 and to Apphia the beloved, and Archippus our fellowsoldier, and to the church that is in thy house.

3 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God always, making mention of thee in my prayers,

5 hearing of thy love and faith which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus and for all the saints,

6 that the fellowship of thy faith may become active in the acknowledgment of every good thing that is in us for Christ Jesus.

7 For we, have great gratification and comfort in thy love, because the bowels of the saints have been refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore having great boldness in Christ to command thee what is becoming,

9 because of love I rather beseech, being such a one as Paul an aged man, but now also a prisoner of Christ Jesus,

10 I beseech thee in behalf of my son, whom I have begotten in my bonds, Onesimus,

11 who for some time was unprofitable to thee, but now useful to thee and to me, whom I have sent back.

12 But do thou receive him, that is my own bowels,

13 whom I would have retained with myself, that in thy stead he might minister to me in the bonds of the gospel;

14 but without thy consent I wished to do nothing, that thy good deed might not be as of necessity, but according to free will;

15 for perhaps for this purpose he was separated from thee for an hour, that thou mightest receive him for ever,

16 no longer as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, especially by me, but how much more by thee, both in the flesh and in the Lord.

17 If, then, thou regardest me a partner, receive him as myself.

18 But if in anything he has wronged thee, or owes thee, charge this to me.

19 I Paul have written it with my own hand: I will repay: that I may not say to thee that thou owest even thyself to me.

20 Yes, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in Christ.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I have written to thee, knowing that thou wilt do even more than I say.

- 22 And at the same time also prepare for me a lodging; for I hope that through your prayers I shall be given to you, as a favor.
- 23 Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus, salutes thee,
- 24 also Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow-laborers.
- 25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.

Epistle to the HebrewsHebrews 1

1 God, after having in many parts and many ways spoken in ancient times to the fathers, in the prophets, has in the end of these days spoken to us in his Son,

2 whom he has appointed heir of all things, through whom also he made the ages,

3 who, being the effulgence of his glory and the exact image of his substance, bearing onward also all things by the word of his power, when he had through himself made a cleansing of sins sat down at the right hand of the majesty on high,

4 having become so much superior to angels as the name which he has inherited is more excellent than they.

5 For to which of the angels said he at any time: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? and again: I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

6 And when he shall have brought again the first begotten into the world, he says: And let all the angels of God worship him.

7 And in respect indeed to angels, he says: Who makes his angels winds, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But with respect to the Son: Thy throne, O God, is forever and ever; and: A scepter of rectitude is the scepter of thy kingdom.

9 Thou didst love righteousness and hate iniquity: therefore, O God, thy God has anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

10 And: Thou, Lord, in the beginning didst lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of thy hands:

11 they shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall grow old as a garment,

12 and as a mantle shalt thou roll them up, and they shall be changed, but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

13 But to which of the angels has he said at any time: Sit at my right hand, till I make thy enemies thy footstool?

14 Are they not all ministering spirits sent forth to minister for the sake of those that shall inherit salvation?

Hebrews 2

1 For this reason it is necessary that we give the more earnest heed to the things that have been heard, lest perhaps we glide away from them.

2 For if the word that was spoken through angels became steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward,

3 how shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation? which began to be spoken through the Lord, and was confirmed for us by those that heard,

4 God jointly testifying with them, both by signs and wonders, and various mighty deeds, and distributions of the Holy Spirit, according to his will.

5 For not to angels did he put in subjection the world to come, of which we speak.

6 But one in some place testified, saying: What is man that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man, that thou lookest on him?

7 Thou madest him a little lower than angels, with glory and honor thou didst crown him,

8 thou didst put all things in subjection under his feet. For in having subjected all things to him, he left nothing not subjected to him; but now we see not yet all things subjected to him.

9 But him that was made a little lower than angels we do see, Jesus, because of the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that he by the grace of God might taste of death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the author of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifies and they that are sanctified are all of one; for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 saying: I will declare thy name to my brethren, in the midst of the congregation will I sing hymns to thee.

13 And again: I will put my trust in him. And again: Behold, I and the children that God gave to me.

14 Since then the children partake of flesh and blood, himself also in like manner took part in the same, that through death he might render powerless him that has the power of death, that is, the devil;

15 and deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

16 For surely not angels does he succor,* but the posterity of Abraham he succors.

*To succor—to take hold of in order to save.

17 Whence, it behooved him in all things to be made like his brethren, that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, that he might make expiation for the sins of the people.

18 For in that he himself has suffered being tempted, he is able also to assist those that are tempted.

1 Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of a heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our confession, Jesus,

2 who was faithful to him that appointed him, as Moses also in all his house.

3 For this man has been counted worthy of more honor than Moses, by as much as he that constructed the house has more honor than the house.

4 For every house is constructed by some one, but he that constructed all things is God.

5 And Moses indeed was faithful in all his house as a servant, for a testimony to those things that should afterward be spoken;

6 but Christ is a Son over his own house, whose house we are, if we hold fast the boldness and the glorying of the hope.

7 Wherefore, as says the Holy Spirit: Today, if you hear his voice,

8 harden not your hearts as in the provocation in the day of temptation in the wilderness,

9 where your fathers tempted me by proving and saw my works forty years.

10 Wherefore I was angry with that generation, and said: They do always err in their heart; and they have not known my ways,

11 so I swore in my wrath: They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest perhaps there shall be in any one of you an evil heart of unbelief in apostatizing from the living God,

13 but exhort one another each day, while it is called Today, lest any one of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin;

14 for we have become partakers of Christ, if indeed we hold fast the beginning of the confidence firm to the end.

15 In its being said: To-day, if you hear his voice, harden not your hearts as in the provocation;

16 for who, when they heard, did provoke? yes, did not all that came out of Egypt through Moses?

17 And with whom was he angry forty years? was it not with those that sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness?,

18 And to whom did he swear that they should not enter into his rest, but to those that believed not?

19 And we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

Hebrews 4

1 Let us fear, therefore, lest perhaps, as there remains a promise of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to have come short of it.

2 For we also have had the good news preached to us, even as they; but the word that was heard did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard.

3 For we who have believed are entering into the rest, as he has said: So I swore in my wrath: They shall not enter into my rest, although his works had been finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he has spoken in some place of the seventh day thus: And God rested on the seventh day from all his works.

5 And in this again: They shall not enter into my rest.

6 Since then it remains that some enter into it, and those, that formerly had the good news preached to them, entered not in because of unbelief,

7 again he determines a day, Today, saying in David after so long a time, as has been said before, To-day if you hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

8 For if Joshua had given them rest, he would not after this have spoken of another day.

9 There remains, therefore, a sabbath rest for the people of God.

10 For he that has entered into his rest has also himself rested from his works, as God from his own.

11 Let us therefore be diligent to enter into that rest, lest any one fall after the same example of unbelief.

12 For the word of God is living and energetic, and sharper than any two-edged sword, and piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, of the joints also and the marrow, and is a judge of the thoughts and purposes of the heart;

13 and there is no creature not manifest in his sight, but all things are naked and exposed to the eyes of him, to whom we must give an account.

14 Having therefore a great high priest that has passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast the confession.

15 For we have not a high priest that can not sympathize with our infirmities, but has been tempted in all things like ourselves, without sin.

16 Let us therefore come with boldness to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy, and find grace for seasonable help.

Hebrews 5

1 For every high priest taken from among men is appointed for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins,

2 being able to have compassion on the ignorant and erring, since himself also is compassed with weakness,

3 and because of it he is obliged, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

4 And not to himself does any one take the honor, but being called by God, just as also Aaron.

5 So, also, Christ glorified not himself in having become a high priest, but he that said to him: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee:

6 as also in another place he says: Thou art a priest for ever, according to the order of Melchisedec:

7 who, in the days of his flesh, having with strong crying and tears offered up both prayers and supplications to him who was able to save him from death, and having been heard because of his piety,

8 although he was a Son, learned obedience from the things that he suffered;

9 and having been made perfect, he became, to all those that obey him, the author of eternal salvation,

10 having been addressed by God as high priest according to the order of Melchisedec.

11 Concerning whom we have many things to say, and hard to be explained, since you have become dull of hearing.

12 For while you ought, on account of the time, to be teachers, you again have need that some one teach you what are first principles of the oracles of God, and have need of milk, not of solid food.

13 For every one that partakes of milk is unskilled in the word of righteousness, for he is a babe;

14 but solid food belongs to full-grown men, who because of habit have their senses exercised to the discerning of both good and evil.

Hebrews 6

1 Wherefore passing by the rudimental instruction concerning Christ, let us go onward to the perfection, not again laying a foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

2 of the teaching in respect to baptisms, also of the laying on of hands, also of the resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

3 And this will we do, if indeed God permit.

4 For it is impossible to renew again to repentance those that were once enlightened, and had tasted of the heavenly gift, and had become partakers of the Holy Spirit,

5 and had tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the coming age,

6 and have fallen away, crucifying to themselves the Son of God anew, and putting him to an open shame.

7 For land that drinks up the rain that often comes upon it, and yields herbs fit for those for whose sake it is also cultivated, shares blessing from God;

8 but bringing forth thorns and thistles it is disapproved and near a curse, the end of which is for burning.

9 But concerning you, beloved, we are persuaded better things, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For God is not unrighteous to forget your work, and the love which you showed for his name, in having ministered to the saints, and in ministering.

11 But we desire that each one of you show the same diligence in respect to the full assurance of the hope to the end,

12 in order that you become not slothful, but imitators of those who through faith and longsuffering inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, since he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself,

14 saying: Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee;

15 and so having patiently endured he obtained the promise.

16 For men indeed swear by the greater, and to them an oath for confirmation is an end of all strife:

17 in which God being more abundantly willing to show to the heirs of the promise the immutability of his purpose, interposed with an oath,

18 that by two immutable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we may have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold on the hope set before us,

19 which we have as an anchor of the soul both safe and steadfast and which enters into the part within the veil,

20 whither a forerunner for us has entered, Jesus, having become a high priest forever according to the order of Melchisedec.

Hebrews 7

1 For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him,

2 to whom Abraham also divided a tenth of all, first indeed being by interpretation king of righteousness, and then also king of Salem, which is king of peace,

3 without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but being made like unto the Son of God, abides a priest continually.

4 And consider how great this man was, to whom Abraham the patriarch gave even a tenth of the best of the spoils.

5 And they indeed of the sons of Levi who receive the priesthood have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham;

6 but he that counts not his genealogy from these took tithes of Abraham, and has blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction the less is blessed by the greater.

8 And here indeed men that die receive tithes, but there he that has the testimony that he lives.

9 And, so to speak, even Levi, who receives tithes, has been tithed through Abraham;

10 for he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If indeed, then, perfection was through the Levitical priesthood, for upon it the people received the law, what further need that a different priest should arise according to the order of Melchisedec, and not be called according to the order of Aaron?

12 For the priesthood being changed, there becomes of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, belongs to another tribe, from which no one has given attendance at the altar;

14 for it is evident that our Lord has sprung from Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priests.

15 And it is yet more abundantly evident, if according to the likeness of Melchisedec there arises a different priest,

16 who was made such not according to the law of a carnal commandment, but according to the power of an indissoluble life.

17 For it is testified: Thou art a priest for ever according to the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there takes place indeed a setting aside of the preceding commandment on account of the weakness and unprofitableness of it,

19 for the law perfected nothing, and the introduction of a better hope, through which we draw near to God.

20 And inasmuch as not without the swearing of an oath, for they indeed have become priests without the swearing of an oath,

21 but he with the swearing of an oath by him that said to him: The Lord swore, and will not regret it, Thou art a priest for ever:

22 insomuch has Jesus become the surety of a better covenant.

23 And they indeed, many of them, have become priests, because by means of death they were forbidden to continue;

24 but he, because he continues forever, has a priesthood that does not pass to another;

25 whence, he is able also to save completely those that come to God through him, since he lives always to make intercession for them.

26 For such a high priest also became us, holy, harmless, undefiled, separated from sinners, and having become higher than the heavens, 27 who has no daily necessity, as the chief priests, to offer up sacrifices first for his own sins, then for those of the people; for this he did once for all, when he offered up himself.

28 For the law appoints men chief priests, that have infirmity, but the word of the oath, which was since the law, appoints the Son, who has been perfected forever.

Hebrews 8

1 Now in respect to the things spoken, the main point is: we have such a high priest who took his seat at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens,

2 a minister of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, not man.

3 For every high priest is appointed to offer both gifts and sacrifices; whence, it is necessary that this one also have something that he can offer.

4 For if indeed he were on earth, he would not even be a priest, as there are those that offer gifts according to the law,

5 who serve a copy and shadow of the heavenly things, as Moses was admonished when about to complete the tabernacle: For see, says he, that thou make all things according to the pattern that was shown to thee in the mount;

6 but now has he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which has been established upon better promises.

7 For if that first covenant had been faultless, no place would have been sought for a second.

8 For finding fault with them he says: Behold, days are coming, says the Lord, and I will make with the house of Israel and the house of Judah a new covenant,

9 not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, says the Lord.

10 Because this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord, Putting my laws into their understanding, I will also write them on their hearts, and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach each one his fellow-citizen, and each one his brother, saying: Know the Lord; for all shall know me from the least of them to the, greatest of them.

12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he says: A new, he has made, the first antiquated ; and that which is antiquated and growing old is ready to disappear.

Hebrews 9

1 Indeed, then, even the first covenant had ordinances of service, and the sanctuary belonging to this world.

2 For a tabernacle was constructed, the first, in which was the candlestick, and the table, and bread of the presence, which is called sanctuary.

3 But beyond the second veil, the tabernacle that is called the holy of holies,

4 which had the golden altar of incense, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, in which was the golden pot that held the manna, and the rod of Aaron that budded, and the tables of the covenant;

5 but above it cherubim of glory shadowing the mercy-seat: concerning which things we can not now speak particularly.

6 And these things having been thus put in order, into the first tabernacle indeed the priests always go accomplishing the services,

7 but into the second the high priest alone once during the year, not without blood, which he offers for himself and the errors of the people,

8 the Holy Spirit signifying this, that the way into the sanctuary has not yet been made manifest while the first tabernacle is yet standing,

9 which is a figure for the time present, according to which are offered both gifts and sacrifices that are not able to perfect as pertains to the conscience him that serves,

10 only in connection with meats and drinks and different immersions, ordinances of the flesh imposed till the time of reformation.

11 But Christ having come, a high priest of the coming good things, through the greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is, not of this creation,

12 neither through the blood of goats and calves, but through his own blood entered once for all into the holy places, having obtained eternal redemption.

13 For if the blood of goats and bulls, and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling the defiled sanctifies in respect to the purification of the flesh,

14 how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God.

15 And for this reason he is the mediator of the new covenant, that death, having taken place for the redemption of transgressions that were under the first covenant, they that have been called may receive the promises of the eternal inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, it is necessary that the death of the testator be brought in;

17 for a testament is valid after men are dead, since has it any force at all while the, testator lives?

18 Whence, not even the first covenant was inaugurated without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken every commandment to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats with water and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book itself and all the people,

20 saying: This is the blood of the covenant which God enjoined upon you.

21 And he sprinkled in like manner with blood the tabernacle also and all the vessels of the service.

22 And almost all things are cleansed with blood according to the law, and without the shedding of blood there takes place no remission.

23 It was necessary, then, that the copies of things in the heavens should be cleansed with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these.

24 For Christ did not enter the holy places made with hands, the likenesses of the true, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us,

25 neither that he might offer himself often, as the high priest enters year by year into the holy places with blood of others;

26 for then he must have suffered often since the foundation of the world, but now once in the conclusion of the ages has he been made manifest, to put away sin through the sacrifice of himself.

27 And inasmuch as it is appointed to men once to die and after this the judgment,

28 so also Christ, having been once offered to bear the sins of many, shall to those that look for him appear a second time without sin in order to salvation.

Hebrews 10

1 For the law, having a shadow of the coming good things, not the image itself of the things, can never with the same sacrifices, which they offer year by year continually, make those that come to them perfect;

2 for then would they not have ceased to be offered, because the worshippers, having been once cleansed, would have no longer a consciousness of sins.

3 But in them there is a remembrance of sins every year;

4 for it is impossible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins.

5 Wherefore on coming into the world he says: Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire, but a body thou didst prepare for me;

6 in whole burnt offerings and offerings for sin thou didst not delight:

7 then said I: Behold, I come, in the volume of the book it is written of me, to do, O God, thy will.

8 Saying above: Sacrifices and offerings, and whole burnt offerings, and offerings for sin thou didst not desire, neither hadst pleasure in them, which are offered according to the law,

9 then he said: Lo, I come to do thy will. He takes away the first that he may establish the second,

10 in which will, we are sanctified, who have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every priest indeed stands daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins;

12 but he, after having offered one sacrifice for sins, forever sat down at the right hand of God,

13 henceforth awaiting till his enemies be made his footstool.

14 For by one, offering he has perfected forever the sanctified.

15 And the Holy Spirit also is a witness for us; for after having said before:

16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the Lord: Putting my laws into their hearts, in their minds also will I write them,

17 and their sins and their iniquities I will remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more an offering for sin.

19 Having, then, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,

20 by a new and living way which he has initiated for us through the veil, that is, his flesh;

21 and having a great priest over the house of God;

22 let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having had our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience,

23 and our body washed in pure water; let us hold fast the confession of the hope without wavering, for he is faithful that has promised;

24 and let us consider one another to incite to love and good works,

25 not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the custom of some, but exhorting, and so much the more as you see the day approaching.

26 For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more a sacrifice for sins,

27 but some fearful looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation that shall devour the adversaries.

28 Any one that has set aside the law of Moses dies without mercy under two or three witnesses:

29 of how much severer punishment think you he shall be thought worthy, who has trod under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, with which he was sanctified, a common thing, and has outraged the Spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that said: Vengeance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord: and again: The Lord will judge his people.

31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

32 But call to mind the former days, in which after you were enlightened you endured a great conflict of sufferings,

33 partly being made a spectacle both by reproaches and afflictions, partly having become companions of those that were thus treated.

34 For you sympathized with these in bonds, and accepted with joy the seizing of your goods, knowing that you have for yourselves a better possession and one that endures.

35 Cast not away, then, your confidence, which has great recompense of reward.

36 For you have need of patience, that after having done the will of God you may receive the promise.

37 For yet a little, very little while, He that comes will come and will not delay:

38 But my righteous man shall live by faith, and if he draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not of fearfulness for perdition, but of faith for the preservation of the soul.

Hebrews 11

1 And faith is confidence as to things hoped for, conviction as to things not seen.

2 For in this the elders obtained a good report.

3 By faith we understand that the ages were set in order by the word of God, so that not from things that appear has that which is seen come into being.

4 By faith Abel offered to God more sacrifice than Cain, through which he obtained testimony that he was righteous, God testifying in regard to his gifts, and through it he though dead yet speaks.

5 By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death, and was not found because

God translated him. For before the translation he had the testimony that he pleased God;

6 and without faith it is impossible to please him; for he that comes to God must believe that he is, and that he becomes a rewarder of those that diligently seek him.

7 By faith Noah, having been warned of things not yet seen, moved with reverence, prepared an ark for the salvation of his house, through which faith he condemned the world, and became an heir of the righteousness according to faith.

8 By faith Abraham, being called, became obedient in going forth into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, and he went forth not knowing whither he was going.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise as a foreign land, having dwelt in tents, with Isaac and Jacob, heirs with him of the same promise;

10 for he looked for the city that has the foundations, of which the architect and builder is God.

11 By faith also Sarah herself received strength for the conception of seed even beyond the time of life, because she counted him faithful that had promised.

12 Wherefore there sprung even from one, and that, too, having become dead, as the stars of heaven in number, and as the sand that is along the seashore, innumerable.

13 According to faith died all these, not having received the promises, but having seen them at a distance and saluted them, and confessed that they were strangers and sojourners in the land.

14 For they that say such things show plainly that they seek a country.

15 And if indeed they had had in mind that from which they came, they would have had opportunity to return;

16 but now they desire a better; that is, a heavenly. Wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God; for he has prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham when tried offered up Isaac, even the firstborn did he offer up who had received the promises,

18 of whom it was said: In Isaac shall thy posterity be called;

19 accounting that God was able to raise even from the dead: whence, also, he received him back in a figure.

20 By faith also Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob, when dying, blessed each of the sons of Joseph, and worshipped on the top of his staff.

22 By faith Joseph, when dying, made mention of the departure of the sons of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses, after he had been born, was concealed three months by his parents, because they saw that the child was beautiful, and they were not afraid of the commandment of the king.

24 By faith Moses, when he became of age, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter,

25 rather choosing to suffer evil with the people of God than to have a temporary enjoyment of sin,

26 esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt; for he looked away to the recompense of reward.

27 By faith he left Egypt, not being afraid of the wrath of the king; for he endured as seeing him that is invisible.

28 By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, that he that destroyed the firstborn might not touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the Red Sea as over dry ground, which the Egyptians attempting to do were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they had been surrounded for seven days.

31 By faith Rahab the harlot perished not with those that believed not, because she received the spies with peace.

32 And what do I say more? For the time would fail me, should I tell of Gideon, Barak also and Samson and Jephtha, of David also and of Samuel and the prophets,

33 who through faith subdued kingdoms, worked righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34 quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, from weakness were made strong, became mighty in war, turned to flight armies of foreigners;

35 women received their dead after a resurrection; and others were beaten to death, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection;

36 but others had trial of mockings and scourgings, and further of bonds and imprisonment:

37 they were stoned, they were sawn asunder, they were tempted, they were slain with the sword, they wandered about in sheepskins, in goatskins, being destitute, afflicted, maltreated,

38 of whom the world was not worthy, wandering in deserts, and mountains, and caves, and dens of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith received not the promise,

40 God having provided some better thing concerning us, that without us they should not be made perfect.

Hebrews 12

1 Therefore, having so great a cloud of witnesses lying round about us, let us also lay aside every weight and the sin that easily besets, and run with perseverance the race that lies before us,

2 looking away to Jesus, the author and perfecter of the faith, who for the joy lying before him endured the cross, having despised the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him who endured such contradiction by sinners against himself, that you may not be weary, fainting in your souls.

4 Not yet to blood have you resisted, striving against sin;

5 and you have forgotten the exhortation, which speaks to you as to sons: My son, despise not the chastisements of the Lord, neither be weary when corrected by him;

6 for whom the Lord loves he chastens, and scourges every son that he receives.

7 For chastisement you endure; God deals with you as with sons. For who is a son whom the father chastens not?

8 But if you are without chastisement, of which all have become partakers, then are you bastards and not sons.

9 So, then, fathers of our flesh indeed have we had as chastisers, and we gave them reverence; shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of spirits and live?

10 For they indeed for a few days chastened us according to their pleasure, but he for our profit, that we may partake of his holiness.

11 But all chastisement for the present indeed seems not a matter of joy, but of grief; afterward, however, it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness to those that are exercised by it.

12 Wherefore set right again the hands that hang down and the enfeebled knees,

13 and make straight paths for your feet, that what is lame may not be turned out of the way, but may rather be healed.

14 Pursue peace with all, and holiness, without which no one shall see the Lord,

15 taking care lest anyone come short of the grace of God, lest any root of bitterness spring up and cause trouble, and by it the many be defiled,

16 lest there be any lewd person, or profane, as Esau, who for one meal sold his birthright.

17 For you know that also afterward, wishing to inherit the blessing, he was rejected; for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

18 For you have not come to a mountain that is touched, and to burning fire, and blackness, and thick darkness, and tempest,

19 and the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which they that heard entreated that a word should not be further spoken to them;

20 for they did not endure that which was commanded: If even a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned;

21 and so fearful was the sight, Moses said: I exceedingly fear and quake;

22 but you have come to mount Zion, and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads,

23 the festal assembly of angels, and to the church of firstborn ones enrolled in the heavens, and to the judge, God of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,

24 and to the mediator of the new covenant, Jesus, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks more mightily than Abel.

25 See that you refuse not him that speaks; for if they escaped not who refused him when giving oracles on earth, much more shall not we, if we turn away from him giving oracles from the heavens,

26 whose voice then shook the earth, but now he has promised, saying: Yet once more I will shake not the earth only, but also the heaven.

27 And the "Yet once" signifies the removal of the things shaken as of things that have been made, that the things not shaken may remain.

28 Wherefore, receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us have gratitude, by which we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and fear;

29 for our God is a consuming fire.

Hebrews 13

1 Let brotherly love continue.

2 Be not forgetful of hospitality; for by means of it some have unconsciously entertained angels.

3 Remember those in bonds, as having been bound; those that suffer evil, as being yourselves also in the body.

4 Let marriage be honored in all respects, and the bed be undefiled; but lewd persons and adulterers God will judge.

5 Let there be no money-loving disposition, being content with the things that you have; for he himself has said: I will never leave thee, nor will I in any way forsake thee;

6 so that we may boldly say: The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear: what shall a man do to me?

7 Remember your leaders, who spoke to you the word of God, the issue of whose life attentively considering, imitate their faith.

8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever,

9 Be not carried away by various and strange teachings; for it is good that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited those that have walked in them.

10 We have an altar, from which they have no right to eat that serve the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those animals, whose blood is carried by the chief priest into the sanctuary, are burned without the camp.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people through his own blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Therefore let us go forth to him without the camp bearing his reproach;

14 for here we have no continuing city, but we seek one that is to come.

15 Through him therefore let us offer to God the sacrifice of praise continually, that is the fruit of lips that give thanks to his name.

16 But to do good and to distribute forget not; for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

17 Obey your leaders and be submissive: for they watch for your souls, as they that shall give an account; that they may do this with joy, and not in grief; for this would be unprofitable for you.

18 Pray for us; for we are persuaded that we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honorably.

19 And the more abundantly do I beseech you to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now may the God of peace, who brought again from the dead the shepherd of the sheep who is great through the blood of the eternal covenant, our Lord Jesus,

21 make you perfect in every good work that you may do his will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory, through the ages: amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, bear with the word of exhortation; for I have written to you in few words.

23 Know that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom if he comes soon I will see you.

24 Salute all your leaders and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all: amen.

Epistle of JamesJames 1

1 James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes that are in the dispersion, greeting.

2 Count it all joy, my brethren, when you fall into diversified temptations,

3 knowing that the proof of your faith works out patience.

4 But let patience have a perfect work, that you may be perfect and entire, wanting in nothing.

5 But if any one of you is wanting in wisdom, let him ask from God, who gives to all liberally and upbraids not, and it shall be given to him.

6 But let him ask in faith, doubting nothing; for he that doubts is like a wave of the sea, driven by the wind and tossed.

7 Let that man surely not think that he shall receive anything from the Lord —

8 a man of two minds, unsteady in all his ways.

9 But let the brother that is of low degree glory in his exaltation,

10 and the rich in his humiliation, because as the flower of grass shall he pass away.

11 For the sun rises with the burning wind and withers the grass, and its flower falls away, and the beauty of its appearance perishes: so also shall the rich man fade away in his goings.

12 Blessed is the man that endures temptation, because having become approved he shall receive the crown of life, which he has promised to those that love him.

13 Let no one, when tempted, say: I am tempted by God. For God cannot be tempted by evils, and himself tempts no one.

14 But every one is tempted by his own desire, being drawn away and seduced:

15 then desire, having conceived, brings forth sin, and sin, having been perfected, brings forth death.

16 Be not deceived, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good giving and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no change nor shadow cast by turning.

18 Having willed it, he begot us with the word of truth, in order that we should be a firstfruit of his creatures.

19 You know, my beloved brethren; but let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath;

20 for the wrath of man works not the righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore, having put away all filthiness and overflowing of malice, receive in meekness the implanted word that is able to save your souls.

22 But become doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves.

23 For if any one is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man beholding his natural face in a mirror;

24 for he beholds himself, and goes away, and immediately forgets what kind of man he was.

25 But he that looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues, he not becoming a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, shall be blessed in his doing.

26 If any one seems to be religious, not bridling his tongue but deceiving his own heart, this man's religion is vain.

27 Religion pure, and undefiled with God and the Father is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, to keep himself unspotted from the world.

James 2

1 My brethren, hold not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ of glory with respect of persons.

2 For if there come into your assembly a man with a gold ring on his finger, in splendid raiment, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment,

3 and you look upon him that wears the splendid raiment, and say: Sit thou here honorably; and say to the poor man: Stand there, or sit under my footstool,

4 do you not then make distinctions among yourselves, and have you not become judges having evil thoughts?

5 Hear, my beloved brethren. Has not God chosen the poor in the world, rich in faith and heirs of the kingdom which he has promised to those that love him?

6 But you have dishonored the poor man. Do not the rich act as lords over you, and do not they themselves drag you to the judgment-seats?

7 Do not they themselves blaspheme that honorable name that has been called upon you?

8 If, however, you fulfill the royal law according to the Scripture; Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself, you do well:

9 but if you have respect for persons, you work sin, being convinced by the law as transgressors.

10 For whoever shall have kept the whole law, but shall have offended in one, has become guilty of all.

11 For he that said: Thou shalt not commit adultery, said also: Thou shalt not kill: now, if thou commit no adultery, but if thou kill, thou hast become a transgressor of the law.

12 So speak and so act as those, that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For the judgment is merciless to him that has shown no mercy: mercy glories over judgment.

14 What is the profit, my brethren, if any one say that he has faith, but has not works? Can his faith save him?

15 But if a brother or sister be naked and want daily food,

16 and any one of you say to them: Depart in peace, be warmed and be filled, but give them not the things needful for the body, what is the profit?

17 So also faith, if it have not works, is dead in itself.

18 But some one will say: Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith without the works, and I will show thee my faith by the works.

19 Dost thou believe that God is one? thou doest well: the demons also believe and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is idle?

21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he offered up Isaac his son on the altar?

22 Thou seest that faith worked with his works, and by the works the faith was made perfect;

23 and the Scripture was fulfilled which says: And Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness, and he was called the friend of God.

24 You see that a man is justified by works, and not by faith only.

25 But in like manner also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she received the messengers and sent them forth by a different way?

26 For as the body without spirit is dead, so also faith without works is dead.

James 3

1 Become not many teachers, my brethren, knowing that we shall revive greater condemnation.

2 For in many things we all offend: if any one offends not in word, he is a perfect man, able to bridle also the whole body.

3 But if we put bits into the mouths of horses that they may obey us, we also turn about their whole body:

4 behold, also, the ships, though they are so great, and are driven by fierce winds, yet are they turned about by a very small rudder, to whatever point the will of the pilot may direct.

5 So also the tongue is a little member and boasts great things. Behold, how great a matter how small a fire, the tongue, kindles.

6 A fire, the world of unrighteousness, the tongue is set among our members, which also defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the wheel of nature, and is set on fire by hell.

7 For every nature of wild beasts, and of birds, and of creeping things, and things in the sea is tamed, and has been tamed by human nature,

8 but the tongue no one of men is able to tame: a restless evil, full of deadly poison.

9 With it we bless the Lord and Father, and with it we curse men who have been made according to the likeness of God:

10 out of the same mouth comes forth blessing and cursing. These things, my brethren, ought not so to be.

11 Does a fountain send forth from the same opening sweet water and bitter?

12 Can a fig-tree, my brethren, produce olives, or a vine, figs? Neither can salt water produce sweet.

13 Who is wise and intelligent among you? Let him show out of a good behavior his works in meekness of wisdom.

14 But if you have bitter envy and strife in your heart, glory not and lie not against the truth.

15 This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, demoniacal.

16 For where envy and strife are, there is tumult and every evil work.

17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easy to be persuaded, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, without hypocrisy.

18 But the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by them that make peace.

James 4

1 Whence wars and whence fightings among you? Are they not hence, from your lusts that war in your members?

2 You desire, and have not; you murder and envy, and cannot obtain: you fight and war. You have not because you ask not:

3 you ask and receive not, because you ask amiss, that you, adulterers and adulteresses, may spend it on your lusts.

4 Know you not that the friendship of the world is enmity to God? Whoever, then, intends to be a friend of the world, makes himself an enemy of God.

5 Think you that the Scripture speaks to no purpose? Against envy the Spirit that has taken up its abode in us has jealous desires,

6 but gives greater grace. Wherefore it says: God sets himself against the proud, but gives grace to the lowly.

7 Submit yourselves, therefore, to God; resist the devil, and he will flee from you:

8 draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you of two minds.

9 Afflict yourselves and mourn and weep: let your laughter be turned into mourning, and your joy into sadness.

10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he will exalt you.

11 Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaks evil of his brother, or judges his brother, speaks evil of the law and judges the law; but if thou judgest the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

12 The lawgiver and the judge is one, who is able to save and to destroy: who art thou, that judgest thy neighbor?

13 Come now you that say: Today and to-morrow we will go to such a city, and spend there one year, and trade' and make gain,

14 you that know not what will be to-morrow; for what is your life? For you are a vapor that appears for a little while and then disappears:

15 instead of which you should say: If the Lord will, we shall both live, and do this or that.

16 But now you glory in your boastings: all such glorying is evil.

17 To him, then, that knows to do good and does it not, to him it is sin.

James 5

1 Come now you that are rich, weep, howl for your miseries that are coming on you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments have become moth-eaten;

3 your gold and silver is eaten with rust, and the rust of them will be a testimony to you, and will eat your flesh as fire. You have heaped up treasure in the last days.

4 Behold, the hire of the laborers that have reaped your fields, which has remained unpaid by you, cries; and the cries of the reapers have entered into the ears of the Lord of hosts.

5 You have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton: you have nourished your hearts in a day of slaughter.

6 You condemned, you killed the Just One: he does not resist you.

7 Be patient, therefore, brethren till the coming of the Lord. Behold, the farmer waits for the precious fruit of the earth, being patient over it till he receive the early and latter rain:

8 be you also patient, strengthen your hearts, for the coming of the Lord draws near.

9 Complain not, brethren, one against another, lest you be condemned: behold, the judge stands before the door.

10 Take, brethren, the prophets, who spoke in the name of the Lord, as an example of suffering evil and of patience.

11 Behold, we call those happy that endure: you have heard of the patience of Job and have seen the end of the Lord, that the Lord is very compassionate and merciful.

12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, nor by the earth, nor by any other oath; but let your yes be yes, and no be no, that you fall not under condemnation.

13 Does any one among you suffer evil? Let him pray: is any one cheerful? Let him sing psalms.

14 Is anyone among you sick? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord.

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, it shall be forgiven him.

16 Confess your sins one to another, and pray one for another, that you may be restored to health: the prayer of a righteous man, being energetic, avails much.

17 Elijah was a man with passions like ourselves, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain, and it rained not on the earth for three years and six months;

18 and again he prayed, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth yielded its fruit.

19 Brethren, if any one among you go astray from the truth, and one turn him back,

20 let him know that he that turns a sinner back from the error of his ways shall save a soul from death, and cover a multitude of sins.

Epistle of Peter 1st1 Peter 1

1 Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the elect sojourners of the dispersion of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia,

2 according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in sanctification of the Spirit, in order to obedience and the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ. Grace to you and peace be multiplied.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who, according to his great mercy, has begotten us again to a living hope, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

4 for an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled and unfading, reserved in heaven for you,

5 who in the power of God are kept through faith to the salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

6 In which you rejoice, being now for a little while, if need be, sorrowful in diversified temptations,

7 that the proof of your faith, much more precious than gold that perishes, though tried by fire, may be found for praise and glory and honor in the revelation of Jesus Christ,

8 whom not seeing, you love; on whom not now looking but believing, you rejoice with joy unspeakable and glorious,

9 receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls.

10 Concerning which salvation the prophets that prophesied of the grace that was for you, earnestly sought and inquired,

11 inquiring into what and what kind of time the Spirit of Christ that was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings that were for Christ, and the glories after these;

12 to whom it was revealed, that not for themselves, but for you, they were ministering these things, which are now announced to you through those that preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven, into which things angels desire earnestly to look.

13 Wherefore, gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope perfectly for the grace to be brought to you in the revelation of Jesus Christ.

14 As children of obedience, not fashioning yourselves according to the desires which you formerly had in your ignorance,

15 but as he that called you is holy, become yourselves also holy in all behavior,

16 because it is written: Be you holy, for I am holy.

17 And if you call on, as a Father, him who judges without respect of persons, according to each one's work, spend the time of your sojourning in fear;

18 knowing that not with corruptible things, as silver and gold, you were redeemed from your fruitless mode of life delivered to you by your fathers;

19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb blameless and without spot;

20 foreknown indeed before the foundation of the world, but manifested in the last of the times for you,

21 who through him do believe in God who raised him from the dead, and gave him glory, so that your faith and hope are in God.

22 Having purified your souls in obedience to the truth, to unfeigned love of the brethren, love one another from the heart earnestly,

23 having been begotten again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by means of the word of God that lives and abides.

24 Because all flesh is as grass, and all its glory as the flower of grass; the grass withers, and the flower of it falls;

25 but the word of the Lord abides for ever. And this is the word which as gospel has been preached to you.

1 Peter 2

1 Having, then, laid aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2 as babes just born, earnestly desire the spiritual unadulterated milk, that by it you may grow to salvation,

3 if indeed you have tasted that the Lord is good.

4 To whom coming, a living stone, by men indeed disapproved, but with God chosen, precious,

5 yourselves also as living stones are builded up, a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ;

6 because it is contained in Scripture: Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner-stone, chosen, precious, and he that believes on him shall not be ashamed.

7 To you, therefore, that believe is the preciousness; but to those that believe not, a stone which the builders rejected, this became the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense,

8 to them that stumble at the word being disobedient, to which also they were appointed.

9 But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a purchased people, that you should show forth the virtues of him that has called you out of darkness into his wonderful light:

10 who once were not a people, but now are the people of God, who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Beloved, I beseech that you as strangers and sojourners abstain from fleshly desires, which war against the soul,

12 having your conduct among the Gentiles, that in what they speak against you as evildoers, they may, because of your good works, while beholding them, glorify God in the day of visitation.

13 Be subject, therefore, to every human creation for the Lord's sake; whether to the king as supreme,

14 or to governors as sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers, but the praise of those that do good;

15 for so is the will of God that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men:

16 as free, and not holding freedom as a cloak of malice, but as the servants of God.

17 Honor all men, love the brotherhood, fear God, honor the king.

18 Household servants, be subject in all fear to your masters, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the perverse.

19 For this is praiseworthy, if because of consciousness of God any one endures sorrows, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is there, if, being buffeted for your faults, you take it patiently? But if, when you do well and suffer, you take it patiently, this is praiseworthy with God.

21 For to this end were you called, because Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example that you should follow his steps;

22 who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth;

23 who when reviled reviled not in turn, when suffering he threatened not, but committed his cause to him that judges righteously,

24 who himself bore our sins in his own body on the tree, that having died to sins we should live to righteousness; by whose stripes you were healed;

25 for you were as sheep going astray, but have now returned to the shepherd and overseer of your souls.

1 Peter 3

1 Likewise, wives, be subject to your own husbands, that even if any obey not the word, they may without the word be gained through the conduct of the wives,

2 having beheld your conduct that is chaste in fear.

3 Whose adorning let it not be the outward, of braiding the hair, and of putting around of golden ornaments or of putting on of dresses,

4 but the hidden man of the heart in the incorruptible ornament of the meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For so in former time also the holy women that hoped in God adorned themselves, being in subjection to their own husbands,

6 as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord; whose children you have become by doing good and not being afraid of any terror.

7 Husbands, likewise, dwell according to knowledge with the feminine as the weaker vessel, bestowing honor as on those that are also heirs with you of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally, be all of the same mind, sympathetic, loving the brethren, compassionate, humble-minded,

9 not rendering evil for evil or railing for railing, but, on the other hand, blessing; because to this end were you called, that you might inherit blessing.

10 For he that will love life and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile;

11 let him turn away from evil and do good; let him seek peace and pursue it;

12 because the eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, and his ears incline to their prayer; but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

13 And who is he that will do you evil if you become zealots for that which is good?

14 But if you should even suffer for the sake of righteousness, you are happy. But fear not their fear, neither be troubled;

15 but sanctify the Lord Christ in your hearts, and be ready always to give an answer to every one that asks you a reason concerning the hope that is in you; but with meekness and fear;

16 having a good conscience, that in what you are evil spoken of, they may be ashamed who falsely accuse your good conduct in Christ.

17 For it is better to suffer for doing good, if the will of God should will it, than for doing evil.

18 For Christ also once suffered for sins, a just man for unjust men, that he might bring us to God, having been indeed put to death in flesh, but made alive in spirit,

19 in which also he went and preached to the spirits in prison,

20 that were disobedient once when the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while an ark was prepared, in which few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water.

21 Which (water) in its antitype, baptism, now saves you also (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the inquiry of a good conscience toward God), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ,

22 who is at the right hand of God, having gone into heaven, angels and authorities and powers being made subject to him.

1 Christ then having suffered in the flesh, do you also arm yourselves with the same mind, because he that has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin,

2 that you may no longer live the rest of your time in the flesh to the desires of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past is sufficient to have worked the will of the Gentiles, in having walked in lasciviousness, desires, wine-drinkings, carousals, banquetings, and lawless idolatries;

4 at which they are astonished, since you run out with them into the same confusion of riot, speaking evil of you,

5 who shall give an account to him that is ready to judge the living and dead.

6 For to this end was the gospel preached even to the dead, that they might indeed be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand. Be sober-minded, therefore, and be watchful that you may pray;

8 above all things have earnest love towards one another, for love covers a multitude of sins;

9 be hospitable one towards another without murmuring;

10 as each one has received a gracious gift, minister the same one to another as good stewards of the diversified grace of God;

11 if any one speaks, as the oracles of God: if any one ministers, as from the strength that God supplies, that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom is glory and might from age to age: amen.

12 Beloved, be not astonished at the fiery trial that is among you, that has come upon you for a trial, as if a strange thing is happening to you,

13 but as far as you partake of the sufferings of Christ, rejoice, that also in the revelation of his glory you may rejoice with gladness.

14 It you are reproached * in the name of Christ, happy are you, because the spirit of glory and of God rests upon you.

* Because you wear the name.

15 For let not any one of you suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or an evil-doer, or as a busybody in other men's matters;

16 but if he suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this name.

17 For it is the time that judgment should begin at the house of God; but if first at us, what shall be the end of those that obey not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous man is scarcely saved, the ungodly and sinner, where shall he appear?

19 So, then, let them also that suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to him in well-doing, as to a faithful creator.

1 Peter 5

1 Elders that are among you I exhort who am the fellow-elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, who also am a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

2 be shepherds to the flock of God that is among you, not from necessity, but willingly, according to God, not for the sake of base gain, but readily,

3 neither as being lords of the portions,* but becoming examples to the flock;

*The parts of the flock under their care.

4 and when the chief shepherd shall appear, you shall receive the crown of glory that fades not away.

5 Likewise, you younger, submit yourselves to the elder, yes, do you all clothe yourselves with humility one towards another; for God sets himself against the proud, but gives grace to the lowly.

6 Humble yourselves therefore under the strong hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time,

7 casting all your care upon him, for he cares for you.

8 Be sober, be watchful. Your adversary, the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour:

9 whom resist firm in faith, knowing that the same sufferings are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who has called you to his eternal glory in Christ, after you have suffered awhile, will himself make you perfect, establish, strengthen, confirm you.

11 To him be might through the ages, amen.

12 By Silvanus to you the faithful brother, as I suppose, I have written in few words, exhorting, and testifying that this is the true grace of God, in which you stand.

13 She that is elected together with you in Babylon salute you, and so does Mark my son.

14 Salute one another with a kiss of love. Peace to you all that are in Christ.

Epistle of Peter 2nd2 Peter 1

1 Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those that have obtained equally precious faith with us in the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

2 Grace to you and peace be multiplied in the acknowledgment of God and Jesus our Lord.

3 As his divine power has given us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the acknowledgment of him who has called us by his own glory and virtue,

4 through which very great and precious promises have been given to us, that through these you might become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world in desire;

5 and for this very reason bringing forward all diligence, supply in your faith, virtue, and in virtue, knowledge,

6 and in knowledge, self-control, and in self-control, patience, and in patience, godliness,

7 and in godliness, friendship for brethren, and in friendship for brethren, love.

8 For these things being in you and abounding render you neither idle, nor unfruitful for the acknowledgment of our Lord Jesus Christ;

9 but he in whom these are not present, is blind, not seeing afar off, having taken up a forgetfulness of the purification of his old sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, be diligent to make your calling and election sure; for in doing these things you shall never stumble.

11 For so shall there be richly supplied to you the entrance into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I shall always remind you of these things, though you know them and are established in the present truth.

13 Yes, I think it right, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance,

14 knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ has shown me.

15 But I will endeavor that you may always be able, after my departure, to have these things in remembrance.

16 For we did not follow cunningly devised fables when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but had been made eye-witnesses of his majesty.

17 For he received from God the Father honor and glory, a voice having been borne to him by the most excellent glory, such as this: This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice brought from heaven we heard, being with him in the holy mount;

19 and we have the prophetic word more sure, to which you do well to give heed, as to a lamp shining in a dark place, till the day dawn and the day-star arise in your hearts;

20 knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture comes from one's own interpretation.

21 For not by the will of man was prophecy ever brought, but men from God spoke, being moved by the Holy Spirit.

2 Peter 2

1 But there arose false prophets among the people, as there shall be false teachers also among you, such as shall privily introduce heresies of destruction, even denying the Lord that bought them, who bring on themselves swift destruction;

2 and many will follow their licentiousness, because of whom the way of truth shall be blasphemed;

3 and in covetousness with deceitful words they will make merchandise of you; for whom the condemnation of old lingers not, and their destruction slumbers not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but casting them down to Tartarus in chains of darkness delivered them up to be kept for judgment,

5 and spared not the old world, but preserved Noah, the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, having brought a flood on the world of the ungodly,

6 and turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example of those that shall live ungodly,

7 and delivered righteous Lot, wearied out with the licentious conduct of the ungodly;

8 for the righteous man dwelling among them, by seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their lawless deeds:

9 the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to keep the unrighteous to the day of judgment to be punished,

10 but especially those that walk after the flesh in unclean desire, and despise governments. Presumptuous, self-willed men, they tremble not while blaspheming dignities;

11 whereas angels, who are greater in strength and power, bring no railing accusation against them before the Lord;

12 but these, as irrational animals made by nature for capture and destruction, speaking evil of things in which they are ignorant, shall also perish in their corruption,

13 thus receiving the reward of unrighteousness, who count reveling in the daytime a delight; spots and blemishes they are reveling in their deceits while feasting with you,

14 having eyes full of an adulteress, and that can not cease from sin, seducing unsteady souls, having a heart exercised in covetousness, children of the curse:

15 having left the straight way, they have turned aside, following the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness,

16 but was reprov'd for his iniquity: the dumb beast of burden speaking with man's voice forbade the madness of the prophet.

17 These are wells without water, and mists driven by a tempest, for whom the blackness of darkness is reserved.

18 For speaking great swelling words of vanity, they seduce in the desires of the flesh by lasciviousness those that are just escaping from them that live in error,

19 promising them freedom, while they themselves are servants of corruption; for by whom any one has been overcome, by him has he also been made a servant.

20 For if, after escaping from the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in these and overcome, their last state becomes worse than the first.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than having known it to turn from the holy commandment that had been delivered to them.

22 That of the true proverb has happened to them: A dog turned back to his own vomit; and: A sow washed to wallowing in the mire.

2 Peter 3

1 This now, beloved, is the second epistle that I write to you, in both of which I stir up your pure mind by way of remembrance,

2 that you be mindful of the words spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of the Lord and Saviour, that was given by your apostles,

3 knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days shameless scoffers walking according to their own desires,

4 and saying: Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things thus continue from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly know not, that the heavens were of old and the earth from water and by means of water consisting by the word of God,

6 by which the then world, having been overflowed with water, perished;

7 but the present heavens and earth are kept in store by the same word, reserved for fire at the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But be not ignorant of this one thing, beloved, that one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

9 The Lord delays not concerning the promise, as some count delaying, but is longsuffering for your sake, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, and the earth and the works that are in it shall be burned up.

11 As all these things are thus to be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in holy behavior and godliness,

12 looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

13 But we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, in which dwells righteousness.

14 Wherefore, beloved, as you look for these things, be diligent to be found spotless and blameless before him in peace,

15 and regard the longsuffering of our Lord salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom that is given to him, has written to you,

16 as also in all his epistles speaking in them of these things, in which things are some hard to be understood, which the unlearned and unsteady wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, to their own destruction.

17 Do you then, beloved, knowing it before, beware lest being led away by the error of the lawless you fall from your own steadfastness,

18 but grow in grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and to the day of eternity.

Epistle of John 1st1 John 1

1 That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we looked upon and our hands handled, of the word of life;

2 and the life was manifested, and we have seen and do testify and declare to you the life eternal, which was with the Father and was manifested to us:

3 that which we have seen and heard, declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us. And our fellowship indeed is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we to you, that your joy may be made full.

5 And this is the message that we have heard from him, and declare again to you, that God is light and darkness in him there is none.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not the truth;

7 but if we walk in the light as he himself is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanses us from all sin.

8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confess our sins, faithful is he and righteous to forgive us the sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us,

1 John 2

1 My little children, these things write I to you that you sin not. And if any one sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous;

2 and he himself is the expiation for our sins, not for ours only, however, but also for the whole world.

3 And in this we know that we have known him, if we keep his commandments.

4 He that says: I have known him and keeps not his commandments is a liar, and the truth is not in him;

5 but whoever keeps his word, truly in him has the love of God been perfected. In this we know that we are in him.

6 He that says that he abides in him ought himself also so to walk as he walked.

7 Beloved, no new commandment write I to you, but an old commandment, which you had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which you heard.

8 Again a new commandment write I to you, which thing is true in him and in you, because the darkness is passing away and the true light now shines.

9 He that says that he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness till now.

10 He that loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no stumbling-block in him;

11 but he that hates his brother is in darkness, and walks in darkness, and knows not whither he goes, because darkness has blinded his eyes.

12 I write to you, little children, because your sins have been forgiven for his name's sake.

13 I write to you, fathers, because you have known him that is from the beginning. I write to you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I have written to you, little children, because you have known the Father.

14 I have written to you, fathers, because you have known him that is from the beginning. I have written to you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, and you have overcome the wicked one,

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any one love the world, the love of the Father is not in him;

16 because all that is in the world, the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world

17 And the world is passing away and the desire of it; but he that does the will of God abides for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time, and as you heard that antichrist comes, even now many antichrists have risen: whence we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have remained with us; but that they might be made manifest that they are all not of us.

20 And you have an anointing from the holy One, and know all things.

21 I have not written to you because you know not the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is from the truth.

22 Who is the liar, but he that denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist that denies the Father and the Son.

23 Every one that denies the Son, neither has he the Father: he that confesses the Son has the Father also.

24 Let that which you heard from the beginning abide in you. If that abide in you which you heard from the beginning, you also shall abide in the Son and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he himself promised us, the life eternal.

26 These things I have written to you concerning them that deceive you.

27 And you — the anointing which you received from him abides in you, and you have no need that any one teach, but as his anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true and is no lie, even as it has taught you, abide in it.

28 And now, little children, abide in him that when he shall be manifested we may have boldness, and not be ashamed away from him in his coming.

29 If you know that he is righteous, you know that every one also that works righteousness has been begotten of him.

1 John 3

1 Behold what manner of love the Father has bestowed on us that we should be called children of God. Therefore the world knows us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we children of God, and it has not yet been made manifest what we shall be. We know that when it shall be made manifest we shall be like him, because we, shall see him as he is.

3 And every one that has this hope on him purifies himself, as he is pure.

4 Every one that practices sin practices lawlessness also, and sin is lawlessness.

5 And you know that he was manifested that he might take away sins, and sin is not in him.

6 Every one that abides in him sins not: whoever sins has not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no one deceive you. He that practices righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous:

8 he that practices sin is of the devil, because the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose was the Son of God manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whoever has been begotten of God does not practice sin, because his seed abides in him; and he can not sin, because he has been begotten of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest and the children of the devil: whoever practices not righteousness is not of God, also he that loves not his brother.

11 For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another,

12 not as Cain was of the wicked one and slew his brother; and for what cause did he slay him? because his works were evil, but those of his brother righteous.

13 Wonder not, brethren, if the world hates you.

14 We know that we have passed from death into life, because we love the brethren: he that loves not abides in death.

15 Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

16 In this we have known the love, because he laid down his life for us; and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

17 But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother have need, and shuts up his bowels from him, how abides the love of God in him?

18 Little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

19 And in this we know that we are of the truth, and shall persuade our hearts before him;

20 because if our hearts condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, we have confidence toward God,

22 and whatever we ask we receive from him, because we keep his commandments and do the things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another as he gave us commandment.

24 And he that keeps his commandments abides in him and he in him; and in this we know that he abides in us, by the Spirit that he has given us.

1 John 4

1 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but prove the spirits, whether they are from God; because many false prophets have gone forth into the world.

2 In this know you the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God,

3 and every spirit that confesses not Jesus is not of God; and this is the spirit of antichrist, of which you have heard that it comes, and now is in the world already.

4 You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is he that is in you than he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore they speak of the world, and the world hears them.

6 We are of God: he that knows God hears us, he that is not of God hears not us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

7 Beloved, let us love one another, because love is of God, and every one that loves has been begotten of God, and knows God.

8 He that loves not has not known God, for God is love.

9 In this has been manifested the love of God in us, that God has sent his Son the only Begotten into the world that we might live through him.

10 In this is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son the expiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.

12 No one has seen God at any time: if we love one another, God abides in us and his love is perfected in us.

13 In this we know that we abide in him and he in us, because he has given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen and do testify that the Father has sent the Son the Saviour of the world.

15 Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him and he in God.

16 And we have known and have believed the love that God has in us. God is love, and he that abides in love abides in God and God in him.

17 In this has been perfected the love with us, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment, because as he is we also are in this world.

18 Fear is not in love, but perfect love casts out fear, because fear has punishment, but he that fears is not made perfect in love.

19 We love, because he first loved us.

20 If any one say: I love God, and hate his brother, he is a liar; for he that loves not his brother, whom he has seen, God, whom he has not seen, how can he love?

21 And this commandment have we from him, that he that loves God loves his brother also.

1 John 5

1 Every one that believes that Jesus is the Christ, has been begotten of God; and every one that loves him that begot, loves him also that has been begotten of him.

2 In this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and do his commandments.

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments; and his commandments are not burdensome,

4 because all that has been begotten of God overcomes the world; and this is the victory that overcomes the world, our faith.

5 Who is he that overcomes the world but he that believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is he that came through water and blood, Jesus Christ: not in the water only, but in the water and in the blood; and it is the Spirit that testifies, because the Spirit is the truth.

7 For they that testify are three,

8 the Spirit, and the water, and the blood, and the three are one.*

* Testify the same thing

9 If we receive the testimony of men, the testimony of God is greater; because this is the testimony of God that he has testified concerning his Son.

10 He that believes on the Son of God has the testimony in himself: he that believes not God has made him a liar, because he has not believed on the testimony that God has testified concerning his Son.

11 And this is the testimony, that God gave us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

12 He that has the Son has the life: he that has not the Son of God has not the life.

13 These things have I written to you that you may know that you have eternal life, who believe on the name of the Son of God.

14 And this is the confidence that we have towards him, that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us.

15 And if we know that he hears us as to whatever we ask, we know that we have the petition that we have asked of him.

16 If any one see his brother sinning a sin not to death, he shall ask, and shall give him life, to those that sin not to death. There is a sin to death: not concerning this do I say that he should ask.

17 All unrighteousness is sin, and there is a sin not to death.

18 We know that every one that has been begotten of God sins not; but he that has been begotten of God keeps himself, and the wicked one touches him not.

19 We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies in the wicked one.

20 We know, however, that the Son of God has come, and has given us understanding, that we know him that is true; and we are in him that is true, in his Son Jesus Christ: This is the true God and life eternal.

21 Little children, keep yourselves from idols.

Epistle of John 2nd2 John

1 The elder to the elect lady and her children, whom I love in truth, and not I only, but also all that have known the truth,

2 because of this truth that abides in us, and shall be with us for ever.

3 There shall be with you grace, mercy, peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoiced greatly that I have found of thy children walking in the truth as we received commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee, lady, not as writing to thee a new commandment, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love, that we walk according to his commandments: the commandment is this: as you heard from the beginning, that you walk in it.

7 For many deceivers have gone out into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh: this is the deceiver and the antichrist.

8 Take heed to yourselves, that you lose not the things that you have wrought, but that you receive a full reward.

9 Whoever advances and abides not in the teaching of Christ has not God: he that abides in the teaching, he has both the Son and Father.

10 If any one comes to you, and brings not this teaching, receive him not into the house, and wish him not well;

11 for he that wishes well is partaker in his evil deeds.

12 Having many things to write to you, I would not by means of paper and ink; but I hope to be with you, and speak mouth to mouth, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister salute thee.

Epistle of John 3rd**3 John**

1 The elder to the beloved Gaius, whom I love in truth.

2 Beloved, concerning all things I pray that thou mayest prosper and be in health, as thy soul prospers.

3 For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified to thy truth, as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no joy greater than this, that I hear of my children walking in the truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatever thou workest for the brethren, and for strangers,

6 who have testified to thy love before the church, whom thou wilt do well in conducting forward in a manner worthy of God.

7 For in behalf of the name they went forth, taking nothing from the heathen.

8 We then, ought to receive such, that we may become fellow-workmen for the truth.

9 I wrote somewhat to the church; but Diotrephes, who loves the pre-eminence over them, receives us not.

10 Wherefore, if I come, I will bring to remembrance the works that he does, prating against us with evil words; and not content with this, he neither himself receives the brethren, and those that would he hinders and casts out of the church.

11 Beloved, imitate not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that does good is of God: he that does evil has not seen God.

12 To Demetrius good testimony is given by all and by the truth itself; and we also testify, and you know that our testimony is true.

13 I had many things to write to thee, but I will not write to thee by means of ink and pen:

14 I hope, however, to see thee soon, and we will speak mouth to mouth.

15 Peace to thee. The friends salute thee: salute the friends by name.

Epistle of JudeJude

1 Jude, a servant of Christ Jesus, but brother of James, to the called that are beloved in God the Father, and kept for Jesus Christ.

2 Mercy to you and peace and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, giving all diligence to write to you concerning this common salvation, I found it necessary to write to you, exhorting you to contend for the faith once delivered to the saints.

4 For some men have come in by stealth, who have long ago been written of beforehand for this condemnation; ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying our only Master and Lord, Jesus Christ.

5 But I wish to put you in remembrance, though you already know all things, that the Lord, after having saved the people from the land of Egypt, the second time destroyed those that believed not:

6 angels also that kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he has kept in eternal chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day:

7 how Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities about them, giving themselves over to lewdness in like manner with these men, and having gone after other flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire.

8 Yet still in like manner these dreamers also defile indeed the flesh, but despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

9 But Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not to bring a railing accusation, but said: The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speak evil of whatever things indeed they know not, but whatever things they understand naturally as the irrational animals, in these they corrupt themselves.

11 Alas for them, for in the way of Cain they have walked, and in the error of Balaam they have rushed headlong for hire, and in the contradiction of Corah have they perished.

12 These are they that are rocks in your love-feasts, feasting with you without fear, feeding themselves; clouds without water, driven rapidly by winds; late autumnal trees without fruit, twice dead, torn up by the roots;

13 raging waves of the sea foaming up their own shame; wandering stars, for whom the blackness of darkness has been kept forever.

14 But of these also prophesied Enoch, the seventh from Adam, saying: Behold, the Lord came in his holy myriads,

15 to execute judgment against all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly works in which they were

ungodly, and of all the hard things which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking according to their own desires, and their mouth speaks great swelling words, admiring persons for profit's sake.

17 But you, beloved, be mindful of the words that were spoken before by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ,

18 that they said that at the last time there shall be scoffers walking according to their own desires in ungodliness.

19 These are they that separate, psychical, not having spirit.

20 But you, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit,

21 keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to eternal life.

22 And some, indeed, reprove when they contend;

23 but others save, snatching them out of the fire; and on others have compassion in a spirit of fear, hating even the garment that is spotted by the flesh.

24 But to him that is able to keep you without falling, and to set you in the presence of his glory blameless in exceeding joy;

25 to the only God our Saviour, through Jesus Christ our Lord, be glory, majesty, might and authority before every age, both now and throughout all the ages: amen.

Revelation of Jesus ChristRevelation 1

1 The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him, to show to his servants things that must shortly take place, and having sent by his angel he made it known to his servant John,

2 who became a witness to the word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ, whatever things he saw.

3 Blessed is he that reads and they that hear the words of the prophecy, and that keep the things that are written in it; for the time is at hand.

4 John to the seven churches that are in Asia: grace to you and peace from him who is, and who was, and who comes, and from the seven spirits that are before his throne,

5 and from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, the first-born of the dead and the prince of the kings of the earth. To him that loves us and that washed us from our sins in his blood,

6 and made us a kingdom, priests to his God and Father, to him be glory and strength through the ages: amen.

7 Behold, he comes with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also that pierced him, and all the tribes of the land shall wail because of him. Yes, amen.

8 I am the Alpha and the Omega, says the Lord God, who is, and who was, and who comes, the Almighty.

9 I John, your brother and companion in the affliction and kingdom and patience in Jesus, was in the island that is called Patmos because of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus.

10 I was in-spirit on the Lord's day and heard behind me a voice great as that of a trumpet,

11 saying: What thou seest write in a book, and send to the seven churches, to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamus, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that talked with me; and having turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks,

13 and in the midst of the candlesticks one like the Son of man, clothed in a robe reaching to the feet, and girded about the breasts with a golden girdle;

14 but his head and his hair were white as white wool, like snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire,

15 and his feet were like burnished brass, as if they burned in a furnace, and his voice as the sound of many waters;

16 and he had in his right hand seven stars, and out of his mouth went forth a sword two-edged, sharp, and his face as the sun when it shines in its strength.

17 And when I had seen him, I fell at his feet as dead; and he laid his right hand upon me, saying: Fear not: I am the First and the Last,

18 and that lives, and I was dead, and behold, I am living from age to age, and have the keys of death and of hades.

19 Write therefore the things that thou sawest, and the things that are, and those that shall be after these,

20 the mystery of the seven stars that thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars and angels of the seven churches, and the seven candlesticks are seven churches.

Revelation 2

1 To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: These things says he that holds the seven stars in his right hand, that walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

2 I know thy works, and thy labor, and thy patience, and that thou canst not endure evil men, and hast tried those that say that they are apostles and are not, and hast found them liars;

3 and thou hast patience, and hast endured because of my name, and hast not fainted.

4 But I have against thee that thou hast left thy first love.

5 Remember therefore whence thou hast fallen, and repent and do the first works: else, I am coming to thee, and will move thy candlestick out of its place, unless thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the works of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches: To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the paradise of my God.

8 And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These things says the First and the Last, who was dead and revived;

9 I know thy affliction and thy poverty, (but thou art rich) and the blasphemy of those that say that they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear in no way the things that thou art about to suffer. Behold now, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison that you may be tried, and you shall have affliction ten days. Be thou faithful to death, and I will give thee the crown of life.

11 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches: He that overcomes shall not be hurt by the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamus write: These things says he that has the sword two-edged, sharp;

13 I know where thou dwellest, where the throne of Satan is; and yet thou boldest fast my name, and didst not deny my faith, even in the

days in which Antipas was my faithful witness, who was slain among you, where Satan dwells.

14 But I have against thee a few things: thou hast there those that hold the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put a stumbling-block before the sons of Israel and to cause them to eat idol-sacrifices and to commit lewdness.

15 So hast thou also in like manner those that hold the teaching of the Nicolaitans.

6 Repent therefore; otherwise I am coming to thee quickly, and I will war against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches: To him that overcomes I will give of the hidden manna; and I will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name written, which no one knows but he that receives it.

18 And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These things says the Son of God, who has his eyes as a flame of fire, and his feet like burnished brass:

19 I know thy works and thy love and thy faith and thy service and thy patience, and thy works the last more than the first.

20 But I have against thee that thou sufferest thy wife Jezebel, who says that she is a prophetess, and teaches and leads my servants astray to commit lewdness and to eat idol-sacrifices.

21 And I gave her time to repent, and she will not repent of her lewdness.

22 Behold, I cast her into a bed, and those that commit adultery with her into great affliction, unless they repent of her works.

23 And her children will I kill with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he that searches the reins and the hearts; and I will give to you, to each one, according to your works.

24 But to you I say, to the rest that are in Thyatira, as many as have not this teaching, such as have not known the depths of Satan, as they say, I lay upon you no other burden;

25 but what you have hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcomes and that keeps my works to the end, to him will I give authority over the nations,

27 and he shall rule them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to pieces, as I have received from my Father,

28 and I will give him the morning star.

29 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

1 And to the angel of the church in Sardis write: These things says he that has the seven spirits of God and the seven stars: I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Become wakeful, and strengthen the things that remain that are about to die. For I have not found thy works fulfilled before my God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and watch and repent. If therefore thou wilt not be wakeful, I will come as a thief, and thou shalt not know at what hour I will come upon thee.

4 But thou hast a few names in Sardis who have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white, for they are worthy.

5 He that overcomes, he shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot his name out of the book of life, and I will confess his name before my Father and before his angels.

6 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: These things says he that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens and no one shall shut, and shuts and no one shall open;

8 I know thy works; behold, I have placed before thee an open door, that no one can shut; because thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will give to them of the synagogue of Satan, that say that they are Jews, and are not, but do lie: behold, I will make them come and worship before thy feet, and they shall know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation that shall come on all the world, to try them that dwell on the earth.

11 I come quickly: hold fast that which thou hast, that no one take thy crown.

12 He that overcomes, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go out no more, and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem that comes down out of heaven from my God, and my new name.

13 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

14 And to the angel of the church in Laodicea write: These things says the Amen, the witness that is faithful and true, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot. I would that thou wert either cold or hot.

16 So because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou sayest: I am rich and have abundance and have need of nothing, and knowest not that thou art wretched and pitiable and poor and blind and naked,

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold purified in fire, that thou mayest be rich, and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and the shame of thy nakedness may not be made manifest, and to anoint thy eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the door and knock: if any one hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to him and will sup with him and he with me.

21 He that overcomes, I will give to him to sit with me in my throne, as I also overcame and sat down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

Revelation 4

1 After these things I saw, and behold, a door opened in heaven, and the voice, the first that I heard, was as that of a trumpet talking with me, saying: Come up hither, and I will show thee things that must take place after these.

2 Immediately I was in spirit; and behold, a throne was set in heaven and upon the throne was one sitting,

3 and he that sat was like in appearance to a jasper and a sardine stone, and a rainbow round about the throne, like in appearance to an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were twenty-four thrones; and upon the twenty-four thrones I saw elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and on their head golden crowns.

5 And out of the throne go forth lightnings and voices and thunders; and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God;

6 and before the throne was as a sea of glass like crystal; and in the midst of the throne and round about the throne four living creatures full of eyes before and behind.

7 And the first living creature was like a lion, and the second living creature was like a calf, and the third living creature had the face as of a man, and the fourth living creature was like a flying eagle.

8 And the four living creatures, each of them having six wings, are full of eyes round about and within, and have no rest day and night, saying: Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God, the Almighty, who was, and who is, and who comes.

9 And whenever the living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to him that sits upon the throne, who lives from age to age,

10 the twenty-four elders fall before him that sits upon the throne, and worship him that live, from age to age, and throw their crowns before the throne, saying:

11 Worthy art thou, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for thou didst create all things, and because of thy will they existed and were created.

Revelation 5

1 And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the back, sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice: Who is worthy to open the book and break its seals?

3 And no one in heaven, neither on the earth nor under the earth, was able to open the book nor to look upon it.

4 And I wept much, because no one was found worthy to open the book nor to look upon it.

5 And one of the elders said to me: Weep not; behold, he has prevailed who is the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, that opens the book and its seven seals.

6 And I saw in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, a Lamb standing as if it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and took it out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the book, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the lamb, having each one a harp and golden vials full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints.

9 And they sing a new song, saying: Worthy art thou to take the book, and to open its seals, because thou wast slain and didst redeem to God in thy blood out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation,

10 and didst make them a kingdom and priests, and they shall reign on the earth.

11 And I saw, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the living creatures and the elders, and the number of them was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands.

12 saying with a loud voice: Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing.

13 And every created thing that is in heaven, and those that are on the earth, and under the earth, and in the sea, even those in them, all

did I hear saying: To him that sits on the throne and to the Lamb be blessing, and honor, and glory, and might, from age to age.

14 And the four living creatures heard I saying: Amen; and the elders fell down and worshipped.

Revelation 6

1 And I saw when the Lamb had opened one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four living creatures saying as with a voice of thunder: Come.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat upon him had a bow, and to him was given a crown, and he went forth conquering and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seal. I heard the second living creature saying: Come.

4 And there went forth another horse that was red; and to him that sat on him was given to take peace from the earth, and that they should slay one another: and there was given to him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature saying: Come. And I saw, and behold, a black horse, and he that sat on him had a balance in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four living creatures, saying: A choenix of wheat for a denarius, and three choenices of barley for a denarius: and see that thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the fourth living creature saying: Come.

8 And I saw, and behold, a pale horse, and he that sat on him, his name was death, and hades followed with him; and there was given to them authority over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with the sword and with famine and with death and by the wild beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those that had been slain because of the word of God and because of the testimony that they held.

10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying: How long, O Sovereign holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And there was given to them a white robe, and it was said to them that they should rest yet a while, till the number of their fellow servants and their brethren that should be killed as they had been should be fulfilled.

12 And I saw when he had opened the sixth seal, and there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the whole of the moon became as blood,

13 and the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree casting her untimely figs when shaken by a mighty wind,

14 and the heaven departed as a scroll rolled together, and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth and the great men and the officers and the rich and the mighty and every servant and free man hid themselves in the caves and in the rocks of the mountains,

16 and said to the mountains and rocks: Fall upon us and conceal us from the face of him that sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb.

17 for the great day of his wrath has come, and who is able to stand?

Revelation 7

1 And after this I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth nor on the sea nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the seal of the living God; and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 saying: Hurt not the earth nor the sea nor the trees, till we shall have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of those that were sealed; a hundred and forty-four thousand were sealed of every tribe of the sons of Israel:

5 of the tribe of Judah twelve thousand were sealed; of the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand: of the tribe of Gad twelve thousand:

6 of the tribe of Asher twelve thousand; of the tribe of Naphtali twelve thousand; of the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand;

7 of the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand; of the tribe of Levi twelve thousand; of the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand;

8 of the tribe of Zebulon twelve thousand; of the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand; of the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand were sealed.

9 After these things I saw, and behold, a great multitude, which no one could number, out of every nation and the tribes and peoples and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

10 and they cry with a loud voice, saying: Salvation to our God who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne and the elders and the living creatures, and fell before the throne on their faces and worshipped God,

12 saying: Amen, blessing and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength to our God from age to age.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying to me: These “that are clothed in white robes, who are they and whence came they?”

14 And I said to him: My lord, thou knowest. And he said to me: These are they that come out of great affliction, and they washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and they serve him day and night in his temple, and he that sits on the throne shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither shall they thirst any more, neither shall the sun fall upon them, nor any heat,

17 for the Lamb that is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and lead them to living fountains of waters, and God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes.

Revelation 8

1 And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour.

2 And I saw the seven angels that stand before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and stood by the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given to him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all the saints on the golden altar that is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the incense ascended with the prayers of the saints out of the hand of the angel before God.

5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it from the fire of the altar and threw it into the earth; and there were thunders, and lightnings, and voices, and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels that had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

7 And the first sounded; and there was hail and fire mingled with blood, and it was thrown into the earth; and the third part of the earth was burned up, and the third part of the trees was burned up, and all green grass was burned up.

8 And the second angel sounded; and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea became blood,

9 and the third part of the creatures that were in the sea, that had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded; and there fell from heaven a great star burning as a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers and upon the fountains of waters.

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood. And the third part of the waters became wormwood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded; and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars, that the third part of them might be darkened, and the day might not shine for the third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I saw, and heard an eagle flying in the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice: Woe, woe, woe to them that dwell on the earth because of the rest of the voices of the trumpet of the three angels that are about to sound.

Revelation 9

1 And the fifth angel sounded: and I saw a star that had fallen from heaven to the earth, and to him was given the key of the pit of the abyss.

2 And he opened the pit of the abyss; and there arose out of the pit a smoke as the smoke of a great furnace, and the sun and the air were darkened by means of the smoke of the pit.

3 And out of the smoke came forth locusts upon the earth, and to them was given power as the scorpions of the earth have power.

4 And it was said to them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing nor any tree, but the men such as have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And it was given to them that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months; and this torment is as the torment of a scorpion, when he strikes a man.

6 And in those days men shall seek death and shall not find it, and they shall desire to die and death flees from them.

7 And the shape of the locusts was like horses prepared for battle, and on their heads as crowns like gold, and; their faces as the faces of men.

8 and they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions,

9 and they had breastplates as breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle.

10 And they have tails like scorpions, and stings, and in their tails is their power to hurt men five months:

11 they have a king over them, the angel of the abyss, his name in Hebrew is Abaddon, but in Greek he has the name Apollyon.

12 The first woe has past: behold, there come two woes more after this.

13 And the sixth angel sounded; and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar that is before God,

14 saying to the sixth angel, that had the trumpet: Loose the four angels that are bound on the great river Euphrates.

15 And the four angels were loosed, who were prepared for an hour and a day and a month and a year, to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the armies of horsemen was two myriads of myriads: I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and those that sat on them, having breastplates fiery, hyacinthine, and of sulphur; and the heads of the horses as the heads of lions, and out of their mouths go forth fire and smoke and brimstone.

18 By these three plagues was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and the smoke, and the brimstone that went forth out of their mouths.

19 For the power of the horses is in their mouth and in their tails; for their tails are like serpents, and have heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of men, that were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons and idols of gold and of silver and of brass and of stone and of wood, which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk,

21 and they repented not of their murders, neither of their sorceries nor of their lewdness nor of their thefts.

Revelation 10

1 And I saw another angel that was mighty descending from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire;

2 and he had in his hand a little book opened. And he put his right foot on the sea, but his left on the land,

3 and he cried with a loud voice as a lion roars. And when he had cried, the seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had spoken, I was about to write; and I heard a voice from heaven, saying: Seal up the things that the seven thunders spoke, and write them not.

5 And the angel that I saw standing on the sea and on the earth, lifted up his right hand to heaven.

6 and swore by him that lives from age to age, who created the heaven and the things that are in it, and the earth and the things that are in it, and the sea and the things that are in it, that time should no longer be,

7 but in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall sound, and the mystery of God was finished, as he proclaimed to his servants the prophets.

8 And the voice that I heard from heaven again spoke to me and said: Go, take the little book that is opened in the hand of the angel that stands on the sea and on the earth.

9 And I went to the angel, saying to him that he should give me the little book. And he said to me: Take it and eat it up, and it will make thy belly bitter, but in thy mouth it shall be sweet as honey.

10 And I took the little book out of the hand of the angel and ate it up; and it was in my mouth as honey, sweet; and when I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And they say to me: Thou must again prophesy against many peoples and nations and tongues and kings.

Revelation 11

1 And there was given me a reed like a rod, saying: Arise and measure the temple of God and the altar and those that worship in it.

2 And the court that is without the temple leave out and measure it not, for it is given to the Gentiles, and the holy city shall they tread down forty-two months.

3 And I will give to my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the two olive-trees and the two candlesticks that stand before the Lord of the earth.

5 And if any one will hurt them, fire comes forth from their mouth and devours their enemies; and if any one will hurt them, they must be put to death.

6 These have authority to shut heaven, that rain fall not in the days of their prophecy, and they have authority over the waters to turn them into blood, and to smite the earth with every plague as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have accomplished their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the abyss shall make war with them and overcome them and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies* in the street of the great city, which is called, spiritually, Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord also was crucified.

*No verb in Greek: perhaps “suspended” is best...

9 And they of the peoples and tribes and tongues and nations see their dead bodies three days and a half, and suffer not their dead bodies to be put into a tomb.

10 And they that dwell on the earth rejoice over them and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwell on the earth.

11 And after three days and a half the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon those that saw them.

12 And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying to them: Come up hither; and they went up into heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And in that hour there was a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and there were killed in the earthquake names of men seven thousand, and the rest were frightened and gave glory to the God of heaven.

14 The second woe was passed: the third woe, behold, it comes quickly.

15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying: The kingdom of the world has become our Lord's and his Christ's, and he shall reign from age to age.

16 And the twenty-four elders that sat on their thrones before God fell on their faces and worshipped God,

17 saying: We give thee thanks, Lord God, the Almighty who art and who wast, because thou hast taken thy great power and hast reigned;

18 and the nations were angry, and thy wrath has come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldst give reward to thy servants the prophets and to thy saints and to those that fear thy name, both small and great, and that thou shouldst destroy those that destroy the earth.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there appeared in his temple the ark of his covenant, and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

Revelation 12

1 And a great sign appeared in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars;

2 and being with child she cried, being in travail and in pain to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another sign in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his head seven diadems,

4 and his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman that was about to be delivered, that when she brought forth her child he might devour it.

5 And she brought forth a man-child, who was about to rule all nations with a rod of iron; and her child was caught away to God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and sixty days.

7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels went forth to war with the dragon. And the dragon fought and his angels,

8 and prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, the old serpent, that is called devil and Satan, that deceives the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a great voice in heaven, saying: Now has come the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ, for the accuser of our brethren has been cast out, he that accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb and because of the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives to their death.

12 Therefore rejoice, you heavens and those that dwell in them: alas for the earth and the sea, for the devil has come down to you having great wrath, knowing that he has a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast out into the earth, he persecuted the woman who had brought forth the man-child.

14 And there were given to the woman two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth after the woman water as a river, that he might carry her away with a flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman; and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the river that the dragon threw out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was angry with the woman, and went away to make war with the rest of her children, that keep the commandments of God, and that hold the testimony of Jesus.

Revelation 13

1 And I stood on the sand of the sea, and saw a beast coming up out of the sea, and he had seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten diadems, and on his heads names impiously irreverent.

2 And the beast that I saw was like a leopard, and his feet were as those of a bear, and his mouth was as the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads as if it had been wounded even to death; and his deadly wound was healed; and all the earth wondered after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon, because he gave authority to the beast; and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like the beast? and, Who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given him a mouth that spoke great things and impious words; and authority was given to him to continue forty-two months.

6 And he opened his mouth in impious speeches against God, to utter impious words against his name, and his tabernacle, and against those who dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them; and authority was given him over every tribe and people and tongue and nation.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth will worship him, those whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb that was slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any one has an ear, let him hear.

10 If any one leads into captivity, he shall go into captivity. If any kills with the sword, he must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and faithfulness of the saints.

11 And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon.

12 And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence; and he causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he does great signs, and even causes fire to descend from heaven upon the earth in the sight of men.

14 And he deceives those who dwell on the earth, by means of the signs which he is allowed to do in the presence of the beast, saying to those who dwell on the earth, that they should make an image for the beast which had the wound by the sword, and did live.

15 And it was granted him to give spirit to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast, to be killed.

16 And he causes all, small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark on their right hand, or on their forehead,

17 and that no one should be able to buy or sell, but he that had the mark, the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that has understanding, count the number of the beast; for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred and sixty-six.

Revelation 14

1 And I saw, and behold, the Lamb stood on the mount Zion, and with him a hundred and forty-four thousand, that had his name and his Father's name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of loud thunder; and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps.

3 And they sung a new song before the throne, and before the four living creatures, and the elders; and no one was able to learn the song, but the hundred and forty-four thousand that had been redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they that were not defiled with women; for they are virgins; these are they that follow the Lamb wherever he goes; these were redeemed from among men, the first-fruits to God and to the Lamb.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile; for they are blameless.

6 And I saw another angel flying in mid-heaven, having the eternal gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth, even to every nation and tribe and tongue and people;

7 and he said with a loud voice: Fear God, and give glory to him for the hour of his judgment has come; and worship him that made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

8 And another angel followed, saying: Babylon the great has fallen, has fallen: because she has made all nations drink of the maddening wine of her lewdness.

9 And the third angel followed them, saying, with a loud voice: If any one worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or on his hand, even he shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared without mixture in the cup of his indignation;

10 and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb;

11 and the smoke of their torment ascends from age to age; and they who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name, have no rest day or night.

12 Here is the patience of the saints, who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying: Write, Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord from this time. Yes, says the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors, and their works do follow them.

14 And I saw, and behold, a white cloud, and on the cloud sat one like the Son of man, who had on his head a crown of gold, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, and cried with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud: Thrust in your sickle and reap, for the time has come for you to reap; for the harvest of the earth is fully ripe.

16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple that is in heaven, and he also had a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel that had power over fire, came out from the altar; and he cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, and said: Thrust in your sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for its grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle on the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and threw it into the great winepress of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepress was trodden without the city; and blood came out of the winepress, even to the bridles of the horses, to the distance of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

Revelation 15

1 And I saw another sign in heaven, great and wonderful: seven angels that had seven plagues which are the last; for by them the wrath of God is brought to an end.

2 And I saw, as it were, a sea of glass mingled with fire, and those who had obtained the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.

3 And they sung the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying: Great and wonderful are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.

4 Who will not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? For thou alone art holy; for all nations shall come and worship before thee, because thy judgments are made manifest.

5 And after this I saw, and the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened;

6 and the seven angels that had the seven plagues came out of the temple, clothed in pure white linen, and girded about the breasts with golden girdles.

7 And one of the four living creatures gave to the seven angels seven golden cups full of the wrath of God, who lives from age to age.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no one was able to enter the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were completed.

Revelation 16

1 And I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels: Go and pour out the seven cups of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And the first angel went, and poured out his cup on the land; and there came a hurtful and afflictive sore upon the men that had the mark of the beast, and that worshiped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his cup on the sea; and it became blood, like that of a dead man; and every soul in the sea died.

4 And the third angel poured out his cup on the rivers and the fountains of waters; and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters, saying: Just art thou, who art and who wast, the Holy One, because thou hast thus judged.

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and of prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink, and they are worthy.

7 And I heard a voice from the altar saying: Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and just are thy judgments.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his cup on the sun; and it was given to him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were scorched with great heat; and they uttered impious words against the name of God who has power over these plagues; and they repented not, that they might give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his cup on the throne of the beast; and his kingdom was filled with darkness; and they gnawed their tongues because of pain;

11 and they spoke impiously against the God of heaven because of their pains, and because of their sores; and they repented not of their works.

12 And the sixth angel poured out his cup on the great river Euphrates; and its water was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits, like frogs, come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast; and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of demons that do signs, and they go forth to the kings of the whole world, to bring them together to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

15 Behold, I come as a thief: blessed is he that watches, and keeps his garments, that he may not walk naked, and that men may not see his nakedness.

16 And they brought them together into a place that is called, in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his cup into the air; and there came a great voice from the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying: It is done.

18 And there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders; and there was a great earthquake, such as has not been since men were on the earth, so great an earthquake, and so mighty.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell; and Babylon the great was remembered before God, that he might give her the cup of the wine of his fiercest wrath.

20 And every island fled, and the mountains were not found.

21 And great hail, every stone about the weight of a talent, fell from heaven upon men; and men spoke impiously against God, because of the plague of the hail; for the plague of it was very great.

Revelation 17

1 And there came one of the seven angels that had the seven cups, and talked with me, saying: Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot that sits on many waters,

2 with whom the kings of the earth have practiced lewdness, and with the wine of whose lewdness the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk.

3 And he carried me, away in spirit into the wilderness; and I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast, that was full of impious names, and that had seven heads and ten horns.

4 And the woman was clothed in purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold, and precious stones, and pearls; and she had in her hand a golden cup full of idolatrous pollutions, and the impurities of her lewdness.

5 And on her forehead was a name written: MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND OF THE IDOLATROUS POLLUTIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the witnesses of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great astonishment.

7 And the angel said to me: Why did you wonder? I will tell you the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carries her, that had seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that you saw, was, and is not, and will come out of the abyss, and go to perdition; and those who dwell on the earth, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, will wonder, when they see the beast that was, and is not, though he is yet present.

9 Here is the mind that has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits.

10 And there are seven kings: five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come; and when he comes, he must remain but a little while.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goes to perdition.

12 And the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, who have received no kingdom as yet, but receive authority as kings at the same time with the beast.

13 These have one mind, and will give their power and authority to the beast.

14 These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and those with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.

15 And he said to me: The waters which you saw, where the harlot sits, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues.

16 And the ten horns that you saw, and the beast, these will hate the harlot, and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh, and burn her up with fire.

17 For God has put into their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and to give their kingdom to the beast, till the words of God be accomplished.

18 And the woman that you saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the earth.

Revelation 18

1 And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lighted with his glory.

2 And he cried with a strong voice, saying: Babylon the great has fallen, has fallen, and has become the habitation of demons, and the haunt of every unclean spirit, and the resort of every unclean and hateful bird.

3 For she has made all nations drink of the maddening wine of her lewdness; and the kings of the earth have practiced lewdness with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich by the power of her voluptuousness.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying: Come out of her, my people, lest you become partakers of her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues.

5 For her sins reach even to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.

6 Reward her as she has rewarded you, and render back to her double, according to her works; in the cup that she has mixed, mix for her double.

7 As much glory and voluptuousness as she has given to herself, so much torment and sorrow give her; for she says in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore, her plagues shall come in one day, death and mourning and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire; for strong is the Lord God who judges her,

9 And the kings of the earth, who have practiced lewdness and lived voluptuously with her, shall weep and lament for her, when they see the smoke of her burning

10 standing far off for fear of her torment, saying: Alas, alas, that great city of Babylon, that mighty city: for in one hour has your judgment come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and lament over her, because no one buys their merchandise any more;

12 the merchandise of gold and silver and precious stones, and of pearls, and of fine linen and purple, and of silk and scarlet; and every kind of thiyine wood, and every kind of vessel of ivory, and every kind of vessel of most costly wood, and of brass, and of iron, and of marble;

13 and cinnamon and amomum and incense, and ointment and frankincense, and wine and oil, and fine flour and wheat, and beasts and sheep, and horses and chariots, and bodies and souls of men.

14 And the fruits that your soul desired have departed from you: and all things that are dainty and sumptuous have perished from you and you shall find them no more at all.

15 Those who traded in these things, who were made rich by her, shall stand far off for fear of her torment, weeping and mourning and

16 saying: Alas, alas, that great city that was clothed in fine linen and purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls! for in one hour, so great riches have been brought to ruin.

17 And every master of a ship, and every one in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood far off,

18 and cried, when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying: What city is like the great city?

19 And they threw dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and mourning and saying: Alas, alas, that great city, by which all that had ships in the sea became rich by means of costly merchandise for in one hour she is made desolate.

20 Rejoice over her, O heaven, and you saints and apostles and prophets; for God has avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and threw it into the sea, saying: Thus, with violence shall Babylon, that great city, be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers and musicians, and of pipers and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in you; and no artist of any art whatever, shall he found any more in you; and the sound of the millstone shall be heard no more in you;

23 and the light of a lamp shall shine no more in you; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more in you; for your merchants were the great men of the earth; for by your sorcery were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

Revelation 19

1 After these things, I heard the great voice of a vast multitude in heaven, saying: Alleluia; Salvation and glory and honor and power to our God;

2 for true and righteous are his judgments, for he has judged the great harlot that corrupted the earth with her lewdness; and he has avenged the blood of his servant at her hand.

3 And again they said: Alleluia; and her smoke rises up from age-to-age.

4 And the twenty-four elders, and the four living creatures, fell down, and worshiped God that sits upon the throne, saying: Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying: Praise our God, all you his servants, and you that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying: Alleluia; for the Lord God, the Almighty reigns.

7 Let us rejoice and be glad, and give glory to him; for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and his wife has made herself ready.

8 And to her was given that she should be clothed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints.

9 And he said to me: Write, Blessed are they that are called to the marriage-supper of the Lamb. And he said to me: These are the true words of God.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him; and he said to me: See that you do it not; I am your fellow-servant, and of your brethren that have the testimony of Jesus; worship God; for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat on him was called faithful and true, and in righteousness does he judge, and make war.

12 His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on his head were many diadems: and he had a name written which no one knew, but he himself.

13 And he was clothed with a garment dipped in blood; and his name is called The Word of God.

14 And the armies that were in heaven followed him on white horses; and they were clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goes a sharp, two-edged sword, that with it he may smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treads the winepress of the fiercest wrath of God, the Almighty.

16 And he has, on his raiment and on his thigh, a name written, King of kings, and Lord of lords.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven: Come, gather yourselves to the great supper of God,

18 that you may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of officers, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of those who sit on them. and the flesh of all, both freemen and servants, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, assembled together to make war with him that sat on the horse, and with his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and the false prophet that was with him, who did signs in his presence, with which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast, and those who worshiped his image. These two were thrown alive into the lake of fire, which burns with brimstone.

21 And the rest were slain with the sword of him that sat on the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the birds were filled with their flesh.

Revelation 20

1 And I saw angel come down from heaven, having the key of the abyss, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold of the dragon, that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years,

3 and threw him into the abyss, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be completed; and after this he must be loosed for a little while.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and the power of judging was given to them; and I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God; and of those who had not worshiped the beast, nor his image, and had not received his mark on their forehead, nor on their hand; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

5 [no verse]*

*Editor's note: Mr. Tischendorf prepared and published, in 1869, the common version of our English New Testament, with foot-notes showing all instances in which it varies from the three oldest Greek MSS, *the Sinaitic*, and Vatican, above mentioned, and the Alexandrine, a later and less accurate MS. According to his account, verse 5 is spurious.

6 Blessed and holy is he that has part in this first resurrection; over such the second death has no power; but they shall be priests of God and of the Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

7 And when the thousand years shall have been completed, Satan shall be loosed from his prison,

8 and shall go out to deceive the nations that are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to bring them together to battle: the number of these is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and encompassed the camp of the saints, and the beloved city; and fire came down out of heaven from God, and devoured them.

10 And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are; and they shall be tormented day and night from age to age.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat upon it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and no place was found for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before the throne; and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged out of the things that were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the sea gave up the dead that were in it; and death and hades have up the dead that were in them; and they were judged, every one according to his works.

14 And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And if any one was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

Revelation 21

1 And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the former heaven and the former earth had passed away; and the sea was no more.

2 And I saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven, from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying: Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them; and they shall be his people, and God himself will be with them, their God.

4 And he will wipe every tear from their eyes, and there shall be no more death; neither shall there be any more sorrow, nor crying, nor pain; for the former things have passed away.

5 And he that sat upon the throne said: Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me: Write, for these words are true and faithful.

6 And he said to me: It is done; I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him that thirsts, I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcomes shall inherit these things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearful, and the unbelieving, and the detestable, and murderers, and lewd persons, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came one of the seven angels that had the seven cups full of the seven last plagues; and he talked with me, saying: Come hither, and I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife.

10 And he carried me away in spirit to a mountain, great and high, and showed me the holy city, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God,

11 having the glory of God: that which gave it light was like a most costly stone, like jasper-stone, brilliant as crystal.

12 It had a wall, great and high; and it had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written on them, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel;

13 on the east, three gates; on the north, three gates; on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates.

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me had a measure, a golden reed, that he might measure the city, and its gates, and its wall.

16 And the city lies square; and its length is as great as its breadth. And he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the wall of it, a hundred and forty-four cubits, the measure of a man, that is, of an angel.

18 And the wall of it was built of jasper; and the city was pure gold, like clear glass.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with every costly stone: the first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald;

20 the fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, crysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprase; the eleventh, hyacinth; the twelfth, amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, like clear glass.

22 And I saw no temple in it; for the Lord God, the Almighty, and the Lamb, are its temple.

23 And the city had no need of the sun, nor of the moon, to shine in it; for the glory of God gave it light, and the lamp of it is the Lamb.

24 And the nations shall walk by the light of it; and the kings of the earth bring their glory and their honor into it.

25 And its gates shall not be shut at all by day; for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honor of the nations into it.

27 And there shall not enter it any thing unclean, or that does what is detestable or that makes a lie; but those who are written in the Lamb's book of life.

Revelation 22

1 And he showed me a river of water of life, clear as crystal, coming out from the throne of God and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of the city, and on each side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve kinds of fruit, and yielded its fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse; and the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name shall be in their foreheads.

5 And there shall be no more night; and they have no need of the lamp, nor of the light of the sun; for the Lord God will give them light; and they shall reign from age to age.

6 And he said to me: These words are faithful and true; and the Lord God of the spirits of the prophets has sent his angel to show his servants the things that must shortly take place.

7 And behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keeps the words of the prophecy of this book.

8 And I, John, am he that saw and heard these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel that showed me these things.

9 And he said to me: See that you do it not; I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of those who keep the words of this book: worship God.

10 And he said to me: Seal not the words of the prophecy of this book; for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; he that is polluted, let him be polluted still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 Behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me to give to every one as his work shall be.

13 I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End.

14 Blessed are those who do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and that they may go through the gates into the city.

15 Without are dogs and sorcerers and lewd persons and murderers and idolaters, and every one that loves and makes a lie.

16 I, Jesus, have sent my angel to testify these things to you for the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, the bright morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the bride say. Come; and let him that hears, say, Come; and let him that is thirsty, come; and let him that is willing, take the water of life freely.

18 I testify to every one that hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If any one add to these things. God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book;

19 and if any one take away from the words of the book of this prophecy. God will take away his part from the tree of life, and from the holy city; which things are written in this book.

20 He that testifies these things says: Surely, I come quickly. Amen: come, Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with all the saints.

The Epistle of BarnabasBarnabas 1

1 Hail, my sons and daughters, in the name of our Master Yahshua HaMoshiach, who has loved us in peace.

2 I rejoice exceedingly and beyond measure at your blest and wonderful spirit, since the ordinances of Elohim are great and rich towards you who have received the engrafted grace of the spiritual gift.

3 Wherefore, I congratulate myself the more, hoping to be saved, because I truly see the Spirit poured out upon you from the rich Master of love. Your longed-for appearance has so greatly stricken me with amazement.

4 So being persuaded of this, and knowing in myself that since I spoke among you Yahweh has helped me much in the way of righteousness, I am completely compelled to love you beyond even my own spirit, because great faith and love dwells in you in the hope of His life.

5 Considering also this, that if I take care to communicate to you a part of that which I have received, it shall turn to my reward to have assisted such spirits as you are, I gave diligence to write unto you in few words, in order that together with your faith, you might have your knowledge perfect also.

6 For there are three doctrines ordained of Yahweh: the hope of life, the beginning, and the end.

7 For the Master has made known unto us by the prophets the things which are past, and the things which are at hand, and has given us the first-fruits of the knowledge of the things that are to come. Since, therefore, we see all these things severally working as he has spoken, we ought the more fully and loftily to approach to his altar;

8 But I, not as a master, but as one of yourselves, will show to you a few things, by means of which you may even in this present rejoice.

Barnabas 2

1 Since the days are evil and the adversary has the authority, we ought to take heed to ourselves and seek out the ordinances of Yahweh.

2 For the helpers of our faith are fear and patience, and those who fight on our side are long-suffering and continence.

3 While these, therefore, remain pure in things relating to Yahweh, wisdom and understanding, science and knowledge, rejoice together with them.

4 For Elohim has made known unto us through all the prophets, that he desires neither sacrifices nor whole burnt offerings, nor oblations; for he says in a certain place,

5 To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices? says Yahweh. I am full of the whole burnt offerings of rams; I desire not the fat of lambs, nor the blood of bulls and goats, nor need you come to be seen of me. For who has required these things at your hands? You shall not add thereto to tread my court. If you bring the fine flour, it is vain; incense is an abomination unto me; your new moons and Shabbatot I cannot endure; your fastings and holidays and feasts my spirit hates.

6 So these things he has made of no effect, that the new ordinance of our Master Yahshua HaMoshiach, being free from the yoke of necessity, might proffer an offering not made with hands.

7 Again, he says unto them, Did I command your fathers, when you came out of the land of Egypt, to offer unto me whole burnt offerings and sacrifices?

8 Did I not rather command them this? – Let each of you bear no malice against his neighbor in his heart, and love not a false oath!

9 We ought to perceive, since we are not void of understanding the meaning of the goodness of Abba Yahweh, because he tells us, wishing to seek us who are wandering even as sheep, how we ought to approach him.

10 So he speaks unto us this way: The sacrifice to Elohim is a broken heart; a smell of sweet savor to Yahweh is a heart that glorifies him that made it. Brethren, we ought to examine our salvation accurately, lest the evil one, making an entrance among us, should draw us away from our life.

Barnabas 3

1 So concerning these things, he says again unto them, Why do you fast for me, says Yahweh, so that your voice is heard today in its crying? This is not the fast that I have chosen, for a man to humiliate his spirit, says Yahweh;

2 Nor even if you bend your neck as a ring, and put under you sackcloth and ashes – not even then will you call it an acceptable fast.

3 But to us he says, See the fast which I have chosen, says Yahweh, not that a man should humiliate his spirit, but that he should loose every bond of unrighteousness and untie the knots of the compacts of violence; set at liberty those who are bruised and cancel every agreement of unrighteousness; break your bread with the hungry and if you see the naked, clothe him; bring those who are houseless into your dwelling - and if you see a man that is lowly, despise him not, and turn not away from those of your family.

4 Then will your light break forth early and your garments spring up quickly and justice will go before you - and the glory of Yahweh shall surround you.

5 Then shall you cry and Yahweh shall hearken unto you; while you are yet speaking he shall say, Lo, I am here: if you put away from you the league and the conspiracy and the word of murmuring, and give your bread unto the hungry with all your heart, and have compassion upon the spirit that is lowly.

6 The long-suffering Elohim therefore having seen beforehand that the people whom he had prepared for his Beloved would believe in simplicity, showed to us beforehand about all these things, that we might not come as strangers to their law.

Barnabas 4

1 It behooves us, therefore, that we, searching much concerning the things that are at hand, should seek out the things that are able to save us. Let us fly, therefore, utterly from all the work of unrighteousness, and let us hate the error of the time that now is, that we may be loved in that which is to come.

2 Let us not give liberty unto our spirit that it should have leave to run with sinners and evil men, neither let us be made like unto them.

3 The tribulation being made perfect is at hand, concerning which it is written, as Enoch says, For to this purpose Yahweh has cut short the times and the days, that His beloved might make haste and come into his inheritance.

4 The prophet also speaks in this wise: Ten kingdoms shall reign upon the earth; and there shall rise up after them a little king who shall humble three of the kings under one.

5 And in like manner Daniel speaks concerning him: And I saw the fourth beast, evil and strong and harder than all the beasts of the earth; and I saw how there grew up from him ten horns, and from among them a little horn, growing up beside, and how it humbled under one three of the great horns.

6 You ought, therefore, to understand. And moreover I ask this of you, as being one among you, loving you especially and altogether, even above my own spirit, that you should take heed unto yourselves, and not be like unto certain men, by adding to your sins and saying that their covenant is also ours. Ours, indeed, it is; but they have lost it for ever, in this wise, after that Moshe had already received it.

7 For the scripture says, And Moshe was in the mount fasting forty days and nights, and he received the covenant from Yahweh; even tables of stone written with the finger of the hand of Yahweh. But when they turned unto idols they lost it.

8 For Yahweh says thus unto Moshe, Moshe, get you down quickly, for your people, whom you brought out of the land of Egypt, have disobeyed Torah. And Moshe understood, and cast the two tables from his hands, and the covenant that was on them was broken; to the end that that of the beloved Yahshua might be sealed in our hearts in the hope of his faith.

9 Now, though I wished to write many things unto you, not as a master, but even as suits one that loves you, not to fall short of the things that we have, I have been zealous to write unto you as though I were the offscouring of you. Let us, therefore, give heed unto the last days; for the whole time of our faith will profit us nothing unless now, in the season of iniquity and among the stumbling-blocks that are coming, we resist as becomes the sons of Elohim,

10 That the evil one may not have entrance unawares. Let us fly all vanity and hate perfectly the deeds of the evil way. Do not, entering into your own houses, dwell alone, as though you were already justified, but coming together, inquire one with another concerning the common advantage.

11 For the scripture says, Woe unto those who are wise in their own conceit and learned in their own eyes. Let us be spiritual: let us be a perfect temple unto Elohim. So far as in you lies, let

us practise the fear of Elohim, and strive to keep his commandments, that we may be glad in his ordinances.

12 Yahweh shall judge the world without respect of persons; each shall receive according as he has done; if he be good, righteousness shall go before him, but if he be evil, the reward of wickedness shall be before him.

13 Let us give heed that we do not, as being already elect, take rest, and sleep in our sins, lest the ruler of wickedness, getting the mastery over us, thrust us from the kingdom of Yahweh.

14 And, moreover, my brethren, consider this. When you see that after so many signs and wonders that have been done in Israel, even then they have been abandoned, let us take heed lest, as it is written, many of us be called but few chosen.

Barnabas 5

1 For on this account Yahweh endured to give his flesh unto corruption, that we might be sanctified by the remission of sins, which is by the sprinkling of his blood.

2 For there are written concerning him certain things that pertain unto Israel, and certain other that pertain unto us. For he speaks thus, He was wounded for our iniquities, and vexed for our sins; by his stripes we are healed. He was led as a sheep unto the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before him that shears it.

3 We ought, therefore, to give especial thanks unto Yahweh because he has made known unto us the things that are past, and has made us wise with regard to those that are at hand, neither are we without understanding as regards the future.

4 For the scripture says, Not unjustly is the net stretched for the birds. Now this means that a man will perish justly who, having knowledge of the path of righteousness, shuts himself up into the way of darkness.

5 Consider this too, my brethren; if Yahweh endured to suffer for our spirits, though he were Yahweh of the whole world, to whom Elohim said from the foundation of the world, Let us make man according to our image and according to our likeness, how then did he endure to suffer at the hands of men? Learn you!

6 The prophets having received the grace from him prophesied with regard to him. But he, that he might make death of none

effect and bring to light the resurrection from the dead, because it behoved him to be made manifest in the flesh,

7 Endured it, that he might give unto our fathers the promise, and by preparing for himself a new people, might show, while upon earth, that he will raise the dead and himself execute judgment.

8 Yea, further; though he taught Israel and did so many signs and wonders among them, yet they loved him not.

9 But when he chose out his own apostles, who were about to preach his gospel, they were men unrighteous beyond all sin, that he might show that he came not to call the righteous but sinners to repentance; then made He himself manifest that he was the Son of Elohim.

10 For if he had not come in the flesh how could men have looked upon him and have been saved, since they cannot endure to look at the rays of the sun which must one day perish, and which is the work of his hands?

11 For this purpose did the Son of Elohim come in the flesh, that he might sum up and finish the sin of them who persecuted his prophets unto death;

12 Therefore he endured even unto this. For Elohim says that the smiting of his flesh it was from them. When they shall smite their shepherd, then shall the sheep of the flock be scattered.

13 But He Himself wished thus to suffer, for it was necessary that He should suffer upon the stake; for he who prophesies about him says, Spare My spirit from the sword, and again, Drive nails into My flesh, for the synagogues of evil men have risen against Me.

14 And again he says, Behold, I have given My back unto the scourging and My cheeks unto buffetings; My face also have I set as a hard rock.

Barnabas 6

1 When, therefore, he made the commandment what says He? Who is he that disputes with Me? Let him resist Me; or who is he that contends with Me? Let him draw nigh unto the Son of Yahweh.

2 Woe unto you, for you shall all wax old as a garment, and the moth shall devour you. And again the prophet says, Since He has been placed, as a strong stone, for crushing; behold I will

place on the foundation of Zion a stone precious, elect, a chief corner stone of great price.

3 And then what says He? And he that believes in Him shall live for ever. Is then our hope in a stone? Elohim forbid. But it is thus said because Yahweh has made strong his flesh, for He says, and He made me as it were a hard rock.

4 And again, The stone which the builders rejected has become the head of the corner. And again He says, This is the day, great and wonderful, which Yahweh has made.

5 I write unto you the more simply that you may understand. I am the offscouring of your love.

6 What then says the prophet again? The synagogue of the wicked came around Me; they surrounded Me as bees do a honey-comb, and, over My garment they cast lots.

7 Since, therefore, He was about to be made manifest and to suffer in the flesh, His suffering was showed beforehand. For the prophet says unto Israel, Woe unto their spirit, for they have counselled an evil counsel among themselves, saying, Let us bind the righteous because He is an encumbrance unto us.

8 And what says the other prophet, even Moshe, unto them? Behold, thus says Yahweh Elohim: Enter into the good land which Yahweh swore unto Abraham and Yitzchak and Yaakov, and inherit it, even a land flowing with milk and honey.

9 What says the knowledge? Learn you. Hope, it says, upon Yahshua, who is about to be manifested unto you in the flesh. For man is but earth which suffers; for, from the face of the ground was made the moulding of Adam.

10 What then means He when He says, Into the good land which flows with milk and honey? Blessed be Yahweh, brethren, who has put into you wisdom and knowledge of his secret things. For the prophet speaks a parable from Yahweh. Who shall understand, except he that is wise and skilful and that loves his Master?

11 Since, therefore, having renewed us by the remission of our sins, He has made us of a new character, He wills that we should have the spirits of children, inasmuch as it is indeed He who has formed us anew.

12 For the scripture says concerning us, that He says unto the Son, Let us make man after our own image and according to our likeness; and let them rule over the beasts of the earth, and the fowls of heaven, and the fishes of the sea. And Yahweh

said, when He saw how excellent our form was, Increase and multiply and replenish the earth. These things he says unto the Son.

13 Again I will show unto you how Yahweh speaks unto us, since he has made a second fashioning in these last days; Yahweh says, Behold I make the last even as the first. For to this purpose did the prophet preach. Enter you into the land flowing with milk and honey, and have dominion over it.

14 Behold now we have been formed again, even as he says again in another prophet: Behold, says Yahweh, I will take out from these, that is out of those whom the Spirit of Yahweh foresaw, the hearts of stone, and will put into them hearts of flesh, because he himself was about to be manifested in the flesh and to dwell among us.

15 For the habitation of our heart is a temple holy unto Yahweh.

16 For Yahweh says again, Whereby shall I appear before Yahweh my Elohim and be glorified? He says too, I will give thanks unto you in the assembly, in the midst of my brethren; I will sing unto you in the midst of the assembly of the saints. We are, therefore, those whom he brought into the good land.

17 What, then, means the milk and honey? It is because a child is kept alive, first with honey, afterwards with milk. So we, too, being quickened by faith in his promise and by his word, shall live and rule over the earth.

18 And we said previously, And let them increase and multiply and rule over the fish. Who then is he who is able to rule over the beasts, the fish, and fowls of heaven? For we ought to perceive that to rule belongs to authority, so that a man by giving commands may exercise mastery.

19 If, therefore, this does not take place now, he has told us when it will; even when we ourselves have been made perfect, so that we become heirs of the covenant of Yahweh.

Barnabas 7

1 You perceive, therefore, beloved children, that our good Master has manifested unto us all things beforehand, to the end that we should know whom we ought to praise, returning thanks for all things.

2 If, therefore, the Son of Elohim, being He who is Yahweh and who is about to judge the quick and the dead, suffered, to the

end that his stripes might make us live, let us know for certain that the Son of Elohim could not suffer except on our account.

3 But being impaled, he was given to drink of vinegar and gall. How, then, did the priests of the temple signify concerning this? Now, the commandment is written in this wise: Whosoever shall not fast on the fast, he shall die the death; Yahweh has commanded it. Since he also was about to offer the vessel that contained his spirit as a sacrifice, in order that the type might be fulfilled which was given by the offering of Yitzchak at the altar,

4 What says he in the book of the prophet? And let them eat of the goat which is offered on the fast for the sins of all. Attend you diligently thereto. And let the priests alone eat of the unwashed entrails with vinegar.

5 With what signification? Because you will one day give Me to drink of vinegar and gall, when I am about to offer up My flesh for My new people, you eat it alone, while the people fast and lament in sackcloth and ashes. He commanded this in order that He might show that He had to suffer at their hands.

6 How, then, did he give His commands? Attend you. Take you two goats, fair and like each other, and offer them up. And let the priest take one of them as a whole burnt offering for sin.

7 But what shall they do with the other? Let the other, he says, be accursed. Now attend you, how the type of Yahshua is made manifest.

8 And do you all spit upon it and pierce it, and put scarlet wool around its head, and so let it be cast out into the wilderness. And when this has been done, he who bears the goat leads it out into the wilderness, and takes away the wool and places it upon a bush, which is called Rachel, the shoots of which we are accustomed to eat when we find them in the fields. Thus the fruit of the Rachel only is sweet.

9 What, therefore, means this? Attend you. One is brought to the altar, the other is accursed, and the accursed one is crowned, because they shall see Him in that day, who had the scarlet robe about His flesh, and they shall say, Is not this He whom once we set at naught and impaled, and spat upon and pierced? Truly this was He who at that time said that He was the Son of Yahweh.

10 How then was the one like to the other? In this respect were the goats like Him: they were fair and equal, so that when they

saw Him coming they were astonished at the likeness to the goat. Therefore, behold here the type of Yahshua, who was about to suffer.

11 And what means the wool placed in the midst of thorns? It is a type of Yahshua, which has been placed in the congregation. For he who wishes to take the scarlet wool must suffer many things, because the thorn is terrible, and must after tribulation gain possession of it. So he says, Those who would see me and to take hold of my kingdom must through trouble and suffering receive Me.

Barnabas 8

1 And what type, do you think was the commandment unto Israel, that the men in whom sin had been accomplished should offer a heifer, and after they had slaughtered it should burn it, and that children should then take the ashes and cast them into vessels, and place scarlet wool and hyssop around a stick – behold, again, the type of the stake and the scarlet wool – and so the children should sprinkle the people one by one, that they might be purged from their sins?

2 Behold, therefore, in what way he speaks unto you with simplicity. The heifer signifies Yahshua; the sinful men who offer it are the men who brought him unto the slaughter. But now the men are no longer before us, no longer does the glory belong to sinners.

3 The children who sprinkled are those who brought us the good news of the forgiveness of sins and purification of heart, to whom He has given the authority of the gospel for the purpose of preaching, being twelve in number, for a testimony unto the tribes, for twelve were the tribes of Israel.

4 And why, then, were the children who sprinkled three in number? For a testimony unto Abraham, Yitzchak, and Yaakov, because these are great before Elohim.

5 And what signifies the wool upon the stick? Because the kingdom of Yahshua is upon the stake, and because those who hope upon him shall live for ever.

6 And why are there at the same time the wool and the hyssop? Because in his kingdom the days in which we shall be saved shall be evil and filthy, because also he that grieves His flesh is healed through the purifying of the hyssop.

7 And these things having been done on this account are manifest unto us, but obscure unto them, because they hearkened not unto the voice of Yahweh.

Barnabas 9

1 He says also again concerning our ears how he has circumcised our heart. Yahweh says in the prophet, They have hearkened unto Me with the hearing of their ears; and again, He says, those who are far off shall hear with their ears; they shall know what I have done; and be you circumcised, says Yahweh, in your heart;

2 And again, Hear, O Israel, for thus says Yahweh your Elohim; and again the Spirit of Yahweh prophesied, Who is he that wishes to live for ever? Let him hearken unto the voice of My Son.

3 And again He says, Hear, O heaven, and give ear, O earth, for Yahweh has spoken these things for a testimony. And again He says, Hearken unto the voice of Yahweh, you rulers of this people. And again He says, Hearken you children unto the voice of one crying in the wilderness.

4 To this end, therefore, has He circumcised our hearing, that when we hear His word, we should believe; for the circumcision in which they trust is done away with. For he has said that circumcision is not that which was made in the flesh; but they have transgressed, for an evil angel has deluded them.

5 He says unto them, These things says Yahweh your Elohim – here I find a new commandment – Sow not among thorns, but be you circumcised unto your Master. And what says he? Circumcise the hardness of your hearts, and harden not your neck. And again, Behold, says Yahweh, all the Gentiles are uncircumcised in their foreskin, but this people is uncircumcised in their hearts.

6 But He will say, Of a truth the people have been circumcised for a seal unto them; but so, also, has every Syrian and Arabian, and all the priests of idols. Do they also belong to the covenant? But the Egyptians also are in circumcision.

7 Learn, therefore, children of love, richly concerning all things, that Abraham, who first gave circumcision, circumcised, looking forward in the spirit unto Yahshua, having received the doctrines of the three letters.

8 For he says, And Abraham circumcised out of his household eighteen and three hundred. What, then, as the knowledge that was given by this? Learn you that he mentions the eighteen first, and then, having made an interval, he mentions the three hundred. In the eighteen, IH*, you have Yahshua; and because the stake in the letter T was about to convey the grace of redemption, he mentions also the three hundred. Therefore, he shows Yahshua in the two letters, IH, and the stake in the one, T.

*That is, Iota (I) and Eta (H)

9 He knows this who has placed the engrafted gift of his teaching in us. No one has had from me a more true account than this; but I know that you are worthy.

Barnabas 10

1 But in that Moshe said, You shall not eat the swine, nor the eagle, nor the hawk, nor the crow, nor any fish that has not scales in itself, he had in his mind three doctrines.

2 For in the end he says unto them in Deuteronomy, And I will arrange before this people my ordinances. The commandment of Elohim is not, therefore, that they should not eat; but Moshe spoke in a spiritual sense.

3 He spoke of the swine with this meaning: You shall not cleave, he means, unto men of this sort, who are like unto swine, for when they become wanton they forget their Master, but when they are in want they think upon Yahweh; even as the swine when it eats knows not its master, but when it is hungry it cries, and when it has received it is again silent.

4 Nor shall you eat of the eagle, nor of the hawk, nor of the kite, nor of the crow. You shall not, he means, cleave to, nor be like to men of this sort, who know not how to provide sustenance for themselves by labour and sweat, but in their iniquity seize the property of others, and, as though they walked in innocence, watch and observe whom they shall plunder, through their covetousness; even as these birds alone provide not sustenance for themselves by means of toil, but, sitting idle, seek out how they may eat the flesh of others, being destructive by reason of their wickedness.

5 And you shall not eat, he says, of the lamprey, or the polypus, or the cuttle-fish. You shall not, he means, cleave to or become like unto men of this sort, who are impious unto the end, and

have been already condemned to death, even as these accursed fish alone swim in the depth, not floating as the others do, but dwelling in the earth below the depth of the sea.

6 Thus, he says, you shall not eat the hare, meaning you shall not indulge in unnatural lusts;

7 Nor shall you eat the hyena, meaning you shall not be an adulterer;

8 Nor shall you eat the weasel, meaning you shall not do uncleanness with your mouth concerning food;

9 Therefore Moshe spoke in the spirit these three doctrines. But they, according to the lusts of their flesh, received them as being about meat.

10 And David receives knowledge concerning the same three doctrines, and says in like manner, Blessed is the man who has not walked in The counsel of the unrighteous, even as the fish walk in darkness into the depths of the sea, and has not stood in the way of sinners, even as those who pretend to fear Yahweh sin as does the swine, and has not sat in the seat of the destroyers, even as the birds that sit for prey. You have also in the end a commandment concerning food;

11 But Moshe said, Eat you everything that is cloven-footed and that chews the cud. What means he? He that takes food knows him that feeds him, and, resting upon him, seems to be glad. He therefore says well, having regard to the commandment. What then means he? Cleave you unto those who fear Yahweh, who walk in his commandments, which they have received in their hearts; unto those who speak of the ordinances of Yahweh, and observe them, unto them who know that the practice of them is a work of gladness, and who meditate on the word of Yahweh. But what means that which cleaves the hoof? It means that the just walks even in this world, and expects the holy life. Behold how well Moshe has made this Torah!

12 But how was it possible for them to perceive or understand these things? But we, having rightly understood the commandments, speak them even as Yahweh has willed. On this account has He circumcised our ears and hearts, that we should understand these things.

Barnabas 11

1 Let us inquire, therefore, if Yahweh cared to show us beforehand concerning the water and concerning the stake. Concerning the water it is written, with respect to Israel, how that they will not receive the immersion that brings remission of sins, but will establish one for themselves.

2 The prophet therefore speaks in this wise, Be astonished, O heaven! And let the earth be afraid still more at this, because this people has done two great and evil things: they have abandoned Me who am the fountain of life, and have dug for themselves broken cisterns.

3 Is my holy mountain of Zion a deserted rock? You shall be as the young of a bird which have flown when the nest has been taken away.

4 And again the prophet says, I will go before you and will lay low the mountains. And I will break the doors of brass and burst the bars of iron; and I will give unto you the treasures of darkness hidden and unseen, that they may know that I am Yahweh Elohim; and, He shall dwell in the lofty cave of the strong rock.

5 Then what says he of the Son? His water is faithful. You shall behold the king in his glory, and your spirit shall practice the fear of Yahweh.

6 And again, in another prophet, he says, He that does these things shall be as a tree that grows beside the watercourses, which gives his fruit in his season; and his leaf shall not fall off, and whatever he does shall prosper.

7 Not so are the unrighteous, not so; they are like the dust which the wind carries away from the face of the earth, wherefore the unrighteous shall not rise up in judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the just: for Yahweh knows the way of the just, but the way of the unrighteous shall perish.

8 you perceive how he has put together the water and the stake. For what he means is this, Blessed are those who having hoped on the stake have gone down into the water. For he speaks of a reward to be given at the due season; then, says he, I will render what is due unto you. But now in that he says, Their leaves shall not fall off, he means this, That every word that goes out from your mouth in faith and love shall be for a refuge and a hope unto many.

9 And again another prophet says, And the land of Yaakov was praised beyond the whole earth. By so saying He means this, He shall glorify the vessel that contains his Spirit.

10 And what says he afterwards? There was a river flowing on the right, and there grew up on its banks fair trees, and whosoever eats of them shall live for ever.

11 By this he means that we go down into the water full of sin and pollution, and go up bearing fruit in the heart, having in the spirit fear and hope toward Yahshua. And whoever shall eat of them shall live for ever. He means this, Whoever, He says, shall hear these words spoken and believe them shall live for ever.

Barnabas 12

1 In like manner again He signifies concerning the stake in another prophet, who says, And when shall these things be fulfilled? Yahweh says, When the tree has been bent and shall rise up again, and when blood shall flow from the tree. You have again a prophecy concerning the stake and about him who is about to be impaled.

2 And he says again in Moshe, when Israel was being made war upon by aliens, even that He might remind them while they were being made war upon, that for their sins they were being delivered over unto death, the Spirit says unto the heart of Moshe, that he should make the form of a stake, and of Him who was about to suffer, for if, He says, they shall not hope upon Him, they will be made war upon for ever. Moshe, therefore, arranges weapon against weapon in the midst of the battle, and standing higher than all, stretched out his hands, and so again Israel conquered; then, when he let them down, they were again slaughtered.

3 Wherefore? that they might know that they are not to be saved except they hope upon him.

4 And again, in another prophet, he says, All day long have I stretched out my hands unto a people who are disobedient, and who speak against My righteous way.

5 Again, Moshe makes another type of Yahshua, that it behoves Him that he should suffer, and cause others to live, whom they thought that they had destroyed in figure when Israel was falling: For Yahweh made every kind of serpent to bite them, and they died, since Eve committed the

transgression by means of the serpent, to the end that he might convince those who through their transgression they should be given over to the pangs of death.

6 For in the end Moshe himself, after that he had given commandment, There shall not be among you a molten image or a graven image for an elohim, makes one himself, that he might show a type of Yahshua. Moshe, therefore, makes a brazen serpent, and sets it aloft, and calls the people by a proclamation.

7 When, therefore, they had come together they besought Moshe, that he should offer supplication for them concerning their healing. Moshe therefore said unto them, When any of you is bitten let him come unto the dead serpent, that is placed upon the tree, and let him believe and hope that, though it is dead, it is able to make him live, and immediately he shall be saved; and so did they. You have, therefore, again in these things also, the glory of Yahshua, that in him and to him are all things.

8 What again says Moshe unto Yahoshua the son of Nun, after he had given this name to him, being a prophet, to this end alone, that all the people might hear that the Father reveals all things concerning the Son, Yahshua?

9 Moshe therefore says unto Yahoshua the son of Nun, having given him this name, when he sent him to spy out the land, Take the book into your hands and write what Yahweh says, even that the Son of Yahweh, in the last days, will cut off the whole house of Amalek from the roots.

10 Behold, therefore, again Yahshua, not the son of man but the Son of Elohim, and by a type made manifest in the flesh. Since, therefore, they should one day say that Moshiach is the son of David, David himself prophesies, being in fear and understanding the deceitfulness of sinners, Yahweh said unto my Yahweh, Sit on my right hand until I make your enemies your footstool.

11 And again Isaiah speaks in this wise, Yahweh said unto Moshiach, my Master, whose right hand I have held, that the Gentiles should hearken before him, and I will break the strength of kings. Behold how David calls Him Yahweh, and does not call him son.

Barnabas 13

1 Let us inquire, therefore, whether this people or the first people inherits, and whether the covenant is unto us or unto them.

2 Hear, now, what the scripture says concerning the people. But Yitzchak prayed for Rebecca his wife because she was barren, and she conceived. Then Rebecca went forth to inquire of Yahweh, and Yahweh said unto her, Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples are in your bowels, and the one people shall surpass the other, and the elder shall serve the younger.

3 We ought to understand who Yitzchak was and who Rebecca was, and concerning whom he declared that the one people was greater than the other.

4 And in another prophecy Yaakov speaks yet more clearly to Yosef his son, saying, Behold Yahweh has not deprived me of your face; bring unto me your sons, that I may bless them.

5 And he brought unto him Ephrayim and Manasheh, wishing that he should bless Manasheh, because he was the elder. Yosef, therefore, brought him to the right hand of his father Yaakov. But Yaakov saw in spirit a figure of the people that should be hereafter. And what says the Scriptures? And Yaakov crossed his hands, and placed his right hand on the head of Ephrayim, the second and youngest, and blessed him. And Yosef said unto Yaakov, Change your right hand unto the head of Manasheh, because he is my firstborn son. And Yaakov said unto Yosef, I know, my child, I know; but the elder shall serve the younger; but this one also shall be blessed.

6 Behold in what way he appointed that this people should be the first and heir of the covenant.

7 If, therefore, it were moreover mentioned through Abraham also, we have the perfecting of our knowledge. What, therefore, says he unto Abraham, when he alone believed, and it was counted unto him for righteousness? Behold I have made you, Abraham, a father of the nations who in uncircumcision believe in Yahweh.

Barnabas 14

1 Yes; but let us inquire whether he has given the covenant that he swore unto the fathers that he would give unto the people. Truly he has given it; but they were not worthy to receive it on account of their sins.

2 For the prophet says, And Moshe was fasting in Mount Sinai forty days and forty nights, that he might receive the covenant which Yahweh has made with his people. And he received from Yahweh the two tables that were written in the spirit with the finger of the hand of Yahweh. And Moshe, when he had received them, was bringing them down to the people for to give them.

3 And Yahweh said unto Moshe, Moshe, Moshe, get you down quickly, for your people, whom you brought out of the land of Egypt, have disobeyed Torah. And Moshe perceived that they had again made molten images, and he cast the tables from his hands, and the tables of the covenant of Yahweh were broken.

4 Moshe indeed received them, but the people were not worthy. Hearken you, therefore, how we have received them. Moshe received them being a servant, but Yahweh himself gave unto us to be a people of inheritance, having suffered for our sake.

5 And He was made manifest, that both they might be made perfect in their sins, and that we, through Him that inherited, might receive the covenant of the Master Yahshua, who, for this purpose was prepared, that by appearing himself and redeeming from darkness our hearts, which were already lavished on death, and given over to the iniquity of deceit, he might place in us the covenant of his people.

6 For it is written how the Father gives commandment unto him, that having redeemed us from darkness, he should prepare for himself a holy people.

7 Therefore the prophet says, I, Yahweh your Elohim, have called you in righteousness, and I will hold your hand and make you strong; and I have given you for a covenant to the nation, for a light unto the Gentiles, to open the eyes of the blind, and to bring out of chains those who are bound, and from the house of prison those who sit in darkness. We know from whence we were redeemed.

8 And again, the prophet says, Behold, I have placed you for a light unto the Gentiles, that you should be for a salvation even unto the end of the earth; thus says Yahweh Elohim who has redeemed you.

9 And again, the prophet says, The Spirit of Yahweh is upon me, because he has anointed me to preach the gospel unto the poor, he has sent me to heal those that are broken in heart, to preach deliverance to the captives, and the recovery of sight to

the blind, to tell of the acceptable year of Yahweh, and the day of recompense, to comfort all that mourn.

Barnabas 15

1 And, moreover, concerning the Shabbat it is written in the Ten Commandments, in which he spoke on Mount Sinai unto Moshe face to face: Sanctify you the Shabbat of Yahweh with pure hands and a pure heart.

2 And in another place he says, If My sons shall keep My Shabbat, then will I place My mercy upon them.

3 He speaks, too, of the Shabbat in the beginning of the creation: And Elohim made in six days the works of his hands, and finished them on the seventh day, and rested in it and sanctified it.

4 Consider, my children, what signify the words, He finished them in six days. They mean this: that in six thousand years Yahweh will make an end of all things, for a day is with him as a thousand years. And he himself bears witness unto me, saying: Behold this day a day shall be as a thousand years. Therefore, my children, in six days, that is in six thousand years, shall all things be brought to an end.

5 And the words, He rested on the seventh day, signify this: After that his Son has come, and has caused to cease the time of the wicked one, and has judged the unrighteous, and changed the sun and the moon and the stars, then shall he rest well on the seventh day.

6 And further he says, you shall sanctify it with pure hands and a pure heart. Who, therefore, can sanctify the day which Yahweh has sanctified, unless he be pure of heart? in all things have we been deceived.

7 Behold, that then indeed we shall be able to rest well and sanctify; even when we ourselves, having been justified, and having received the promise, when iniquity exists no longer, but all things have been made new by Yahweh, we shall then be able to sanctify it, having been first sanctified ourselves.

8 And, further, he says unto them, Your new moons and your Shabbatot I cannot endure. See, now, what He means. The Shabbatot that now are, are not acceptable unto Me, but that which I have made is, even that in which, after that I have brought all things to an end, I shall make a beginning of the eighth day, which thing is the beginning of another world.

9 Wherefore we also keep the eighth day as a day of gladness, on which also we learned that Yahshua was risen from the dead, and after he had appeared ascended unto heaven.

Barnabas 16

1 And I will, moreover, tell you concerning the temple, how these wretched men, being deceived, placed their hopes in the building as if it were the habitation of Elohim, and not on the Elohim who has made them.

2 For almost after the manner of the Gentiles did they consecrate Him in the temple. But what says Yahweh, making it of no effect? Hearken you: Who has measured out the heaven with his palm, or the earth with the flat of his hand, is it not I? says Yahweh. Heaven is My throne, and earth the footstool of My feet. What house will you build for Me, or what shall be the place of My rest? You have known that their hope was vain.

3 And, yet further, He says again, Behold those who have destroyed this temple shall rebuild it.

4 And so is it done, for through their war it has been destroyed by the enemy, and now both they themselves and the servants of their enemies shall rebuild it.

5 And again it was made manifest how the temple and the people of Israel should be given up to their enemies. For the scripture says, And it shall come to pass in the last days that Yahweh shall deliver up the sheep of his pasture, and their fold and their tower shall he give up to destruction; and it was done according to that which Yahweh had spoken.

6 Let us inquire, therefore, whether there be any temple of Yahweh. There is; even where he himself has declared that he would make and perfect it. For it is written, And it shall be when the week is completed that the temple of Yahweh shall be built gloriously in the name of Yahweh.

7 I find, therefore, that there is a temple; how then shall it be built in the name of Yahweh? Learn you. Before that we believed in Elohim the habitation of our heart was corrupt and feeble, as being of a truth a temple built by hands. For it was full of idolatry, and was a habitation of demons, because we did such things as were contrary to Elohim;

8 But it shall be built in the name of Yahweh. Attend you: that the temple of Yahweh may be built gloriously. But in what

manner? Learn you: having received the remission of our sins, and having hoped upon the name of Yahweh, we have become new, having been again created entirely. Wherefore Elohim of a truth dwells in us as in an habitation.

9 How? The word of his faith, the calling of his promise, the wisdom of his ordinances, the commandments of his doctrine, he himself prophesying in us, he himself dwelling in us. To us, who were enslaved by death, he opens the gate of the temple, which is his mouth, and, giving us repentance, leads us into the temple incorruptible.

10 For he who desires to be saved looks not unto the man, but unto him that dwells in him and speaks in him, wondering that he had never before heard him speaking such words out of his mouth, or even desired to hear. This is the spiritual temple built by Yahweh.

Barnabas 17

1 So far as it is possible for me to show you these things with simplicity, my mind and spirit hopes that I have not omitted any of the things that pertain unto salvation;

2 For if I write unto you concerning the things that are at hand, or the things that will be hereafter, you would not be able to understand them, because they are couched in parables. These things, therefore, are thus.

Barnabas 18

1 Let us pass on now to another kind of knowledge and instruction. There are two paths of instruction and authority – the one that of light, and the other that of darkness. But there is a great difference between the two paths. For over the one are appointed as illuminators the angels of Elohim, over the other the angels of Satan;

2 On the one side is he who is Yahweh from everlasting to everlasting, on the other is the ruler of the world that now lies in wickedness.

Barnabas 19

1 Now, the path of life is this: If any one wishes to travel to the appointed place, let him hasten by means of his works. Now, the knowledge of walking in it that is given unto us is of this kind:

2 You shall love him that made you, you shall fear him that formed you, you shall glorify him that redeemed you from death. You shall be simple in heart, and rich in spirit; you shall not cleave unto those who go in the path of death. You shall hate whatever is not pleasing unto Elohim; you shall hate all hypocrisy; you shall not abandon the commandments of Yahweh;

3 You shall not exalt yourself; you shall be humble in all things; you shall not take glory unto yourself; you shall not take evil counsel against your neighbour; you shall not take audacity into your spirit.

4 You shall not commit fornication, you shall not commit adultery. You shall not pollute yourself with mankind: let not the word of Elohim go forth from you in corruption. You shall not accept the person of any to reprove any man for transgression. You shall be gentle, you shall be quiet; you shall tremble at the words that you have heard; you shall not bear malice against your brother;

5 You shall not doubt whether a thing shall be or not; you shall not take the name of Yahweh in vain. You shall love your neighbor beyond your own spirit; you shall not kill a child by abortion, neither shall you destroy it after it is born. You shall not remove your hand from your son or your daughter, but shalt teach them from their youth the fear of Yahweh.

6 You shall not covet your neighbor's goods; you shall not be an extortioner; you shall not cleave with your spirit unto the proud, but you shall have your behavior with the lowly and the just. Receive as blessings the troubles that come unto you, knowing that without Elohim nothing is done.

7 You shall not be double-minded nor double-tongued, for to be double-tongued is the snare of death. You shall submit yourself to your masters as to the image of Elohim, with shame and fear. You shall not give commands with bitterness to your servant and your handmaid, who hope in the same Elohim as you do, lest, perchance, you cease to fear Elohim, who is over both. For he came not to call men with respect of persons, but to call those whom the Spirit had prepared.

8 You shall communicate in all things with your neighbour, and shalt not say that things are thine own. For if you be partners in that which is incorruptible, how much more in the things that are corruptible? You shall not be hasty of speech,

for the mouth is a snare of death. As far as you are able, you shall be pure concerning your spirit.

9 Be not a stretcher forth of your hand in receiving, and a drawer back of it in giving. You shall love, as the apple of thine eye, every one that speaks unto you the word of Yahweh.

10 You shall remember the Day of Judgment by night and by day; and you shall seek out every day the persons of the saints.

11 You shall not doubt to give, nor shall you murmur in giving. Give to every one that asks you, and you shall know who is the good recompenser of the reward. You shall take care of that which you have received, neither adding thereto, nor taking therefrom. You shall hate the evil man unto the end, and shalt judge justly.

12 You shall not make a schism, but shalt make peace by bringing adversaries together. You shall make confession of your sins. You shall not go unto prayer with an evil conscience. This is the way of life, either labouring by means of the word and proceeding to exhort, and practicing to save the spirit by the word, or you shall work by your hands for the redemption of your sins.

Barnabas 20

1 But the path of darkness is crooked and full of cursing, for it is the path of eternal death and punishment, in which way are the things that destroy the spirit. Idolatry, boldness, the pride of power, hypocrisy, double-heartedness, adultery, murder, rape, haughtiness, transgression, deceit, malice, self-will, witchcraft, sorcery, covetousness, want of the fear of Elohim.

2 Here are those who are persecutors of the good, haters of truth, lovers of lies; those who know not the reward of righteousness, who cleave not to what is good nor unto just judgment; who attend not to the widow and the orphan; who are awake not unto the fear of Elohim, but unto evil; from whom meekness and patience are afar off; who love the things that are vain, who follow after recompense, who pity not the poor, who labour not for him who is in trouble; who are prompt to evil-speaking, who know not him that made them; murderers of children, corruptors of the image of Elohim; who turn away from the poor man and oppress the afflicted; advocates of the rich, unjust judges of the poor, sinners in all things.

Barnabas 21

1 It is therefore right that he who has learned the ordinances of Yahweh, even as many as have been written beforehand, should walk in them. For he who does these things shall be glorified in the kingdom of Elohim, but he who chooses the contrary things shall perish together with his works. On this account is the resurrection; on this account is the retribution.

2 I ask those who are of high estate among you, if you will receive any friendly advice from me, keep those with you toward whom you may do what is honorable. Fail not in so doing.

3 The day is at hand in which everything shall perish together with the evil one; Yahweh is nigh at hand, and his reward also.

4 Again and again do I ask you, be you good Torah-givers over yourselves, be you good advisers of yourselves. Abide faithful counsellors of one another; take out of the midst of you all hypocrisy,

5 And may Elohim, who rules the whole world, give you wisdom, understanding, science, knowledge of his ordinances, and patience.

6 And be you taught of Elohim, inquiring what Yahweh seeks of you, and so work that you may be found saved in the Day of Judgment.

7 But if there is any memory of that which is good, remember me while you practice these things, that both your desire and your watching may turn unto some good.

8 I beseech you this, asking it as a favor. So long as the good vessel is with you, fail not in any of these things, but seek them out without ceasing, and fulfill all the commandments, for these things are worthy.

9 Therefore I have been the more anxious to write unto you, so far as I was able, to the end that I might make you glad. Farewell, children of love and peace; the Elohim of glory and of all grace be with your spirit. Amen.

The Shepherd of HermasShepherd 1

1 VISION ONE.

2 The master, who reared me, had sold me to one Rhoda in Rome.

3 After many years, I met her again, and began to love her as a sister.

4 After a certain time I saw her bathing in the river Tiber;

5 and I gave her my hand, and led her out of the river.

6 So, seeing her beauty, I reasoned in my heart, saying, Happy were I, if I had such an one to wife both in beauty and in character.

7 I merely reflected on this and nothing more.

8 After a certain time, as I was journeying to Cumae, and glorifying God's creatures for their greatness and splendour and power, as I walked I fell asleep.

9 And a Spirit took me, and bore me away through a pathless tract, through which no man could pass

10 for the place was precipitous, and broken into clefts by reason of the waters.

11 When then I had crossed the river, I came into the level country, and knelt down, and began to pray to the Lord and to confess my sins.

12 Now, while I prayed, the heaven was opened, and I see the lady, whom I had desired, greeting me from heaven, saying, Good morrow, Hermas.

13 And, looking at her, I said to her, Lady, what doest thou here?

14 Then she answered me, I was taken up, that I might convict thee of thy sins before the Lord.

15 I said to her, Dost thou now convict me?

16 Nay, not so, said she, but hear the words, that I shall say to thee.

17 God, Who dwelleth in the heavens, and created out of nothing the things which are, and increased and multiplied them for His holy Church's sake, is wroth with thee, for that thou didst sin against me.

18 I answered her and said, Sin, against thee?

19 In what way?

20 Did I ever speak an unseemly word unto thee?

21 Did I not always regard thee as a goddess?

22 Did I not always respect thee as a sister?

23 How couldst thou falsely charge me, lady, with such villainy and uncleanness?

24 Laughing she saith unto me, The desire after evil entered into thine heart.

25 Nay, thinkest thou not that it is an evil deed for a righteous man, if the evil desire should enter into his heart?

26 It is indeed a sin and a great one too, saith she;

27 for the righteous man entertaineth righteous purposes.

28 While then, his purposes are righteous, his repute stands steadfast in the heavens, and he finds the Lord easily propitiated in all that he does.

29 But they that entertain evil purposes in their hearts, bring upon themselves death and captivity,

30 especially they that claim for themselves this present world, and boast in its riches, and cleave not to the good things that are to come.

31 Their souls shall rue it, seeing that they have no hope, but have abandoned themselves and their life.

Shepherd 2

1 AS soon as she had spoken these words the heavens were shut;

2 myself, If this sin is recorded against me, how can I be saved?

3 Or how shall I propitiate God for my sins which are full-blown?

4 Or with what words shall I entreat the Lord that He may be propitious unto me?

5 While I was advising and discussing these matters in my heart,

6 I see before me a great white chair of snow-white wool and there came an aged lady in glistening raiment, having a book in her hands,

7 and she sat down alone, and she saluted me, Good morrow, Hermas.

8 Then I grieved and weeping, said, Good morrow, lady.

9 And she said to me, Why so gloomy, Hermas, thou that art patient and good-tempered, and art always smiling?

10 Why so downcast in thy looks, and far from cheerful?

11 And I said to her, Because of an excellent lady saying that I had sinned against her.

12 Then she said, Far be this thing from the servant of God ! Nevertheless the thought did enter into thy heart concerning her.

13 Now to the servants of God such a purpose bringeth sin.

14 For it is an evil and mad purpose to overtake a devout spirit that hath been already approved,

15 that it should desire an evil deed, and especially if it be Hermas the temperate, who abstaineth from every evil desire, and is full of all simplicity and of great guilelessness.

Shepherd 3

1 Yet it is not for this that God is wroth with thee, but that thou mayest convert thy family, that hath done wrong against the Lord and against you their parents.

2 But out of fondness for thy children thou didst not admonish thy family, but didst suffer it to become fearfully corrupt.

3 Therefore the Lord is wroth with thee.

4 But He will heal all thy past sins, which have been committed in thy family;

5 for by reason of their sins and iniquities thou hast been corrupted by the affairs of this world.

6 But the great mercy of the Lord had pity on thee and thy family, and will strengthen thee, and establish thee in His glory.

7 Only be not thou careless, but take courage, and strengthen thy family.

8 For as the smith hammering his work conquers the task which he wills, so also doth righteous discourse repeated daily conquer all evil.

9 Cease not therefore to reprove thy children;

10 for I know that if they shall repent with all their heart, they shall be written in the books of life with the saints.

11 After these words of hers had ceased, she saith unto me, Wilt thou listen to me as I read?

12 Then say I, Yes, lady.

13 She saith to me, Be attentive, and hear the glories of God.

14 I listened with attention and with wonder to that which I had no power to remember;

15 for all the words were terrible, such as man cannot bear.

16 The last words however I remembered, for they were suitable for us and gentle.

17 Behold, the God of Hosts, Who by His invisible and mighty power and by His great wisdom created the world,

18 and by His glorious purpose clothed His creation with comeliness,

19 and by His strong word fixed the heaven,

20 and founded the earth upon the waters and by His own wisdom and providence formed His Holy Church, which also He blessed-behold,

21 He removeth the heavens and the mountains and the hills and the seas,

22 and all things are made level for His elect,

23 that He may fulfil to them the promise which He promised with great glory and rejoicing, if so be that they shall keep the ordinances of God, which they received, with great faith.

1 When then she finished reading and arose from her chair, there came four young men, and they took away the chair, and departed towards the East.

2 Then she calleth me unto her, and she touched my breast, and saith to me, Did my reading please thee?

3 And I say unto her, Lady, these last words please me, but the former were difficult and hard.

4 Then she spake to me, saying, These last words are for the righteous, but the former are for the heathen and the rebellious.

5 While she yet spake with me, two men appeared, and took her by the arms, and they departed, whither the chair also had gone towards the East.

Shepherd 5

1 VISION TWO.

2 and I called to mind my last years vision as I walked;

3 and again a Spirit taketh me, and carrieth me away to the same place as last year.

4 When then I arrived at the place, I fell upon my knees, and began to pray to the Lord, and to glorify His name, for that he counted me worthy, and made known unto me my former sins.

5 But after I had risen up from prayer, I behold before me the aged lady, whom also I had seen last year, walking and reading a little book.

6 And she saith to me, Canst thou report these things to the elect of God?

7 I say unto her, Lady, I cannot recollect so much;

8 but give me the little book, that I may copy it.

9 Take it, saith she, and be sure and return it to me.

10 I took it, and retiring to a certain spot in the country I copied it letter for letter:

11 for I could not make out the syllables.

12 When then I had finished the letters of the book, suddenly the book was snatched out of my hand;

Shepherd 6

1 Now after fifteen days, when I had fasted and entreated the Lord earnestly, the knowledge of the writing was revealed to me.

2 And this is what was written:

3 the Lord, and have betrayed their parents through great wickedness, yea, they have got the name of betrayers of parents, and yet they did not profit by their betrayal;

4 and they still further added to their sins wanton deeds and reckless wickedness;

5 and so the measure of their transgressions was filled up.

6 But make these words known to all thy children, and to thy wife who shall be as thy sister;

7 for she too refraineth not from using her tongue, wherewith she doeth evil.

8 But, when she hears these words, she will refrain, and will find mercy.

9 After that thou hast made known unto them All these words,

10 which the Master commanded me that they should be revealed unto thee, then all their sins which they sinned aforetime are forgiven to them;

11 yea, and to all the saints that have sinned unto this day, if they repent with their whole heart, and remove double-mindedness from their heart.

12 For the Master sware by His own glory, as concerning His elect;

13 that if, now that this day has been set as a limit, sin shall hereafter be committed, they shall not find salvation;

14 for repentance for the righteous hath an end;

15 the days of repentance are accomplished for all the saints;

16 whereas for the Gentiles there is repentance until the last day.

17 Thou shalt therefore say unto the rulers of the Church, that they direct their paths in righteousness, that they may receive in full the promises with abundant glory.

18 Ye therefore that work righteousness be stedfast, and be not double-minded, that ye may have admission with the holy angels.

19 Blessed are ye, as many as endure patiently the great tribulation that cometh, and as many as shall not deny their life.

20 For the Lord sware concerning His Son, that those who denied their Lord should be rejected from their life, even they that are now about to deny Him in the coming days;

Shepherd 7

1 But do thou, Hermas, no longer bear a grudge against thy children, neither suffer thy sister to have her way,

2 so that they with a righteous chastisement, unless thou bear a grudge against them thyself.

3 The bearing of a grudge worketh death.

4 But thou, Hermas, hast had great tribulations of thine own, by reason of the transgressions of thy family, because thou hadst no care for them.

5 For thou wast neglectful of them, and wast mixed up with thine evil transactions.

6 But herein is thy salvation, in that thou didst not depart from the living God, and in thy simplicity and thy great continence.

7 These have saved thee, if thou abidest therein;

8 and they save all who do such things, and walk in guilelessness and simplicity.

9 These men prevail over all wickedness, and continue unto life eternal.

10 Blessed are all they that work righteousness.

11 They shall never be destroyed.

12 But thou shalt say to Maximus, "Behold tribulation cometh (upon thee), if thou think fit to deny a second time.

13 The Lord is nigh unto them that turn unto Him, as it is written in Eldad and Modat, who prophesied to the people in the wilderness."

Shepherd 8

1 Now, brethren, a revelation was made unto me in my sleep by a youth of exceeding fair form,

2 who said to me, Whom thinkest thou the aged woman, from whom thou receivedst the book, to be?

3 I say, The Sibyl.

4 Thou art wrong, saith he, she is not.

5 Who then is she?

6 I say.

7 The Church, saith he.

8 I said unto him, Wherefore then is she aged?

9 Because, saith he, she was created before all things;

10 therefore is she aged;

11 and for her sake the world was framed.

12 And afterwards I saw a vision in my house.

13 The aged woman came, and asked me, if I had already given the book to the elders.

14 I said that I had not given it.

15 Thou hast done well, she said, for I have words to add.

16 When then I shall have finished all the words, it shall be made known by thy means to all the elect.

17 Thou shalt therefore write two little books, and shalt send one to Clement, and one to Grapte.

18 So Clement shall send to the foreign cities, for this is his duty;

19 while Grapte shall instruct the widows and the orphans.

Shepherd 9

1 VISION THREE.

2 fasting often, and entreating the Lord to declare unto me the revelation which He promised to show me by the mouth of the aged woman,

3 that very night the aged woman was seen of me,

4 and she said to me, Seeing that thou art so importunate and eager to know all things, come into the country where thou abidest,

5 and about the fifth hour I will appear, and will show thee what thou oughtest to see.

6 I asked her, saying, Lady, to what part of the country ?

7 Where thou wilt, saith she.

8 I selected a beautiful and retired spot;

9 but before I spoke to her and named the spot, she saith to me, I will come, whither thou wilt.

10 I went then, brethren, into the country, and I counted up the hours, and came to the place where I appointed her to come,

11 and I see an ivory couch placed there, and on the couch there lay a linen cushion, and on the cushion was spread a coverlet of fine linen of flax.

Shepherd 10

1 When I saw these things so ordered, and no one in the place,

2 I was amazed, and a fit of trembling seized me, and my hair stood on end and a fit of shuddering came upon me, because I was alone.

3 When then I recovered myself, and remembered the glory of God, and took courage, I knelt down and confessed my sins to the Lord once more, as I had done on the former occasion.

Shepherd 11

1 Then she came with six young men, the same whom I had seen before, and she stood by me, and listened attentively to me, as I prayed and confessed my sins to the Lord.

2 And she touched me, and said:

3 Hermas, make an end of constantly entreating for thy sins;

4 entreat also for righteousness, that thou mayest take some part forthwith to thy family.

5 Then she raiseth me by the hand, and leadeth me to the couch, and saith to the young men, Go ye, and build.

6 And after the young men had retired and we were left alone, she saith to me, Sit down here.

7 I say to her, Lady, let the elders sit down first.

8 Do as I bid thee, saith she, sit down.

9 When then I wanted to sit down on the right side, she would not allow me, but beckoned me with her hand that I should sit on the left side.

10 As then I was musing thereon, and was sad because she would not permit me to sit on the right side, she saith to me, Art thou sad, Hermas?

11 The place on the right side is for others, even for those who have already been well-pleasing to God, and have suffered for the Names sake.

12 But thou lackest much that thou shouldest sit with them;

13 but as thou abidest in thy simplicity, even so continue, and thou shalt sit with them, thou and as many as shall have done their deeds, and have suffered what they suffered.

Shepherd 12

1 What did they suffer?

2 say I.

3 Listen, saith she.

4 Stripes, imprisonments, great tribulations, crosses, wild beasts, for the Names sake.

5 Therefore to them belongs the right side of the Holiness-to them, and to all who shall suffer for the Name.

6 But for the rest is the left side.

7 Howbeit, to both, to them that sit on the right, and to them that sit on the left, are the same gifts, and the same promises, only they sit on the right and have a certain glory.

8 Thou indeed art very desirous to sit on the right with them, but thy shortcomings are many;

9 yet thou shalt be purified from thy shortcomings;

Shepherd 13

1 When she had said this, she wished to depart;

2 but, falling at vision which she promised.

3 Then she again took me by the hand, and raiseth me, and seateth me on the couch at the left hand, while she herself sat on the right.

4 And lifting up a certain glistening rod, she saith to me, Seest thou a great thing?

5 I say to her, Lady, I see nothing.

6 She saith to me, Look thou;

7 dost thou not see in front of thee a great tower being builded upon the waters, of glistening square stones?

8 Now the tower was being builded foursquare by the six young men that came with her.

9 And countless other men were bringing stones, some of them from the deep, and others from the land, and were handing them to the six young men.

10 And they took them and builded.

11 The stones that were dragged from the deep they placed in every case,

12 just as they were, into the building, for they had been shaped, and they fitted in their joining with the other stones;

13 and they adhered so closely one with another that their joining could not possibly be detected;

14 and the building of the tower appeared as if it were built of one stone.

15 But of the other stones which were brought from the dry land, some they threw away, and some they put into the building;

16 and others they broke in pieces, and threw to a distance from the tower.

17 Now many other stones were lying round the tower, and they did not use them for the building;

18 for some of them were mildewed, and others had cracks in them, and others were too short, and others were white and round, and did not fit into the building.

19 And I saw other stones thrown to a distance from the tower, and coming to the way, and yet not staying in the way, but rolling to where there was no way;

20 and others falling into the fire and burning there;

Shepherd 14

1 When she had shown me these things, she wished to hurry these things, and yet not to know what the things mean?

2 She answered and said unto me, Thou art an over-curious fellow, in desiring to know all that concerns the tower.

3 Yea, lady, I said, that I may announce it to any brethren, and that they [may be the more gladdened and] when they hear [these things] may know the Lord in great glory.

4 Then said she, Many shall hear;

5 but when they hear, some of them shall be glad, and others shall weep.

6 Yet even these latter, if they hear and repent, shall likewise be glad.

7 Hear thou therefore the parables of the tower;

8 for I will reveal all things unto thee.

9 And trouble me no more about revelation;

10 for these revelations have an end, seeing that they have been completed.

11 Nevertheless thou wilt not cease asking for revelations;

12 for thou art shameless.

Shepherd 15

1 The tower, which thou seest building, is myself, the Church, which was seen of thee both now and aforetime.

2 Ask, therefore, what thou wilt concerning the tower, and I will reveal it unto thee, that thou mayest rejoice with the saints.

3 I say unto her, Lady, since thou didst hold me worthy once for all, that thou shouldst reveal all things to me, reveal them.

4 Then she saith to me, Whatsoever is possible to be revealed to thee, shall be revealed.

5 Only let thy heart be with God, and doubt not in thy mind about that which thou seest.

6 I asked her, Wherefore is the tower builded upon waters, lady?

7 I told thee so before, said she, and indeed thou dost enquire diligently.

8 So by thy enquiry thou discoverest the truth.

9 Hear then why the tower is builded upon waters;

10 it is because your life is saved and shall be saved by water.

Shepherd 11

1 I answered and said unto her,

2 Lady, this thing is great and These are the holy angels of GOD, that were created first of all, unto whom the Lord delivered all His creation to increase and to build it, and to be masters of all creation.

3 By their hands therefore the building of the tower will be accomplished.

4 And who are the others who are bringing the stones?

5 They also are holy angels of God;

6 but these six are superior to them.

7 The building of the tower then shall be accomplished, and all alike shall rejoice in the (completed) circle of the tower, and shall glorify God that the building of the tower was accomplished.

8 I enquired of her, saying, Lady, I could wish to know concerning the end of the stones, and their power, of what kind it is.

9 She answered and said unto me, It is not that thou of all men art especially worthy that it should be revealed to thee;

10 for there are others before thee, and better than thou art, unto whom these visions ought to have been revealed.

11 But that the name of God may be glorified,
12 it hath been revealed to thee, and shall be revealed, for the sake of
the doubtful-minded, who question in their hearts whether these
things are so or not.
13 Tell them that all these things are true, and that there is nothing
beside the truth, but that all are steadfast, and valid, and established
on a firm foundation.

Shepherd 17

1 Hear now concerning the stones that go to the building.
2 The stones that are squared and white, and that fit together in their
joints,
3 these are the apostles and bishops and teachers and deacons,
4 who walked after the holiness of God,
5 and exercised their office of bishop and teacher and deacon in
purity and sanctity for the elect of God, some of them already fallen
on sleep, and others still living.
6 And because they always agreed with one another, they both had
peace among themselves and listened one to another.
7 Therefore their joinings fit together in the building of the tower.
8 But they that are dragged from the deep, and placed in the
building, and that fit together in their joinings with the other stones
that are already builded in, who are they?
9 These are they that suffered for the name of the Lord.
10 But the other stones that are brought from the dry land, I would
fain know who these are, lady.
11 She said, Those that go to the building, and yet are not hewn, these
the Lord hath approved because they walked in the uprightness of
the Lord, and rightly performed His commandments.
12 But they that are brought and placed in the building, who are
they?
13 They are young in the faith, and faithful;
14 but they are warned by the angels to do good, because wickedness
was found in them.
15 But those whom they rejected and threw away, who are they?
16 These have sinned, and desire to repent, therefore they were not
cast to a great distance from the tower, because they will be useful for
the building, if they repent.
17 They then that shall repent, if they repent, will be strong in the
faith, if they repent now while the tower is building.
18 But if the building shall be finished, they have no more any place,
but shall be castaways.

Shepherd 18

- 1 But wouldst thou know about them that are broken in pieces, and cast away far from the tower?
- 2 These are the sons of wickedness was absent from them.
- 3 Therefore they have not salvation, for they are not useful for building by reason of their wickednesses.
- 4 Therefore they were broken up and thrown far away by reason of the wrath of the Lord, for they excited Him to wrath.
- 5 But the rest whom thou hast seen lying in great numbers, not going to the building, of these they that are mildewed are they that knew the truth, but did not abide in it, nor cleave to the saints.

Shepherd 19

- 1 But they that have the cracks, who are they?
- 2 These are they at peace among themselves;
- 3 who have an appearance of peace, but when they depart from one another, their wickednesses abide in their hearts.
- 4 These are the cracks which the stones have.
- 5 But they that are broken off short, these have believed, and have their greater part in righteousness, but have some parts of lawlessness;

Shepherd 20

- 1 But the white and round stones, which did not fit into the building, who are they, lady?
- 2 She answered and said to me, How understandest nothing?
- 3 These are they that have faith, but have also riches of this world.
- 4 When tribulation cometh, they deny their Lord by reason of their riches and their business affairs.
- 5 And I answered and said unto her, When then, lady, will they be useful for the building ?
- 6 When, she replied, their wealth, which leadeth their souls astray, shall be cut away, then will they be useful for God.
- 7 For just as the round stone, unless it be cut away, and lose some portion of itself, cannot become square,
- 8 so also they that are rich in this world, unless their riches be cut away, cannot become useful to the lord.
- 9 Learn first from thyself.
- 10 When thou hadst riches, thou wast useless;
- 11 but now thou art useful and profitable unto life.

Shepherd 21

1 But the other stones which thou sawest cast far away from the tower and falling into the way and rolling out of the way into believed,

2 but by reason of their double heart they abandon their true way.

3 Thus thinking that they can find a better way, they go astray and are sore distressed, as they walk about in the regions where there is no way.

4 But they that fall into the fire and are burned,

5 these are they that finally rebelled from the living God,

6 and it no more entered into their hearts to repent by reason of the lusts of their wantonness and of the wickednesses which they wrought.

7 But the others, which fall near the waters and yet cannot roll into the water, wouldest thou know who are they?

8 These are they that heard the word, and would be baptized unto the name of the Lord.

9 Then, when they call to their remembrance the purity of the truth, they change their minds, and go back again after their evil desires.

10 So she finished the explanation of the tower.

11 Still importunate, I asked her further, whether for all these stones that were rejected and would not fit into the building of the tower there was repentance, and they had a place in this tower.

12 They can repent, she said, but they cannot be fitted into this tower.

13 Yet they shall be fitted into another place much more humble, but not until they have undergone torments, and have fulfilled the days of their sins.

14 And they shall be changed for this reason, because they participated it, the Righteous Word;

15 and then shall it befall them to be relieved from their torments, if the evil deeds, that they have done, come into their heart;

Shepherd 22

1 When then I ceased asking her concerning all these things, desirous of beholding, I was greatly rejoiced that I should see it.

2 She looked upon me, and smiled, and she saith to me, Seest thou seven women round the tower?

3 I see them, lady, say I.

4 This tower is supported by them by commandment of the Lord.

5 Hear now their employments.

6 The first of them, the woman with the strong hands, is called Faith;

7 through her are saved the elect of God.

8 And the second, that is girded about and looketh like a man, is called Continnence;

9 she is the daughter of Faith.

10 Whosoever then shall follow her, becometh happy in his life, for he shall refrain from all evil deeds, believing that, if he refrain from every evil desire, he shall inherit eternal life.

11 And the others, lady, who be they?

12 They are daughters one of the other.

13 The name of the one is Simplicity, of the next, knowledge, of the next, Guilelessness, of the next, Reverence, of the next, Love.

14 When then thou shalt do all the works of their mother, thou canst live.

15 I would fain know, lady, I say, what power each of them possesseth.

16 Listen then, saith she, to the powers which they have.

17 Their powers are mastered each by the other, and they follow each other, in the order in which they were born.

18 From Faith is born Continenence, from Continenence Simplicity, from Simplicity Guilelessness, from Guilelessness Reverence, from Reverence knowledge, from knowledge Love.

19 Their works then are pure and reverent and divine.

20 Whosoever therefore shall serve these women, and shall have strength to master their works, shall have his dwelling in the tower with the saints of God.

21 Then I asked her concerning the seasons, whether the consummation is even now.

22 But she cried aloud, saying, Foolish man, seest thou not that the tower is still a-building?

23 Whensoever therefore the tower shall be finished building, the end cometh;

24 but it shall be built up quickly.

25 Ask me no more questions:

26 this reminder is sufficient for you and for the saints, and is the renewal of your spirits.

27 But it was not revealed to thyself alone, but in order that thou mightest show these things unto all.

28 After three days-for thou must understand first,

29 and I charge thee, Hermas, first with these words, which I am about to speak to thee-(I charge thee to) tell all these things into the ears of the saints,

30 that hearing them and doing them they may be purified from their wickednesses, and thyself also with them.

Shepherd 23

1 Hear me, my children.

2 I brought you up in much simplicity and guilelessness and reverence,

3 through the mercy of the Lord, Who instilled righteousness into you, that ye might be justified and sanctified from all wickedness and all crookedness.

4 But ye will not to cease from your wickedness.

5 Now then hear me and be at peace among your, selves, and have regard one to another, and assist one another,

6 and do not partake of the creatures of God alone in abundance, but share them also with those that are in want.

7 For some men through their much eating bring weakness on the flesh, and injure their flesh:

8 whereas the flesh of those who have nought to eat is injured by their not having sufficient nourishment, and their body is ruined.

9 This exclusiveness therefore is hurtful to you that have and do not share with them that are in want.

10 Look ye to the judgment that cometh.

11 Ye then that have more than enough, seek out them that are hungry, while the tower is still unfinished;

12 for after the tower is finished, ye will desire to do good, and will find no place for it.

13 Look ye therefore, ye that exult in your wealth,

14 lest they that are in want shall moan, and their moaning shall go up unto the Lord, and ye with your [abundance of] good things be shut outside the door of the tower.

15 Now therefore I say unto you that are rulers of the Church, and that occupy the chief seats;

16 be not ye like unto the sorcerers.

17 The sorcerers indeed carry their drugs in boxes,

18 but ye carry your drug and your poison in your heart Ye are case-hardened,

19 and ye will not cleanse your hearts and mix your wisdom together in a clean heart, that ye may obtain mercy from the Great King.

20 Look ye therefore, children, lest these divisions of yours deprive you of your life.

21 How is it that ye wish to instruct the elect of the Lord, while ye yourselves have no instruction?

22 Instruct one another therefore, and have peace among yourselves, that I also may stand gladsome before the Father, and give an account concerning you all to your Lord.

1 When then she ceased speaking with me, the six young men, who were building, came, and took her away to the tower, and other four lifted the couch, and took it also away to the tower.

2 I saw not the face of these, for they were turned away.

3 And, as she went, I asked her to reveal to me concerning the three forms, in which she had appeared to me.

4 She answered and said to me;

5 As concerning these things thou must ask another, that they may be revealed to thee.

6 Now she was seen of me, brethren, in my first vision of last year, as a very aged woman and seated on a chair.

7 In the second vision her face was youthful, but her flesh and her hair were aged, and she spake to me standing;

8 and she was more gladsome than before.

9 But in the third vision she was altogether youthful and of exceeding great beauty, and her hair alone was aged;

10 and she was gladsome exceedingly and seated on a couch.

11 Touching these things I was very greatly anxious to learn this revelation.

12 And I see the aged woman in a vision of the night, saying to me, Every enquiry needs humility.

13 Fast therefore, and thou shalt receive what thou askest from the Lord.

14 So I fasted one day;

15 and that very night there appeared unto me a young man, and he saith to me, Seeing that thou askest me revelations offhand with entreaty, take heed lest by thy much asking thou injure thy flesh.

16 Sufficient for thee are these revelations.

17 Canst thou see mightier revelations than those thou hast seen?

18 I say unto him in reply, Sir, this one thing alone I ask, concerning the three forms of the aged woman, that a complete revelation may be vouchsafed me.

19 He saith to me in answer, How long are ye without understanding?

20 It is your double-mindedness that maketh you of no understanding, and because your heart is not set towards the Lord.

Shepherd 25

1 Listen, saith he, concerning the three forms, of which thou enquirest.

2 In the first vision wherefore did she appear to aged, and already decayed, and had no power by reason of your infirmities and acts of double-mindedness.

3 For as aged people, having no longer hope of renewing their youth,
expect nothing else but to fall asleep,
4 so ye also, being weakened with the affairs of this world, gave
yourselves over to repining, and cast not your cares on the Lord;
5 but your spirit was broken, and ye were aged by your sorrows.
6 Wherefore then she was seated on a chair, I would fain know, Sir.
7 Because every weak person sits on a chair by reason of his
weakness, that the weakness of his body may be supported.

Shepherd 26

1 But in the second vision thou sawest her standing, and with her
countenance more youthful and more gladsome than before;
2 saith he.
3 Imagine an old man, who has now lost all hope of himself by reason
of his weakness and his poverty, and expecteth nothing else save the
last day of his life.
4 Suddenly an inheritance is left him.
5 He heareth the news, riseth up and full of joy clothes himself with
strength, and no longer lieth down, but standeth up,
6 and his spirit, which was now broken by reason of his former
circumstances, is renewed again, and he no longer sitteth, but taketh
courage;
7 so also was it with you, when ye heard the revelation which the
Lord revealed unto you.
8 For He had compassion on you, and renewed your spirits,
9 and ye laid aside your maladies, and strength came to you, and ye
were made powerful in the faith, and the Lord rejoiced to see you put
on your strength.
10 And therefore He showed you the building of the tower;

Shepherd 27

1 But in the third vision ye saw her younger and fair and cometh
some piece of good tidings,
2 immediately he forgetteth his former sorrows,
3 and admitteth nothing but the tidings which he hath heard, and is
strengthened thenceforth unto that which is good, and his spirit is
renewed by reason of the joy which he hath received;
4 so also ye have received a renewal of your spirits by seeing these
good things.
5 And whereas thou sawest her seated on a couch, the position is a
firm one;
6 for the couch has four feet and standeth firmly;
7 for the world too is upheld by means of four elements.

8 They then that have fully repented shall be young again, and founded firmly, seeing that they have repented with their whole heart.

9 There thou hast the revelation entire and complete.

Shepherd 28

1 VISION FOUR The fourth vision which I saw, brethren, twenty days after tribulation.

2 I was going into the country by the Campanian Way.

3 From the high road, it is about ten stades;

4 and the place is easy for travelling.

5 While then I am walking alone,

6 I entreat the Lord that He will accomplish the revelations and the visions which He showed me through His holy Church,

7 that He may strengthen me and may give repentance to His servants which have stumbled,

8 that His great and glorious Name may be glorified, for that He held me worthy that He should show me His marvels.

9 And as I gave glory and thanksgiving to Him, there answered me as it were the sound of a voice, Be not of doubtful mind Hermas.

10 I began to question in myself and to say, How can I be of doubtful mind, seeing that I am so firmly founded by the Lord, and have seen glorious things?

11 And I went on a little, brethren, and behold, I see a cloud of dust rising as it were to heaven, and I began to say within myself, Can it be that cattle are coming, and raising a cloud of dust?

12 for it was just about a stade from me.

13 As the cloud of dust waxed greater and greater, I suspected that it was something supernatural.

14 Then the sun shone out a little, and behold, I see a huge beast like some sea-monster, and from its mouth fiery locusts issued forth.

15 And the beast was about a hundred feet in length, and its head was as it were of pottery.

16 And I began to weep, and to entreat the Lord that He would rescue me from it.

17 And I remembered the word which I had heard, Be not of doubtful mind, Hermas.

18 Having therefore, brethren, put on the faith of the Lord and called to mind the mighty works that He had taught me, I took courage and gave myself up to the beast.

19 Now the beast was coming on with such a rush, that it might have ruined a city.

20 I come near it, and, huge monster as it was, it stretcheth itself on the ground, and merely put forth its tongue, and stirred not at all until I had passed by it.

21 And the beast had on its head four colours;

Shepherd 29

1 Now after I had passed the beast,

2 and had gone forward about thirty feet, behold, there meeteth me a virgin arrayed as if she sandals, veiled up to her forehead, and her head-covering consisted of a turban, and her hair was white.

3 I knew from the former visions that it was the Church, and I became more cheerful.

4 She saluteth me, saying, Good morrow, my good man;

5 and I saluted her in turn, Lady, good morrow.

6 She answered and said unto me, Did nothing meet thee?

7 I say unto her, Lady, such a huge beast, that could have destroyed whole peoples :

8 but, by the power of the Lord and by His great mercy, I escaped it.

9 Thou didst escape it well, saith she,

10 because thou didst cast thy care upon God, and didst open thy heart to the Lord, believing that thou canst be saved by nothing else but by His great and glorious Name.

11 Therefore the Lord sent His angel, which is over the beasts, whose name is Segri, and shut its mouth, that it might not hurt thee.

12 Thou hast escaped a great tribulation by reason of thy faith, and because, though thou sawest so huge a beast, thou didst not doubt in thy mind.

13 Go therefore, and declare to the elect of the Lord His mighty works, and tell them that this beast is a type of the great tribulation which is to come.

14 If therefore ye prepare yourselves beforehand,

15 and repent (and turn) unto the Lord with your whole heart, ye shall be able to escape it, if your heart be made pure and without blemish, and if for the remaining days of your life ye serve the Lord blamelessly.

16 Cast your cares upon the Lord and He will set them straight.

17 Trust ye in the Lord, ye men of doubtful mind, for He can do all things, yea, He both turneth away His wrath from you, and again He sendeth forth His plagues upon you that are of doubtful mind.

18 Woe to them that hear these words and are disobedient;

Shepherd 30

- 1 I asked her concerning the four colours, which the beast had upon its head.
- 2 Then she answered me and said, Again thou art me what these things are.
- 3 Listen, said she;
- 4 the black is this world in which ye dwell;
- 5 and the fire and blood colour showeth that this world must perish by blood and fire;
- 6 and the golden part are ye that have escaped from this world.
- 7 For as the gold is tested by the fire and is made useful, so ye also [that dwell in it] are being tested in yourselves.
- 8 Ye then that abide and pass through the fire will be purified by it.
- 9 For as the gold loses its dross, so ye also shall cast away all sorrow and tribulation, and shall be purified, and shall be useful for the building of the tower.
- 10 But the white portion is the coming age, in which the elect of God shall dwell;
- 11 because the elect of God shall be without spot and pure unto life eternal.
- 12 Wherefore cease not thou to speak in the ears of the saints.
- 13 Ye have now the symbolism also of the tribulation which is coming in power.
- 14 But if ye be willing, it shall be nought.
- 15 Remember ye the things that are written beforehand.
- 16 With these words she departed, and I saw not in what direction she departed;
- 17 for a noise was made;

Shepherd 31

- 1 REVELATION FIVE.
- 2 As I prayed in the house, and sat on the couch,
- 3 there entered a skin wrapped about him, and with a wallet on his shoulders and a staff in his hand.
- 4 And he saluted me, and I saluted him in return.
- 5 And he immediately sat down by my side, and he saith unto me, I was sent by the most holy angel, that I might dwell with thee the remaining days of thy life.
- 6 I thought he came to tempt me, and I say unto him, Why, who art thou?
- 7 For I know, say I, unto whom I was delivered.
- 8 He saith to me, Dost thou not recognise me?
- 9 No, I say.

10 I, saith he, am the shepherd, unto whom thou wast delivered.

11 While he was still speaking, his form was changed, and I recognised him as being the same, to whom I was delivered;

12 and straightway I was confounded, and fear seized me, and I was altogether overwhelmed with distress that I had answered him so wickedly and senselessly.

13 But he answered and said unto me, Be not confounded, but strengthen thyself in my commandments which I am about to command thee.

14 For I was sent, saith he, that I might show thee again all the things which thou didst see before, merely the heads which are convenient for you.

15 First of all, write down my commandments and my parables;

16 and the other matters thou shalt write down as I shall show them to thee.

17 The reason why, saith he, I command thee to write down first the commandments and parables is, that thou mayest read them off-hand, and mayest be able to keep them.

18 So I wrote down the commandments and parables, as he commanded me.

19 If then, when ye hear them, ye keep them and walk in them, and do them with a pure heart, ye shall receive from the Lord all things that He promised you;

20 but if, when ye hear them, ye do not repent, but still add to your sins, ye shall receive from the Lord the opposite.

Shepherd 32

1 MANDATE THE FIRST.

2 First of all, believe that God is One,

3 even He Who created all non-existence into being, Who comprehendeth all things, being alone incomprehensible.

4 Believe Him therefore, and fear Him, and in this fear be continent.

5 Keep these things,

6 and thou shall cast off all wickedness from thyself, and shall clothe thyself with every excellence of righteousness, and shall live unto God, if thou keep this commandment.

Shepherd 33

1 MANDATE THE SECOND.

2 He saith to me;

3 Keep simplicity and be guileless, and thou shall be as little children, that know not the wickedness which destroyeth the life of men.

4 First of all, speak evil of no man, neither take pleasure in listening to a slanderer.

5 Otherwise thou that hearest too shalt be responsible for the sin of him that speaketh the evil, if thou believest the slander, which thou hearest;

6 for in believing it thou thyself also wilt have a grudge against thy brother.

7 So then shalt thou be responsible for the sin of him that speaketh the evil.

8 Slander is evil;

9 it is a restless demon, never at peace, but always having its home among factions.

10 Refrain from it therefore, and thou shalt have success at all times with all men.

11 But clothe thyself in reverence, wherein is no evil stumbling-block, but all things are smooth and gladsome.

12 Work that which is good,

13 and of thy labours, which God giveth thee, give to all that are in want freely, not questioning to whom thou shall give, and to whom thou shall not give.

14 Give to all;

15 for to all God desireth that there should be given of His own bounties.

16 They then that receive shall render an account to God why they received it, and to what end;

17 for they that receive in distress shall not be judged, but they that receive by false pretence shall pay the penalty.

18 He then that giveth is guiltless;

19 for as he received from the Lord the ministration to perform it, he hath performed it in sincerity, by making no distinction to whom to give or not to give.

20 This ministration then, when sincerely performed, becomes glorious in the sight of God.

21 He therefore that ministereth thus sincerely shall live unto God.

22 Therefore keep this commandment, as I have told thee, that thine own repentance and that of thy household may be found to be sincere, and [thy] heart pure and undefiled.

Shepherd 34

1 MANDATE THE THIRD.

2 Again he saith to me;

3 Love truth, and let nothing but truth proceed out of thy mouth, that the Spirit which God made to dwell in this flesh, may be found true in the sight of all men;

4 and thus shall the Lord, Who dwelleth in thee, be glorified;

5 for the Lord is true in every word, and with Him there is no falsehood.

6 They therefore that speak lies set the Lord at nought, and become robbers of the Lord, for they do not deliver up to Him the deposit which they received.

7 For they received of Him a spirit free from lies.

8 This if they shall return a lying spirit, they have defiled the commandment of the Lord and have become robbers.

9 When then I heard these things, I wept bitterly.

10 But seeing me weep he saith, Why weepest thou ?

11 Because, Sir, say I, I know not if I can be saved.

12 Why so?

13 saith he.

14 Because, Sir, I say, never in my life spake I a true word, but I always lived deceitfully with all men and dressed up my falsehood as truth before all men;

15 and no man ever contradicted me, but confidence was placed in my word.

16 How then, Sir, say I, can I live, seeing that I have done these things?

17 Your supposition, he saith, is right and true,

18 for it behoved thee as a servant of God to walk in truth, and no complicity with evil should abide with the Spirit of truth, nor bring grief to the Spirit which is holy and true.

19 Never, Sir, say I, heard I clearly words such as these.

20 Now then, saith he, thou hearest.

21 Guard them, that the former falsehoods also which thou spakest in thy business affairs may themselves become credible, now that these are found true;

22 for they too can become trustworthy.

23 If thou keep these things,

24 and from henceforward speak nothing but truth,

25 thou shalt be able to secure life for thyself And whosoever shall hear this command, and abstain from falsehood, that most pernicious habit, shall live unto God.

Shepherd 35

1 MANDATE THE FOURTH.

- 2 I charge thee, saith he, to keep purity,
- 3 and let not a thought enter into thy heart concerning another's wife, or concerning fornication or concerning any such like evil deeds;
- 4 for in so doing thou committest a great sin.
- 5 But remember thine own wife always, and thou shalt never go wrong.
- 6 For should this desire enter into thine heart, thou wilt go wrong, and should any other as evil as this, thou committest sit,.
- 7 For this desire in a servant of God is a great sin;
- 8 and if any man doeth this evil deed, he worketh out death for himself Look to it therefore.
- 9 Abstain from this desire;
- 10 for, Mere holiness dwelleth, there lawlessness ought not to enter into the heart of a righteous man.
- 11 I say to him, Sir, permit me to ask thee a few more questions.
- 12 Say on, saith he.
- 13 Sir, say I, if a man who has a wife that is faithful in the Lord detect her in adultery, doth the husband sin in living with her?
- 14 So long as he is ignorant, saith he, he sinneth not;
- 15 but if the husband know of her sin, and the wife repent not, but continue in her fornication, and her husband live with her, he makes himself responsible for her sin and an accomplice in her adultery.
- 16 What then, Sir, say I, shall the husband do, if the wife continue in this case?
- 17 Let him divorce her, saith he, and let the husband abide alone:
- 18 but if after divorcing his wife he shall marry another, he likewise committeth adultery.
- 19 If then, Sir, say I, after the wife is divorced, she repent and desire to return to her own husband, shall she not be received?
- 20 Certainly, saith he, if the husband receiveth her not, he sinneth and bringeth great sin upon himself;
- 21 nay, one who hath sinned and repented must be received, yet not often;
- 22 for there is but one repentance for the servants of God.
- 23 For the sake of her repentance therefore the husband ought not to marry.
- 24 This is the manner of acting enjoined on husband and wife.
- 25 Not only, saith he, is it adultery, if a man pollute his flesh, but whosoever doeth things like unto the heathen committeth adultery.
- 26 If therefore in such deeds as these likewise a man continue and repent not, keep away from him, and live not with him.
- 27 Otherwise, thou also art a partaker of his sin.

28 For this cause ye were enjoined to remain single, whether husband or wife;

29 for in such cases repentance is possible.

30 I, said he, am not giving an excuse that this matter should be concluded thus, but to the end that the sinner should sin no more.

31 But as concerning his former sin, there is One who is able to give healing;

Shepherd 36

1 I asked him again, saying, Seeing that the Lord held me worthy that thou shouldest always dwell with me, suffer me still to made dense by my former deeds.

2 Make me to understand, for I am very foolish, and I apprehend absolutely nothing.

3 He answered and said unto me, I, saith he, preside over repentance, and I give understanding to all who repent.

4 Nay, thinkest thou not, saith he, that this very act of repentance is understanding?

5 To repent is great understanding, saith he.

6 For the man that hath sinned understandeth that he hath done evil before the Lord,

7 and the deed which he hath done entereth into his heart, and he repenteth, and doeth no more evil, but doeth good lavishly, and humbleth his own soul and putteth it to torture because it sinned.

8 Thou seest then that repentance is great understanding.

9 It is on this account therefore, Sir, say I, that I enquire everything accurately of thee;

10 first, because I am a sinner;

11 secondly, because I know not what deeds I must do that I may live, for my sins are many and various.

12 Thou shalt live, saith he, if thou keep my commandments and walk in them;

Shepherd 37

1 I will still proceed, Sir, say I, to ask a further question.

2 Speak on, saith he.

3 I have heard, Sir, say I, from took place when we went down into the water and obtained remission of our former sins.

4 He saith to me;

5 Thou hast well heard;

6 for so it is.

7 For he that hath received remission of sins ought no longer to sin, but to dwell in purity.

8 But, since thou enquirest all things accurately,

9 I will declare unto thee this also, so as to give no excuse to those who shall hereafter believe or those who have already believed, on the Lord.

10 For they that have already believed, or shall hereafter believe, have not repentance for sins, but have only remission of their former sins.

11 To those then that were called before these days the Lord has appointed repentance.

12 For the Lord, being a discerner of hearts and foreknowing all things,

13 perceived the weakness of men and the manifold wiles of the devil, how that he will be doing some mischief to the servants of God, and will deal wickedly with them.

14 The Lord then, being very compassionate, had pity on His handiwork, and appointeth this (opportunity of) repentance, and to me was given the authority over this repentance.

15 But I say unto you, saith he, if after this great and holy calling any one, being tempted of the devil, shall commit sin, he hath only one (opportunity of) repentance.

16 But if he sin off-hand and repent, repentance is unprofitable for such a man;

17 for he shall live with difficulty.

18 I say unto him, I was quickened into life again, when I heard these things from thee so precisely.

19 For I know that, if I shall add no more to my sins, I shall be saved.

Shepherd 38

1 I asked him again, saying, Sir, since once thou dost bear with me, declare unto me this further matter also.

2 Say on, saith and one of them marry, doth the one that marrieth sin?

3 He sinneth not, saith he, but if he remain single, he investeth himself with more exceeding honour and with great glory before the Lord;

4 yet even if he should marry, he sinneth not.

5 Preserve purity and holiness therefore, and thou shalt live unto God.

6 All these things, which I speak and shall hereafter speak unto thee, guard from this time forward, from the day when thou wast committed unto me, and I will dwell in thy house.

7 But for thy former transgressions there shall be remission, if thou keepest my commandments.

Shepherd 39

1 MANDATE THE FIFTH.

2 thou shalt have the mastery over all evil deeds, and shalt work all righteousness.

3 For if thou art long-suffering,

4 the Holy Spirit that abideth in thee shall be pure,

5 not being darkened by another evil spirit,

6 but dwelling in a large room shall rejoice and be glad with the vessel in which he dwelleth, and shall serve God with much cheerfulness, having prosperity in himself.

7 But if any angry temper approach, forthwith the Holy Spirit, being delicate, is straitened, not having [the] place clear, and seeketh to retire from the place;

8 for he is being choked by the evil spirit, and has no room to minister unto the Lord, as he desireth, being polluted by angry temper.

9 For the Lord dwelleth in long-suffering, but the devil in angry temper.

10 Thus that both the spirits then should be dwelling together is inconvenient and evil for that man in whom they dwell.

11 For if you take a little wormwood, and pour it into a jar of honey, is not the whole of the honey spoiled, and all that honey ruined by a very small quantity of wormwood?

12 For it destroyeth the sweetness of the honey, and it no longer hath the same attraction for the owner, because it is rendered bitter and hath lost its use.

13 But if the wormwood be not put into the honey, the honey is found sweet and becomes useful to its owner.

14 Thou seest [then] that long-suffering is very sweet, beyond the sweetness of honey, and is useful to the Lord, and He dwelleth in it.

15 But angry temper is bitter and useless.

16 If then angry temper be mixed with long-suffering, long-suffering is polluted and the mans intercession is no longer useful to God.

17 I would fain know, Sir, say I, the working of angry temper, that I may guard myself from it.

18 Yea, verily, saith he, if thou guard not thyself from it-thou and thy family-thou hast lost all thy hope.

19 But guard thyself from it;

20 for I am with thee.

21 Yea, and all men shall hold aloof from it, as many as have repenteth with their whole heart.

22 For I will be with them and will preserve them;

Shepherd 40

1 Hear now, saith he, the working of angry temper, how evil it is,

2 and how it subverteth the servants of God by its own working, lead astray them that are full in the faith, nor can it work upon them, because the power of the Lord is with them;

3 but them that are empty and double-minded it leadeth astray.

4 For when it seeth such men in prosperity it insinuates itself into the heart of the man,

5 and for no cause whatever the man or the woman is embittered on account of worldly matters,

6 either about meats, or some triviality, or about some friend, or about giving or receiving, or about follies of this kind.

7 For all these things are foolish and vain and senseless and inexpedient for the servants of God.

8 But long-suffering is great and strong,

9 and has a mighty and vigorous power, and is prosperous in great enlargement, gladsome, exultant, free from care, glorifying the Lord at every season, having no bitterness in itself, remaining always gentle and tranquil.

10 This long-suffering therefore dwelleth with those whose faith is perfect.

11 But angry temper is in the first place foolish, fickle and senseless;

12 then from foolishness is engendered bitterness, and from bitterness wrath, and from wrath anger, and from anger spite;

13 then spite being composed of all these evil elements becometh a great sin and incurable.

14 For when all these spirits dwell in one vessel, where the Holy Spirit also dwelleth, that vessel cannot contain them, but overfloweth.

15 The delicate spirit therefore,

16 as not being accustomed to dwell with-an evil spirit nor with harshness, departeth from a man of that kind, and seeketh to dwell with gentleness and tranquility.

17 Then, when it hath removed from that man, in whom it dwells,

18 that man becometh emptied of the righteous spirit,

19 and henceforward, being filled with the evil spirits, he is unstable in all his actions,

20 being dragged about hither and thither by the evil spirits, and is altogether blinded and bereft of his good intent.

21 Thus then it happeneth to all persons of angry temper.

22 Refrain therefore from angry temper, the most evil of evil spirits.

23 But clothe thyself in long-suffering, and resist angry temper and bitterness, and thou shalt be found in company with the holiness which is beloved of the Lord.

24 See then that thou never neglect this commandment;

25 for if thou master this commandment, thou shalt be able likewise to keep the remaining commandments, which I am about to give thee.

26 Be strong in them and endowed with power;

Shepherd 41

1 MANDATE THE SIXTH.

2 I charged thee, saith he,

3 in my first commandment to guard saith he, I wish to show thee their powers also, that thou mayest understand what is the power and effect of each one of them.

4 For their effects are twofold.

5 Now they are prescribed alike to the righteous and the unrighteous.

6 Do thou therefore trust righteousness, but trust not unrighteousness;

7 for the way of righteousness is straight, but the way of unrighteousness is crooked.

8 But walk thou in the straight [and level] path, and leave the crooked one alone.

9 For the crooked way has no tracks, but only pathlessness and many stumbling-stones, and is rough and thorny.

10 So it is therefore harmful to those who walk in it.

11 But those who walk in the straight way walk on the level and without stumbling :

12 for it is neither rough nor thorny.

13 Thou seest then that it is more expedient to walk in this way.

14 I am pleased, Sir, say I, to walk in this way.

Shepherd 42

1 Hear now, saith he, concerning faith.

2 There are two then, Sir, say I, shall I know their workings, seeing that both angels dwell with me?

3 Hear, saith he, and understand their workings.

4 The angel of righteousness is delicate and bashful and gentle and tranquil.

5 When then this one enters into thy heart,

6 forthwith he speaketh with thee of righteousness, of purity, of holiness, and of contentment, of every righteous deed and of every glorious virtue.

7 When all these things enter into thy heart, know that the angel of righteousness is with thee.

8 [These then are the works of the angel of righteousness.]

9 Trust him therefore and his works.

10 Now see the works of the angel of wickedness also.

11 First of all, he is quick-tempered and bitter and senseless, and his works are evil, overthrowing the servants of God.

12 Whenever then he entereth into thy heart, know him by his works.

13 How I shall discern him, Sir, I reply, I know not.

14 Listen, saith he.

15 When a fit of angry temper or bitterness comes upon thee, know that he is in thee.

16 Then the desire of much business and the costliness of many viands and drinking bouts and of many drunken fits and of various luxuries which are unseemly,

17 and the desire of women, and avarice, and haughtiness and boastfulness,

18 and whatsoever things are akin and like to these-when then these things enter into thy heart, know that the angel of wickedness is with thee.

19 Do thou therefore, recognising his works, stand aloof from him, and trust him in nothing, for his works are evil and inexpedient for the servants of God.

20 Here then thou hast the workings of both the angels.

21 Understand them, and trust the angel of righteousness.

22 But from the angel of wickedness stand aloof, for his teaching is evil in every matter;

23 for though one be a man of faith, and the desire of this angel enter into his heart, that man, or that woman, must commit some sin.

24 And if again a man or a woman be exceedingly wicked, and the works of the angel of righteousness come into that mans heart, he must of necessity do something good.

25 Thou seest then, saith he, that it is good to follow the angel of righteousness, and to bid farewell to the angel of wickedness.

26 This commandment declareth what concerneth faith,, that thou mayest trust the works of the angel of righteousness, and doing them mayest live unto God.

27 But believe that the works of the angel of wickedness are difficult;

1 MANDATE THE SEVENTH.

2 Fear the Lord, saith he, and keep His commandments.

3 So deed, and thy doing shall be incomparable.

4 For whilst thou fearest the Lord, thou shalt do all things well.

5 But this is the fear wherewith thou oughtest to be afraid, and thou shalt be saved.

6 But fear not the devil;

7 for, if thou fear the Lord, thou shalt be master over the devil, for there is no power in him.

8 [For] in whom is no power, neither is there fear of him;

9 but in whom power is glorious, of him is fear likewise.

10 For every one that hath power hath fear, whereas he that hath no power is despised of all.

11 But fear thou the works of the devil, for they are evil.

12 While then thou fearest the Lord, thou wilt fear the works of the devil, and wilt not do them, but abstain from them.

13 Fear therefore is of two kinds.

14 If thou desire to do evil, fear the Lord, and thou shalt not do it.

15 If again thou desire to do good, fear the Lord and thou shalt do it.

16 Therefore the fear of the Lord is powerful and great and glorious.

17 Fear the Lord then, and thou shalt live unto Him;

18 yea, and as many of them that keep His commandments as shall fear Him, shall live unto God.

19 Wherefore, Sir, say I, didst thou say concerning those that keep His commandments, "They shall live unto God"?

20 Because, saith he, every creature feareth the Lord, but not every one keepeth His commandments.

21 Those then that fear Him and keep His commandments, they have life unto God;

Shepherd 44

1 MANDATE THE EIGHTH.

2 I told thee, saith he, that the creatures of God are twofold;

3 be temperate, but in other things it is not right.

4 Make known unto me, Sir, say I, in what things it is right to be temperate, and in what things it is not right.

5 Listen, saith he.

6 Be temperate as to what is evil, and do it not;

7 but be not temperate as to what is good, but do it.

8 For if thou be temperate as to what is good, so as not to do it, thou committest a great sin;

9 but if thou be temperate as to what is evil, so as not to do it, thou doest great righteousness.

10 Be temperate therefore in abstaining from all wickedness, and do that which is good.

11 What kinds of wickedness, Sir, say I, are they from which we must be temperate and abstain?

12 Listen, saith he;

13 from adultery and fornication,

14 from the lawlessness of drunkenness, from wicked luxury,

15 from many viands and the costliness of riches, and vaunting and haughtiness and pride, and from falsehood and evil-speaking and hypocrisy, malice and all blasphemy.

16 These works are the most wicked of all in the life of men.

17 From these works therefore the servant of God must be temperate and abstain;

18 for he that is not temperate so as to abstain from these cannot live unto God.

19 Listen then to what follows upon these.

20 Why, are there still other evil deeds, Sir?

21 say I.

22 Aye, saith he, there are many, from which the servant of God must be temperate and abstain;

23 theft, falsehood, deprivation, false witness, avarice, evil desire, deceit, vain-glory, boastfulness, and whatsoever things are like unto these.

24 Thinkest thou not that these things are wrong, yea, very wrong, [saith he,] for the servants of God?

25 In all these things he that serveth God must exercise temperance.

26 Be thou temperate, therefore, and refrain from all these things, that thou mayest live unto God, and be enrolled among those who exercise self-restraint in them.

27 These then are the things from which thou shouldest restrain thyself Now hear, saith he, the things, in which thou shouldest not exercise self-restraint, but do them.

28 Exercise no self-restraint in that which is good, but do it.

29 Sir, say I, show me the power of the good also, that I may walk in them and serve them, that doing them it may be possible for me to be saved.

30 Hear, saith he, the works of the good likewise, which thou must do, and towards which thou must exercise no self-restraint.

31 First of all, there is faith, fear of the Lord, love, concord, words of righteousness, truth, patience;

32 nothing is better than these it, the life of men.

33 If a man keep these, and exercise not self-restraint from them, he becomes blessed in his life.

34 Hear now what follow upon these;

35 to minister to widows, to visit the orphans and the needy,

36 to ransom the servants of God from their afflictions,

37 to be hospitable (for in hospitality benevolence from time to time has a place),

38 to resist no man, to be tranquil, to show yourself more submissive than all men,

39 to reverence the aged, to practise righteousness, to observe brotherly feeling,

40 to endure injury, to be long-suffering, to bear no grudge,

41 to exhort those who are sick at soul, not to cast away those that have stumbled from the faith,

42 but to convert them and to put courage into them, to reprove sinners, not to oppress debtors and indigent persons, and whatsoever actions are like these.

43 Do these things, saith he, seem to thee to be good?

44 Why, what, Sir, say I, can be better than these ?

45 Then walk in them, saith he, and abstain not from them, and thou shalt live unto God.

46 Keep this commandment therefore.

47 If thou do good and abstain not from it, thou shalt live unto God;

48 yea, and all shall live unto God who act so.

49 And again if thou do not evil, and abstain from it, thou shalt live unto God;

50 yea, and all shall live unto God, who shall keep these commandments, and walk in them.

Shepherd 45

1 MANDATE THE NINTH.

2 He saith to me;

3 Remove from thyself a doubtful mind and doubt not at all whether to ask of God, saying within thyself, " How can I ask a thing of the Lord and receive it, seeing that I have committed so many sins against Him?"

4 Reason not thus, but turn to the Lord with thy whole heart,

5 and ask of Him, nothing wavering, and thou shalt know His exceeding compassion, that He will surely not abandon thee, but will fulfil the petition of thy soul.

6 For God is not as men who bear a grudge, but Himself is without malice and hath compassion on His creatures.

7 Do thou therefore cleanse thy heart from all the vanities of this life, and from the things mentioned before;

8 and ask of the Lord, and thou shalt receive all things, and shalt lack nothing of all thy petitions, if thou ask of the Lord nothing wavering.

9 But if thou waver in thy heart, thou shalt surely receive none of thy petitions.

10 For they that waver towards God, these are the doubtful-minded, and they never obtain any of their petitions.

11 But they that are complete in the faith make all their petitions trusting in the Lord, and they receive, because they ask without wavering, nothing doubting;

12 for every doubtful-minded man, if he repent not, shall hardly be saved.

13 Cleanse therefore thy heart from doubtful-mindedness, and put on faith, for it is strong, and trust God that thou wilt receive all thy petitions which thou askest;

14 and if after asking anything of the Lord, thou receive thy petition somewhat tardily, be not of doubtful mind because thou didst not receive the petition of thy soul at once.

15 For assuredly it is by reason of some temptation or some transgression, of which thou art ignorant, that thou receivest thy petition so tardily.

16 Do thou therefore cease not to make thy souls petition, and thou shalt receive it.

17 But if thou grow weary, and doubt as thou askest, blame thyself and not Him that giveth unto thee.

18 See to this doubtful-mindedness;

19 for it is evil and senseless, and uprooteth many from the faith, yea, even very faithful and strong men.

20 For indeed this doubtful-mindedness is a daughter of the devil, and worketh great wickedness against the servants of God.

21 Therefore despise doubtful-mindedness and gain the mastery over it in everything, clothing thyself with faith which is strong and powerful.

22 For faith promiseth all things, accomplisheth all things;

23 but doubtful-mindedness, as having no confidence in itself, fails in all the works which it doeth.

24 Thou seest then, saith he, that faith is from above from the Lord, and hath great power;

25 but doubtful-mindedness as an earthly spirit from the devil, and hath no power.

26 Do thou therefore serve that faith which hath power, and hold aloof from the doubtful-mindedness which hath no power;

27 and thou shalt live unto God;

28 yea, and all those shall live unto God who are so minded.

Shepherd 46

1 MANDATE THE TENTH.

2 Put away sorrow from thyself, saith he, for she is the sister of doubtful-mindedness and of angry temper.

3 How, Sir, say I, is she the sister of these?

4 For angry temper seems to me to be one thing, doubtful-mindedness another, sorrow another.

5 Thou art a foolish fellow, saith he,

6 [and] perceivest not that sorrow is more evil than all the spirits,

7 and is most fatal to the servants of God, and beyond all the spirits destroys a man, and crushes out the Holy Spirit, and yet again saves it.

8 I, Sir, say I, am without understanding, and I understand not these parables.

9 For how it can crush out and again save, I do not comprehend.

10 Listen, saith he.

11 Those who have never investigated concerning the truth,

12 nor enquired concerning the deity,

13 but have merely believed,

14 and have been mixed up in business affairs and riches and heathen friendships,

15 and many other affairs of this world-as many, I say, as devote themselves to these things, comprehend not the parables of the deity;

16 for they are darkened by these actions, and are corrupted and become barren.

17 As good vineyards,

18 when they are treated with neglect, are made barren by the thorns and weeds of various kinds,

19 so men who after they have believed fall into these many occupations which were mentioned before, lose their understanding and comprehend nothing at all concerning righteousness;

20 for if they hear concerning the deity and truth, their mind is absorbed in their occupations, and they perceive nothing at all.

21 But they that have the fear of God,

22 and investigate concerning deity and truth, and direct their heart towards the Lord, perceive and understand everything that is said to them more quickly,

23 because they have the fear of the Lord in themselves;

24 for where the Lord dwelleth, there too is great understanding.

25 Cleave therefore unto the Lord, and thou shalt understand and perceive all things.

Shepherd 47

1 Hear now, senseless man, saith he, how sorrow crusheth out the Holy Spirit, and again saveth it.

2 When the man of doubtful mind sets his hand to any action, and fails in it owing to his doubtful-mindedness, grief at this entereth into the man, and grieveth the Holy Spirit, and crusheth it out.

3 Then again when angry temper cleaveth to a man concerning any matter,

4 and he is much embittered, again sorrow entereth into the heart of the man that was ill-tempered, and he is grieved at the deed which he hath done, and repenteth that he did evil.

5 This sadness therefore seemeth to bring salvation, because he repented at having done the evil.

6 So both the operations sadden the Spirit;

7 first, the doubtful mind saddens the Spirit, because it succeeded not in its business, and the angry temper again, because it did what was evil.

8 Thus both are saddening to the Holy Spirit, the doubtful mind and the angry temper.

9 Put away therefore from thyself sadness, and afflict not the Holy Spirit that dwelleth in thee, lest haply He intercede with God [against thee], and depart from thee.

10 For the Spirit of God, that was given unto this flesh, endureth not sadness neither constraint.

Shepherd 48

1 Therefore clothe thyself in cheerfulness, which hath favour with God always, and is acceptable to Him, and rejoice in it.

2 For every cheerful man worketh good, and thinketh good, and despiseth sadness;

3 but the sad man is always committing sin.

4 In the first place he committeth sin, because he grieveth the Holy Spirit, which was given to the man being a cheerful spirit;

5 and in the second place, by grieving the Holy Spirit he doeth lawlessness, in that he doth not intercede with neither confess unto God.

6 For the intercession of a sad man hath never at any time power to ascend to the altar of God.

7 Wherefore, say I, doth not the intercession of him that is saddened ascend to the altar?

8 Because, saith he, sadness is seated at his heart.

9 Thus sadness mingled with the intercession doth not suffer the intercession to ascend pure to the altar.

10 For as vinegar when mingled with wine in the same (vessel) hath not the same pleasant taste, so likewise sadness mingled with the Holy Spirit hath not the same intercession.

11 Therefore cleanse thyself from this wicked sadness, and thou shalt live unto God;

12 yea, and all they shall live unto God, who shall cast away sadness from themselves and clothe themselves in all cheerfulness.

Shepherd 49

1 MANDATE THE ELEVENTH.

2 He shewed me men seated on a couch, and another man seated on a chair.

3 And he saith to me, Seest thou those that are seated on the couch ?

4 I see them, Sir, say I.

5 These, saith he, are faithful,

6 but he that sitteth on the chair is a false prophet who destroyeth the mind of the servants of God-I mean, of the doubtful-minded, not of the faithful.

7 These doubtful-minded ones then come to him as to a soothsayer and enquire of him what shall befall them.

8 And he, the false prophet, having no power of a divine Spirit in himself, speaketh with them according to their enquiries [and according to the lusts of their wickedness],

9 and filleth their souls as they themselves wish.

10 For being empty himself he giveth empty answers to empty enquirers;

11 for whatever enquiry may be made of him, he answereth according to the emptiness of the man.

12 But he speaketh also some true words for the devil filleth him with his own spirit, if so be he shall be able to break down some of the righteous.

13 So many therefore as are strong in the faith of the Lord, clothed with the truth, cleave not to such spirits, but hold aloof from them;

14 but as many as are doubters and frequently change their minds, practise soothsaying like the Gentiles, and bring upon themselves greater sin by their idolatries.

15 For he that consulteth a false prophet on any matter is an idolater and emptied of the truth, and senseless.

16 For no Spirit given of God needeth to be consulted;

17 but, having the power of deity, speaketh all things of itself, because it is from above, even from the power of the divine Spirit.

18 But the spirit which is consulted, and speaketh according to the desires of men, is earthly and fickle, having no power;

19 and it speaketh not at all, unless it be consulted.

20 How then, Sir, say I, shall a man know who of them is a prophet, and who a false prophet?

21 Hear, saith he, concerning both the prophets;

22 and, as I shall tell thee, so shalt thou test the prophet and the false prophet.

23 By his life test the man that hath the divine Spirit.

24 In the first place, he that hath the [divine] Spirit, which is from above,

25 is gentle and tranquil and humble-minded,

26 and abstaineth from all wickedness and vain desire of this present world,

27 and holdeth himself inferior to all men, and giveth no answer to any man when enquired of, nor speaketh in solitude (for neither doth the Holy Spirit speak when a man wisheth Him to speak);

28 but the man speaketh then when God wisheth him to speak.

29 When then the man who hath the divine Spirit cometh into an assembly of righteous men, who have faith in a divine Spirit,

30 and intercession is made to God by the gathering of those men,

31 then the angel of the prophetic spirit, who is attached to him, filleth the man, and the man, being filled with the Holy Spirit, speaketh to the multitude, according as the Lord willeth.

32 In this way then the Spirit of the deity shall be manifest.

33 This then is the greatness of the power as touching the Spirit of the deity of the Lord.

34 Hear now, saith he, concerning the earthly and vain spirit, which hath no power but is foolish.

35 In, the first place, that man who seemeth to have a spirit exalteth himself,

36 and desireth to have a chief place,

37 and straight-way he is impudent and shameless and talkative and conversant in many luxuries and in many other deceits, and receiveth money for his prophesying, and if he receiveth not, he prophesieth not.

38 Now can a divine Spirit receive money and prophesy?

39 It is not possible for a prophet of God to do this, but the spirit of such prophets is earthly.

40 In the next place, it never approacheth an assembly of righteous men;

41 but avoideth them, and cleaveth to the doubtful-minded and empty,

42 and prophesieth to them in corners, and deceiveth them, speaking all things in emptiness to gratify their desires;

43 for they too are empty whom it answereth.

44 For the empty vessel placed together with the empty is not broken, but they agree one with the other.

45 But when he comes into an assembly full of righteous men who have a Spirit of deity,

46 and intercession is made from them,

47 that man is emptied, and the earthly spirit fleeth from him, in fear, and that man is struck dumb and is altogether broken in pieces, being unable to utter a word.

48 For, if you pack wine or oil into a closet, and place an empty vessel among them, and again desire to unpack the closet,

49 the vessel which you placed there empty, empty in like manner you will find it.

50 Thus also the empty prophets, whenever they come unto the spirits of righteous men, are found just such as they came.

51 I have given thee the life of both kinds of prophets.

52 Therefore test, by his life and his works, the man who says that he is moved by the Spirit.

53 But do thou trust the Spirit that cometh from God, and hath power;

54 but in the earthly and empty spirit put no trust at all;

55 for in it there is no power, for it cometh from the devil.

56 Listen [then] to the parable which I shall tell thee.

57 Take a stone, and throw it up to heaven-see if thou canst reach it;

58 or again, take a squirt of water, and squirt it up to heaven-see if thou canst bore through the heaven.

59 How, Sir, say I, can these things be?

60 For both these things which thou hast mentioned are beyond our power.

61 Well then, saith he, just as these things are beyond our power, so likewise the earthly spirits have no power and are feeble.

62 Now take the power which cometh from above.

63 The hail is a very small grain, and yet, when it falleth on a mans head, what pain it causeth! Or again, take a drop which falls on the ground from the tiles, and bores through the stone.

Shepherd 50

1 MANDATE THE TWELFTH.

2 He saith to me;

3 Remove from thyself all evil desire, and clothe thyself in the desire which is good and holy;

4 for clothed with this desire thou shalt hate the evil desire, and shalt bridle and direct it as thou wilt.

5 For the evil desire is wild, and only tamed with difficulty;

6 for it is terrible, and by its wildness is very costly to men;

7 more especially if a servant of God get entangled in it, and have no understanding, he is put to fearful costs by it.

8 But it is costly to such men as are not clothed in the good desire, but are mixed up with this life.

9 These men then it hands over to death.

10 Of what sort, Sir, say I, are the works of the evil desire, which hand over men to death?

11 Make them known to me, that I may hold aloof from them.

12 Listen, [saith he,] through what works the evil desire bringeth death to the servants of God.

Shepherd 51

1 Before all is desire for the wife or husband of another, and for extravagance of wealth, and for many needless dainties, and for drinks and other luxuries, many and foolish.

2 For every luxury is foolish and vain for the servants of God.

3 These desires then are evil, and bring death to the servants of God.

4 For this evil desire is a daughter of the devil.

5 Ye must, therefore, abstain from the evil desires, that so abstaining ye may live unto God.

6 But as many as are mastered by them, and resist them not, are done to death utterly;

7 for these desires are deadly.

8 But do thou clothe thyself in the desire of righteousness, and, having armed thyself with the fear of the Lord, resist them.

9 For the fear of God dwelleth in the good desire.

10 If the evil desire shall see thee armed with the fear of God and resisting itself, it shall flee far from thee, and shall no more be seen of thee, being in fear of thine arms.

11 Do thou therefore, when thou art crowned for thy victory over it, come to the desire of righteousness,

12 and deliver to her the victors prize which thou hast received, and serve her, according as she herself desireth.

Shepherd 52

1 I would fain know, Sir, say I, in what ways I ought to serve the and the fear of the Lord, faith and gentleness, and as many good deeds as are like these.

2 Practising these thou shalt be well-pleasing as a servant of God, and shalt live unto Him;

Shepherd 53

1 So he completed the twelve commandments, and he saith to me;

2 Thou hast these commandments;

3 walk in them, and exhort thy hearers that their ministration, which I give thee, fulfil thou with all diligence to the end, and thou shalt effect much.

4 For thou shalt find favour among those who are about to repent, and they shall obey thy words.

Shepherd 54

1 I say to him;

2 Sir, these commandments are great and beautiful and glorious, and are able to gladden the heart of the man who is able to man, for they are very hard.

3 He answered and said unto me;

4 If thou set it before thyself that they can be kept, thou wilt easily keep them, and they will not be hard;

5 but if it once enter into thy heart that they cannot be kept by a man, thou wilt not keep them.

6 But now I say unto thee;

7 if thou keep them, not, but neglect them, thou shalt not have salvation, neither thy children nor thy household, since thou hast already pronounced judgment against thyself that these commandments cannot be kept by a man.

Shepherd 55

1 And these things he said to me very angrily, so that I was confounded, and feared him exceedingly;

2 for his form was changed, so that a man could not endure his anger.

3 And when he saw that I was altogether disturbed and confounded, he began to speak more kindly [and cheerfully] to me, and he saith;

4 Foolish fellow, void of understanding and of doubtful mind,

5 perceivest thou not the glory of God, how great and mighty and marvelous it is,

6 how that He created the world for mans sake, and subjected all His creation to man, and gave all authority to him, that he should be master over all things under the heaven?

7 If then, [he saith,] man is lord of all the creatures of God and mastereth all things, cannot he also master these commandments?

8 Aye, saith he, the man that hath the Lord in his heart can master [all things and] all these commandments.

9 But they that have the Lord on their lips, while their heart is hardened, and are far from the Lord, to them these commandments are hard and inaccessible.

10 Therefore do ye, who are empty and fickle in the faith, set your Lord in your heart, and ye shall perceive that nothing is easier than these commandments, nor sweeter, nor more gentle.

11 Be ye converted, ye that walk after the commandments of devil, (the commandments which are so) difficult and bitter and wild and riotous;

12 and fear not the devil, for there is no power in him against you.

13 For I will be with you, I, the angel of repentance, who have the mastery over him.

14 The devil hath fear alone, but his fear hath no force.

Shepherd 56

1 I say to him, Sir, listen to a few words from me.

2 Say what thou wilt, saith he.

3 Man, Sir, I say, is eager to keep the commandments of strengthened in His commandments, and be subject to them;

4 but the devil is hard and overmastereth them.

5 He cannot, saith he, overmaster the servants of God, who set their hope on Him with their whole heart.

6 The devil can wrestle with them, but he cannot overthrow them.

7 If then ye resist him, he will be vanquished, and will flee from you disgraced.

8 But as many, saith he, as are utterly empty, fear the devil as if he had power.

9 When a man has filled amply sufficient jars with good wine, and among these jars a few are quite empty, he comes to the jars, and does not examine the full ones, for he knows that they are full;

10 but he examineth the empty ones, fearing lest they have turned sour.

11 For empty jars soon turn sour, and the taste of the wine is spoilt.

12 So also the devil cometh to all the servants of Cod tempting them.

13 As many then as are complete in the faith, oppose him mightily, and he departeth from them, not having a place where he can find an entrance.

14 So he cometh next to the empty ones, and finding a place goeth into them, and further he doeth what he willeth in them, and they become submissive slaves to him.

Shepherd 57

1 But I, the angel of repentance, say unto you;

2 Fear not the devil;

3 for I was sent, saith he, to be with you who repent with your whole heart, and to strengthen you in the faith.

4 Believe, therefore, on God, ye who by reason of your sins have despaired of your life, and are adding to your sins, and weighing down your life;

5 for if ye turn unto the Lord with your whole heart,

6 and work righteousness the remaining days of your life, and serve Him rightly according to His will, He will give healing to your former sins, and ye shall have power to master the works of the devil.

7 But of the threatening of the devil fear not at all;

8 for he is unstrung, like the sinews of a dead man.

9 Hear me therefore, and fear Him, Who is able to do all things, to save and to destroy, and observe these commandments, and ye shall live unto God.

10 I say to him, Sir, now am I strengthened in all the ordinances of the Lord, because thou art with me;

11 and I know that thou wilt crush all the power of the devil, and we shall be masters over him, and shall prevail over all his works.

12 And I hope, Sir, that I am now able to keep these commandments which thou hast commanded, the Lord enabling me.

13 Thou shalt keep them, saith he, if thy heart be found pure with the Lord;

Shepherd 58

1 PARABLES WHICH HE SPAKE WITH ME.

2 He saith to me;

3 Ye know that ye, who far from this city.

4 If then ye know your city, in which ye shall dwell, why do ye here prepare fields and expensive displays and buildings and dwelling-chambers which are superfluous?

5 He, therefore, that prepareth these things for this city does not purpose to return to his own city.

6 O foolish and double-minded and miserable man, perceivest thou not that all these things are foreign, and are under the power of another?

7 For the lord of this city shall say, "I do not wish thee to dwell in my city;

8 go forth from this city, for thou dost not conform to my laws."

9 Thou, therefore, who hast fields and dwellings and many other possessions,

10 when thou art cast out by him, what wilt thou do with thy field and thy house and all the other things that thou preparedst for thyself?

11 For the lord of this country saith to thee justly, "Either conform to my laws, or depart from my country."

12 What then shalt thou do, who art under law in thine own city?

13 For the sake of thy fields and the rest of thy possessions wilt thou altogether repudiate thy law, and walk according to the law of this city?

14 Take heed, lest it be inexpedient to repudiate thy law;

15 for if thou shouldest desire to return again to thy city, thou shalt surely not be received [because thou didst repudiate the law of thy city], and shalt be shut out from it.

16 Take heed therefore;

17 as dwelling in a strange land prepare nothing more for thyself but a competency which is sufficient for thee,

18 and make ready that,

19 whensoever the master of this city may desire to cast thee out for thine opposition to his law, thou mayest go forth from his city and depart into thine own city, and use thine own law joyfully, free from all insult.

20 Take heed therefore, ye that serve God and have Him in your heart work the works of God being mindful of His commandments and of the promises which He made, and believe Him that He will perform them, if His commandments be kept.

21 Therefore, instead of fields buy ye souls that are in trouble, as each is able, and visit widows and orphans, and neglect them not;

22 and spend your riches and all your displays, which ye received from God, on fields and houses of this kind.

23 For to this end the Master enriched you, that ye might perform these ministrations for Him.

24 It is much better to purchase fields [and possessions] and houses of this kind, which thou wilt find in thine own city, when thou visitest it.

25 This lavish expenditure is beautiful and joyous, not bringing sadness or fear, but bringing joy.

26 The expenditure of the heathen then practise not ye;
27 for it is not convenient for you the servants of God.
28 But practise your own expenditure, in which ye can rejoice;
29 and do not corrupt, neither touch that which is another mans, nor
lust after it;
30 for it is wicked to lust after other men's possessions.

Shepherd 59

1 ANOTHER PARABLE.

2 As I walked in the field, and noticed an elm and a vine,
3 and was distinguishing them and their fruits, the shepherd
appeareth thinking, [Sir,] say I, about the elm and the vine, that they
are excellently suited the one to the other.

4 These two trees, saith he, are appointed for a type to the servants of
God.

5 I would fain know, [Sir,] say I, the type contained in these trees, of
which thou speakest.

6 Seest thou, saith he, the elm and the vine?

7 I see them, Sir, say I.

8 This vine, saith he, beareth fruit, but the elm is an unfruitful stock.

9 Yet this vine, except it climb up the elm, cannot bear much fruit
when it is spread on the ground;

10 and such fruit as it beareth is rotten, because it is not suspended
upon the elm.

11 When then the vine is attached to the elm, it beareth fruit both
from itself and from the elm.

12 Thou seest then that the elm also beareth [much] fruit, not less
than the vine, but rather more.

13 How more, Sir? say I.

14 Because, saith he, the vine, when hanging upon the elm, bears its
fruit in abundance, and in good condition;

15 but, when spread on the ground, it beareth little fruit, and that
rotten.

16 This parable therefore is applicable to the servants of God, to poor
and to rich alike.

17 How, Sir? say I;

18 instruct me.

19 Listen, saith he;

20 the rich man hath much wealth, but in the things of the Lord he is
poor, being distracted about his riches, and his confession and
intercession with the Lord is very scanty;

21 and even that which he giveth is small and weak and hath not power above.

22 When then the rich man goeth up to the poor, and assisteth him in his needs,

23 believing that for what he doth to the poor man he shall be able to obtain a reward with God-because the poor man is rich in intercession [and confession],

24 and his intercession hath great power with God-the rich man then supplieth all things to the poor man without wavering.

25 But the poor man being supplied by the rich maketh intercession for him, thanking God for him that gave to him.

26 And the other is still more zealous to assist the poor man, that he may be continuous in his life:

27 for he knoweth that the intercession of the poor man is acceptable and rich before God.

28 They both then accomplish their work;

29 the poor man maketh intercession, wherein he is rich [which he received of the Lord];

30 this he rendereth again to the Lord Who supplieth him with it.

31 The rich man too in like manner furnisheth to the poor man, nothing doubting, the riches which he received from the Lord.

32 And this work is great and acceptable with God,

33 because (the rich man) hath understanding concerning his riches, and worketh for the poor man from the bounties of the Lord, and accomplisheth the ministration of the Lord rightly.

34 In the sight of men then the elm seemeth not to bear fruit,

35 and they know not, neither perceive,

36 that if there cometh a drought, the elm having water nurtureth the vine, and the vine having a constant supply of water beareth fruit twofold, both for itself and for the elm.

37 So likewise the poor, by interceding with the Lord for the rich, establish their riches, and again the rich, supplying their needs to the poor, establish their souls.

38 So then both are made partners in the righteous work.

39 He then that doeth these things shall not be abandoned of God, but shall be written in the books of the living.

40 Blessed are the rich, who understand also that they are enriched from the Lord.

Shepherd 6o

1 ANOTHER PARABLE.

2 He showed me many trees which had no leaves, but they seemed to me to be, as it were, withered for they were all alike.

3 And he all alike, and are withered.

4 He answered and said to me;

5 These trees that thou seest are they that dwell in this world.

6 Wherefore then, Sir, say I, are they as if they were withered, and alike?

7 Because, saith he, neither the righteous are distinguishable, nor the sinners in this world, but they are alike.

8 For this world is winter to the righteous, and they are not distinguishable, as they dwell with the sinners.

9 For as in the winter the trees, having shed their leaves, are alike, and are not distinguishable, which are withered,

10 and which alive, so also in this world neither the just nor the sinners are distinguishable, but they are all alike.

Shepherd 61

1 ANOTHER PARABLE.

2 He showed me many trees again, some of them sprouting, and others withered, and he saith to me;

3 Seest thou, saith he, these trees?

4 I see them, Sir, say I, some of them sprouting, and others withered.

5 These trees, saith he, that are sprouting are the righteous, who shall dwell in the world to come;

6 for the world to come is summer to the righteous, but winter to the sinners.

7 When then the mercy of the Lord shall shine forth, then they that serve Cod shall be made manifest;

8 yea, and all men shall be made manifest.

9 For as in summer the fruits of each several tree are made manifest,

10 and are recognised of what sort they are,

11 so also the fruits of the righteous shall be manifest, and all [even the very smallest] shall be known to be flourishing in that world.

12 But the Gentiles and the sinners,

13 just as thou sawest the trees which were withered,

14 even such shall they be found, withered and unfruitful in that world, and shall be burnt up as fuel, and shall be manifest, because their practice in their life hath been evil.

15 For the sinners shall be burned, because they sinned and repented not;

16 and the Gentiles shall be burned, because they knew not Him that created them.

17 Do thou therefore bear fruit, that in that summer thy, fruit may be known.

18 But abstain from overmuch business, and thou shalt never fall into any sin.

19 For they that busy themselves overmuch, sin much also, being distracted about their business, and in no wise serving their own Lord.

20 How then, saith he, can such a man ask anything of the Lord and receive it, seeing that he serveth not the Lord?

21 [For] they that serve Him, these shall receive their petitions, but they that serve not the Lord, these shall receive nothing.

22 But if any one work one single action, he is able also to serve the Lord;

23 for his mind shall not be corrupted from (following) the Lord, but he shall serve Him, because he keepeth his mind pure.

24 If therefore thou doest these things, thou shalt be able to bear fruit unto the world to come;

Shepherd 62

1 ANOTHER PARABLE.

2 As I was fasting and seated on a certain mountain, and giving thanks to the Lord for all that He had done unto me, I see the morn?

3 "Because, Sir, say I, I am keeping a station.

4 What, saith he, is a station?

5 I am fasting, Sir, say I.

6 And what, saith he, is this fast [that ye are fasting]?

7 As I was accustomed, Sir, say I, so I fast.

8 Ye know not, saith he, how to fast unto the Lord, neither is this a fast, this unprofitable fast which ye make unto Him.

9 Wherefore, Sir, say I, sayest thou this?

10 I tell thee, saith he, that this is not a fast, wherein ye think to fast;

11 but I will teach thee what is a complete fast and acceptable to the Lord.

12 Listen, saith he;

13 God desireth not such a vain fast;

14 for by so fasting unto God thou shalt do nothing for righteousness.

15 But fast thou [unto God] such a fast as this;

16 do no wickedness in thy life, and serve the Lord with a pure heart;

17 observe His commandments and walk in His ordinances, and let no evil desire rise up in thy heart;

18 but believe God.

19 Then, if thou shalt do these things, and fear Him, and control thyself from every evil deed, thou shalt live unto God;

20 and if thou do these things, thou shalt accomplish a great fast, and one acceptable to God.

1 Hear the parable which I shall tell thee relating to fasting.

2 A certain man had an estate, and many slaves, and a portion of his estate he planted as a vineyard;

Shepherd 6:3

3 and choosing out a certain slave who was trusty and well-pleasing (and) held in honour, he called him to him and saith unto him:

4 "Take this vineyard [which I have planted], and fence it [till I come], but do nothing else to the vineyard.

5 Now keep this my commandment, and thou shalt be free in my house."

6 Then the master of the servant went away to travel abroad.

7 When then he had gone away, the servant took and fenced the vineyard;

8 and having finished the fencing of the vineyard, he noticed that the vineyard was full of weeds.

9 So he reasoned within himself, saying, "This command of my lord I have carried out.

10 I will next dig this vineyard, and it shall be neater when it is digged;

11 and when it hath no weeds it will yield more fruit, because not choked by the weeds."

12 He took and digged the vineyard, and all the weeds that were in the vineyard he plucked up.

13 And that vineyard became very neat and flourishing, when it had no weeds to choke it.

14 After a time the master of the servant [and of the estate] came, and he went into the vineyard.

15 And seeing the vineyard fenced neatly, and digged as well, and [all] the weeds plucked up, and the vines flourishing, he rejoiced [exceedingly] at what his servant had done.

16 So he called his beloved son, who was his heir,

17 and the friends who were his advisers, and told them what he had commanded his servant, and how much he had found done.

18 And they rejoiced with the servant at the testimony which his master had borne to him.

19 And he saith to them;

20 "I promised this servant his freedom, if he should keep the commandment which I commanded him;

21 but he kept my commandment and did a good work besides to my vineyard, and pleased me greatly.

22 For this work therefore which he has done, I desire to make him joint-heir with my son, because, when the good thought struck him, he did not neglect it, but fulfilled it.”

23 In this purpose the son of the master agreed with him, that the servant should be made joint-heir with the son.

24 After some few days, his master made a feast, and sent to him many dainties from the feast.

25 But when the servant received [the dainties sent to him by the master], he took what was sufficient for him, and distributed the rest to his fellow-servants.

26 And his fellow-servants, when they received the dainties, rejoiced, and began to pray for him,

27 that he might find greater favour with the master, because he had treated them so handsomely.

28 All these things which had taken place his master heard, and again rejoiced greatly at his deed.

29 So the master called together again his friends and his son, and announced to them the deed that he had done with regard to his dainties which he had received;

Shepherd 64

1 I say, Sir, I understand not these parables, neither can I apprehend thee, saith he;

2 and will show thee whatsoever things I shall speak with thee.

3 Keep the commandments of the Lord, and thou shalt be well-pleasing to God, and shalt be enrolled among the number of them that keep His commandments.

4 But if thou do any good thing outside the commandment of God, thou shalt win for thyself more exceeding glory, and shalt be more glorious in the sight of God than thou wouldest otherwise have been.

5 If then, while thou keepest the commandments of God, thou add these services likewise, thou shalt rejoice, if thou observe them according to my commandment.

6 I say to him, Sir, whatsoever thou commandest me, I will keep it;

7 for I know that thou art with me.

8 I will be with thee, saith he, because thou hast so great zeal for doing good;

9 yea, and I will be with all, saith he, whosoever have such zeal as this.

10 This fasting, saith he, if the commandments of the Lord are kept, is very good.

11 This then is the way, that thou shalt keep this fast [which thou art about to observe].

12 First of all, keep thyself from every evil word and every evil desire, and purify thy heart from all the vanities of this world.

13 If thou keep these things, this fast shall be perfect for thee.

14 And thus shalt thou do.

15 Having fulfilled what is written, on that day on which thou fastest thou shalt taste nothing but bread and water;

16 and from thy meats, which thou wouldest have eaten,

17 thou shalt reckon up the amount of that days expenditure, which thou wouldest have incurred,

18 and shalt give it to a widow, or an orphan, or to one in want,

19 and so shalt thou humble thy soul, that he that hath received from thy humiliation may satisfy his own soul, and may pray for thee to the Lord.

20 If then thou shalt so accomplish this fast, as I have commanded thee, thy sacrifice shall be acceptable in the sight of God, and this fasting shall be recorded;

21 and the service so performed is beautiful and joyous and acceptable to the Lord.

22 These things thou shalt so observe, thou and thy children and thy whole household;

23 and, observing them, thou shalt be blessed;

Shepherd 65

1 I entreated him earnestly,

2 that he would show me the parable of the fenced the vineyard, [and of the fence,]

3 and of the weeds which were plucked up out of the vineyard, and of the son, and of the friends, the advisers.

4 For I understood that all these things are a parable.

5 but he answered and said unto me;

6 Thou art exceedingly importunate in enquiries.

7 Thou oughtest not, [saith he,] to make any enquiry at all;

8 for if it be right that a thing be explained unto thee, it shall be explained.

9 I say to him;

10 Sir, whatsoever things thou showest unto me and dost not explain, I shall have seen them in vain, and without understanding what they are.

11 In like manner also, if thou speak parables to me and interpret them not, I shall have heard a thing in vain from thee.

12 But he again answered, and said unto me;

13 Whosoever, saith he, is a servant of God, and hath his own Lord in his heart, asketh understanding of Him,

14 and receiveth it, and interpreteth every parable, and the words of the Lord which are spoken in parables are made known unto him.

15 But as many as are sluggish and idle in intercession, these hesitate to ask of the Lord.

16 But the Lord is abundant in compassion, and giveth to them that ask of Him without ceasing.

17 But thou who hast been strengthened by the holy angel, and hast received from him such (powers of) intercession and art not idle, wherefore dost thou not ask understanding of the Lord, and obtain it from Him?

18 I say to him, Sir, I that have thee with me have (but) need to ask thee and enquire of thee;

19 for thou showest me all things, and speakest with me;

20 but if I had seen or heard them apart from thee I should have asked of the Lord, that they might be shown to me.

Shepherd 66

1 I told thee just now, saith he, that thou art unscrupulous and importunate, in enquiring for the interpretations of the parables.

2 But since thou art so obstinate, I will interpret to thee the parable of the estate and all the accompaniments thereof, that thou mayest make them known unto all.

3 Hear now, saith he, and understand them.

4 The estate is this world, and the lord of the estate is He that created all things, and set them in order, and endowed them with power;

5 and the servant is the Son of God, and the vines are this people whom He Himself planted;

6 and the fences are the [holy] angels of the Lord who keep together His people;

7 and the weeds, which are plucked up from the vineyard, are the transgressions of the servants of God;

8 and the dainties which He sent to him from the feast are the commandments which He gave to His people through His Son;

9 and the friends and advisers are the holy angels which were first created;

10 and the absence of the master is the time which remaineth over until His coming.

11 I say to him;

12 Sir, great and marvelous are all things and all things are glorious;

13 was it likely then, say I, that I could have apprehended them?

14 Nay, nor can any other man, though he be full of understanding, apprehend them.

15 Yet again, Sir, say I, explain to me what I am about to enquire of thee.

16 Say on, he saith, if thou desirest anything.

Shepherd 67

1 Listen, said he;

2 the Son of God is not represented in the guise of a I;

3 I comprehend not.

4 Because, saith he, God planted the vineyard, that is, He created the people, and delivered them over to His Son.

5 And the Son placed the angels in charge of them, to watch over them;

6 and the Son Himself cleansed their sins, by labouring much and enduring many toils;

7 for no one can dig without toil or labour.

8 Having Himself then cleansed the sins of His people, He showed them the paths of life, giving them the law which He received from His Father.

9 Thou seest, saith he, that He is Himself Lord of the people, having received all power from His Father.

10 But how that the lord took his son and the glorious angels as advisers concerning the inheritance of the servant, listen.

11 The Holy Pre-existent Spirit, Which created the whole creation, God made to dwell in flesh that He desired.

12 This flesh, therefore, in which the Holy Spirit dwelt, was subject unto the Spirit, walking honourably in holiness and purity, without in any way defiling the Spirit.

13 When then it had lived honourably in chastity,

14 and had laboured with the Spirit, and had cooperated with it in everything, behaving itself boldly and bravely, He chose it as a partner with the Holy Spirit;

15 for the career of this flesh pleased [the Lord], seeing that, as possessing the Holy Spirit, it was not defiled upon the earth.

16 He therefore took the son as adviser and the glorious angels also,

17 that this flesh too, having served the Spirit unblameably, might have some place of sojourn, and might not seem to have lost the reward for its service;

18 for all flesh, which is found undefiled and unspotted, wherein the Holy Spirit dwelt, shall receive a reward.

Shepherd 68

1 I was right glad, Sir, say I, to hear this interpretation.

2 Listen now, saith he.

3 Keep this thy flesh pure and undefiled, that the Spirit justified.

4 See that it never enter into thine heart that this flesh of thine is perishable, and so thou abuse it in come defilement.

5 [For] if thou defile thy flesh, thou shalt defile the Holy Spirit also;

6 but if thou defile +the flesh, thou shalt not live.

7 But if, Sir, say I, there has been any ignorance in times past, before these words were heard, how shall a man who has defiled his flesh be saved?

8 For the former deeds of ignorance, saith he, God alone hath power to give healing;

9 for all authority is His.

10 [But now keep thyself, and the Lord Almighty, Who is full of compassion, will give healing for thy former deeds of ignorance,] if henceforth thou defile not thy flesh, neither the Spirit;

11 for both share in common, and the one cannot be defiled without the other.

Shepherd 69

1 [PARABLE THE SIXTH].

2 As I sat in my house, and glorified the Lord for all things that I had seen, and was considering concerning the glorious and able to save a mans soul, I said within myself;

3 Blessed shall I be, if I walk in these commandments;

4 yea, and whosoever shall walk in them shall be blessed.

5 As I spake these things within thyself, I see him suddenly seated by me, and saying as follows;

6 Why art thou of a doubtful mind concerning the commandments, which I commanded thee?

7 They are beautiful.

8 Doubt not at all;

9 but clothe thyself in the faith of the Lord, and thou shalt walk in them.

10 For I will strengthen thee in them.

11 These commandments are suitable for those who meditate repentance for if they walk not in them, their repentance is in vain.

12 Ye then that repent, cast away the evil doings of this world which crush you;

13 and, by putting on every excellence of righteousness, ye shall be able to observe these commandments, and to add no more to your sins.

14 If then ye add no further sin at all, ye will depart from your former sins.

15 Walk then in these my commandments, and ye shall live unto God.

16 These things have [all] been told you from me.

17 And after he had told these things to me, he saith to me, Let us go into the country, and I will show thee the shepherds of the sheep.

18 Let us go, Sir, say I.

19 And we came to a certain plain, and he showeth me a young man, a shepherd, clothed in a light cloak, of saffron colour;

20 and he was feeding a great number of sheep, and these sheep were, as it were, well fed and very frisky, and were gladsome as they skipped about hither and thither;

21 and the shepherd himself was all gladsome over his flock;

22 and the very visage of the shepherd was exceedingly gladsome;

23 and he ran about among the sheep.

Shepherd 70

1 And he saith to me;

2 Seest thou this shepherd?

3 I see him, Sir, I say.

4 This, saith he, is the angel of self-indulgence and of deceit.

5 He crusheth the souls of the servants of God, and perverteth them from the truth, leading them astray with evil desires, wherein they perish.

6 For they forget the commandments of the living God, and walk in vain deceits and acts of self-indulgence, and are destroyed by this angel, some of them unto death, and others unto corruption.

7 I say to him, Sir, I comprehend not what means "unto death," and what "unto corruption".

8 Listen, saith he;

9 the sheep which thou sawest gladsome and skipping about, these are they who have been turned asunder from God utterly, and have delivered themselves over to the lusts of this world.

10 In these, therefore, there is not repentance unto life.

11 For the Name of God is being blasphemed through them.

12 The life of such persons is death.

13 But the sheep, which thou sawest not skipping about, but feeding in one place,

14 these are they that have delivered themselves over to acts of self-indulgence and deceit, but have not uttered any blasphemy against the Lord.

15 These then have been corrupted from the truth.

16 In these there is hope of repentance, wherein they can live.

17 Corruption then hath hope of a possible renewal, but death hath eternal destruction.

18 Again we went forward a little way, and he showeth me a great shepherd like a wild man in appearance, with a white goatskin thrown about him;

19 and he had a kind of wallet on his shoulders, and a staff very hard and with knots in it, and a great whip.

20 And his look was very sour, so that I was afraid of him because of his look.

21 This shepherd then kept receiving from the young man, the shepherd,

22 those sheep that were frisky and well-fed,

23 but not skipping about, and putting them in a certain spot,

24 which was precipitous and covered with thorns and briars, so that the sheep could not disentangle themselves from the thorns and briars, but [became entangled among the thorns and briars.

25 And so they] pastured entangled in the thorns and briars, and were in great misery with being beaten by him;

26 and he kept driving them about to and fro, and giving them no rest, and altogether those sheep had not a happy time.

Shepherd 71

1 When then I saw them so lashed with the whip and vexed, I was sorry for their sakes, because they were so tortured and had no rest at all.

2 I say to the shepherd who was speaking with me;

3 Sir, who is this shepherd, who is [so] hard-hearted and severe, and has no compassion at all for these sheep?

4 This, saith he, is the angel of punishment, and he is one of the just angels, and presides over punishment.

5 So he receiveth those who wander away from God, and walk after the lusts and deceits of this life, and punisheth them, as they deserve, with fearful and various punishments.

6 I would fain learn, Sir, say I, of what sort are these various punishments.

7 Listen, saith he;

8 the various tortures and punishments are tortures belonging to the present life;

9 for some are punished with losses, and others with want,

10 and others with divers maladies, and others with [every kind] of unsettlement, and others with insults from unworthy persons and with suffering in many other respects.

11 For many, being unsettled in their plans, set their hands to many things, and nothing ever goes forward with them.

12 And then they say that they do not prosper in their doings, and it doth not enter into their hearts that they have done evil deeds, but they blame the Lord.

13 When then they are afflicted with every kind of affliction,

14 then they are delivered over to me for good instruction, and are strengthened in the faith of the Lord, and serve the Lord with a pure heart the remaining days of their life.

15 But, if they repent, the evil works which they have done rise up in their hearts,

16 and then they glorify God, saying that He is a just Judge, and that they suffered justly each according to his doings.

17 And they serve the Lord thenceforward with a pure heart, and are prosperous in all their doings, receiving from the Lord whatsoever things they may ask;

Shepherd 72

1 I say unto him;

2 Sir, declare unto me this further matter.

3 What self-indulgence and are deceived undergo torments during the same length of time as they live in self-indulgence and are deceived.

4 He saith to me, They undergo torments for the same length of time.

5 Then, Sir, say I, they undergo very slight torments;

6 for those who are living thus in self-indulgence and forget God ought to have been tormented sevenfold.

7 He saith to me, Thou art foolish, and comprehendest not the power of the torment.

8 True, say I, for if I had comprehended it, I should not have asked thee to declare it to me.

9 Listen, saith he, to the power of both, [of the self-indulgence and of the torment].

10 The time of the self-indulgence and deceit is one hour.

11 But an hour of the torment hath the power of thirty days.

12 If then one live in self-indulgence and be deceived for one day, and be tormented for one day, the day of the torment is equivalent to a whole year.

13 For as many days then as a man lives in self-indulgence, for so many years is he tormented.

14 Thou seest then, saith he, that the time of the self-indulgence and deceit is very short, but the time of the punishment and torment is long.

Shepherd 73

1 Inasmuch, Sir, say I, as I do not quite comprehend concerning the time of the deceit and self-indulgence and torment, show me more clearly.

2 He answered and said unto me;

3 Thy stupidity cleaveth to thee;

4 and thou wilt not cleanse thy heart and serve God.

5 Take heed, [saith he,] lest haply the time be fulfilled, and thou be found in thy foolishness.

6 Listen then, [saith he,] even as thou wishest, that thou mayest comprehend the matter.

7 He that liveth in self-indulgence and is deceived for one day, and doeth what he wisheth, is clothed in much folly and comprehendeth not the thing which he doeth;

8 for on the morrow he forgetteth what he did the day before.

9 For self-indulgence and deceit have no memories, by reason of the folly, wherewith each is clothed;

10 but when punishment and torment cling to a man for a single day, he is punished and tormented for a whole year long;

11 for punishment and torment have long memories.

12 So being tormented and punished for the whole year, the man remembers at length the self-indulgence and deceit, and perceiveth that it is on their account that he is suffering these ills.

13 Every man, therefore, that liveth in self-indulgence and is deceived, is tormented in this way because, though possessing life, they have delivered themselves over unto death.

14 What kinds of self-indulgence, Sir, say I, are harmful?

15 "Every action, saith he, is self-indulgence to a man, which he does with pleasure;

16 for the irascible man, when he gives the reins to his passion, is self-indulgent;

17 and the adulterer and the drunkard and the slanderer and the liar and the miser and the defrauder and he that doeth things akin to these, giveth the reins to his peculiar passion;

18 therefore he is self-indulgent in his action.

19 All these habits of self-indulgence are harmful to the servants of God;

20 on account of these deceits therefore they so suffer who are punished and tormented.

21 But there are habits of self-indulgence likewise which save men;
22 for many are self-indulgent in doing good, being carried away by the pleasure it gives to themselves.
23 This self-indulgence then is expedient for the servants of God, and bringeth life to a man of this disposition;
24 but the harmful self-indulgencies afore-mentioned bring to men torments and punishments;

Shepherd 74

1 [PARABLE THE SEVENTH].

2 After a few days I saw him on the same plain, where also I had seen the shepherds, and he saith to me, What seekest punisheth go out of My house;

3 for he afflicteth me much.

4 It is necessary for thee, saith he, to be afflicted;

5 for so, saith he, the glorious angel ordered as concerning thee, for he wisheth thee to be proved.

6 Why, what so evil thing have I done, Sir, say I, that I should be delivered over to this angel?

7 " Listen, saith he.

8 Thy sins are many, yet not so many that thou shouldest be delivered over to this angel;

9 but thy house has committed great iniquities and sins,

10 and the glorious angel was embittered at their deeds,

11 and for this cause he made thee be afflicted for a certain time, that they also might repent and cleanse themselves from every lust of this world.

12 When therefore they shall repent and be cleansed, then shall the angel of punishment depart.

13 I say to him;

14 Sir, if they perpetrated such deeds that the glorious angel is embittered, what have I done?

15 They cannot be afflicted otherwise, saith he, unless thou, the head of the [whole] house, be afflicted;

16 for if thou be afflicted, they also of necessity will be afflicted;

17 but if thou be prosperous, they can suffer no affliction.

18 But behold, Sir, say I, they have repented with their whole heart.

19 I am quite aware myself, saith he, that they have repented with their whole heart;

20 well, thinkest thou that the sins of those who repent are forgiven forthwith?

21 Certainly not;

22 but the person who repents must torture his own soul, and must be thoroughly humble in his every action, and be afflicted with all the divers kinds of affliction;

23 and if he endure the afflictions which come upon him, assuredly He Who created all things and endowed them with power will be moved with compassion and will bestow some remedy.

Shepherd 75

1 But why speak I many words to thee?

2 Thou must be afflicted as the angel of the Lord commanded, even he that delivered thee unto me;

3 and for this give thanks to the Lord, in that He deemed thee worthy that I should reveal unto thee beforehand the affliction, that foreknowing it thou mightest endure it with fortitude.

4 I say to him;

5 Sir, be thou with, me, and I shall be able to endure all affliction [easily].

6 I will be with thee, saith he;

7 and I will ask the angel that punisheth to afflict thee more lightly;

8 but thou shalt be afflicted for a short time, and thou shalt be restored again to thy house.

9 Only continue to be humble and to minister unto the Lord with a pure heart,

10 thou and thy children and thy house, and walk in my commandments which I command thee, and thus it will be possible for thy repentance to be strong and pure.

11 And if thou keep these commandments with thy household, all affliction shall hold aloof from thee;

Shepherd 76

1 [PARABLE THE EIGHTH].

2 He showed me a [great] willow, overshadow are called by the name of the Lord.

3 And by the willow there stood an angel of the Lord, glorious and very tall, having a great sickle,

4 and he was lopping branches from the willow, and giving them to the people that sheltered beneath the willow;

5 and he gave them little rods about a cubit long.

6 And after all had taken the rods, the angel laid aside the sickle, and the tree was sound, just as I had seen it.

7 Then I marvelled within myself, saying, How is the tree sound after so many branches have been lopped off?

8 The shepherd saith to me, Marvel not that the tree remained sound, after so many branches were lopped off;

9 but wait until thou seest all things, and it shall be shown to thee what it is.

10 The angel who gave the rods to the people demanded them back from them again;

11 and according as they had received them, so also they were summoned to him, and each of them returned the several rods.

12 But the angel of the Lord took them, and examined them.

13 From some he received the rods withered and eaten as it were by grubs:

14 the angel ordered those who gave up rods like these to stand apart.

15 And others gave them up withered, but not grub-eaten;

16 and these again he ordered to stand apart.

17 And others gave them up half-withered;

18 these also stood apart.

19 And others gave up their rods half-withered and with cracks;

20 these also stood apart.

21 And others gave up their rods green and with cracks;

22 these also stood apart.

23 And others gave up their rods one half withered and one half green;

24 these also stood apart.

25 And others brought their rods two parts of the rod green, and the third part withered;

26 these also stood apart.

27 And others gave them up two parts withered, and the third part green;

28 these also stood apart.

29 And others gave up their rods nearly all green, but a very small portion of their rods was withered, just the end;

30 but they had cracks in them;

31 these also stood apart.

32 And in those of others there was a very small portion green, but the rest of the rods was withered;

33 these also stood apart.

34 And others came bringing their rods green, as they received them from the angel;

35 and the most part of the multitude gave up their rods in this state;

36 and the angel rejoiced exceedingly at these;

37 these also stood apart.

38 And others gave up their rods green and with shoots;

39 these also stood apart;

40 and at these again the angel rejoiced exceedingly.

41 And others gave up their rods green and with shoots;

42 and their shoots had, as it were, a kind of fruit.

43 And those men were exceeding gladsome, whose rods were found in this state.

44 And over them the angel exulted, and the shepherd was very gladsome over them.

Shepherd 77

1 And the angel of the Lord commanded crowns to be brought.

2 And crowns were brought, made as it were of palm-branches;

3 and he crowned the men that had given up the rods which had the shoots and some fruit, and sent them away into the tower.

4 And the others also he sent into the tower, even those who had given up the rods green and with shoots, but the shoots were without fruit;

5 and he set a seal upon them.

6 And all they that went into the tower had the same raiment, white as snow.

7 And those that had given up their rods green as they received them, he sent away, giving them a [white] robe, and seals.

8 After the angel had finished these things, he saith to the shepherd;

9 I go away;

10 but these thou shall send away to (their places within) the walls, according as each deserveth to dwell;

11 but examine their rods carefully, and so send them away.

12 But be careful in examining them.

13 Take heed lest any escape thee, saith he.

14 Still if any escape thee, I will test then, at the altar.

15 When he had thus spoken to the shepherd, he departed.

16 And, after the angel had departed, the shepherd saith to me;

17 Let us take the rods of all and plant them, to see whether any of them shall be able to live.

18 I say unto him, Sir, these withered things, how can they live?

19 He answered and said unto me;

20 This tree is a willow, and this class of trees clingeth to life.

21 If then the rods shall be planted and get a little moisture, many of them will live.

22 And afterwards let us try to pour some water also over them.

23 If any of them shall be able to live, I will rejoice with it;

24 but if it live not, I at least shall not be found neglectful.

25 So the shepherd made me call them, just as each one of them was stationed.

26 And they came row after row, and they delivered up the rods to the shepherd.

27 And the shepherd took the rods, and planted them in rows, and after he had planted them, he poured much water over them, so that the rods could not be seen for the water.

28 And after he had watered the rods, he saith to me;

29 Let us go now, and after a few days let us return and inspect all the rods;

30 for He Who created this tree willeth that all those who have received rods from this tree should live.

Shepherd 78

1 I say to him;

2 Sir, inform me what this tree is.

3 For I am perplexed and nothing appears to have been cut from it;

4 I am therefore perplexed thereat.

5 Listen, saith he;

6 this great tree which overshadows plains and mountains and all the earth is the law of God which was given to the whole world;

7 and this law is the Son of God preached unto the ends of the earth.

8 But the people that are under the shadow are they that have heard the preaching, and believed on Him;

9 but the great and glorious angel is Michael, who hath the power over this people and is their captain.

10 For this is he that putteth the law into the hearts of the believers;

11 therefore he himself inspecteth them to whom he gave it, to see whether they have observed it.

12 But thou seest the rods of every one;

13 for the rods are the law.

14 Thou seest these many rods rendered useless, and thou shalt notice all those that have not observed the law, and shalt see the abode of each severally.

15 I say unto him;

16 Sir, wherefore did he send away some into the tower, and leave others for thee?

17 As many, saith he, as transgressed the law which they received from him, these he left under my authority for repentance;

18 but as many as already satisfied the law and have observed it, these he has under his own authority.

19 Who then, Sir, say I, are they that have been crowned and go into the tower?

20 [As many, saith he, as wrestled with the devil and overcame him in their wrestling, are crowned:]

21 these are they that suffered for the law.

22 But the others, who likewise gave up their rods green and with shoots,

23 though not with fruit, are they that were persecuted for the law, but did not suffer nor yet deny their law.

24 But they that gave them up green just as they received them, are sober and righteous men, who walked altogether in a pure heart and have kept the commandments of the Lord.

Shepherd 79

1 And after a few days we came to the place, and the shepherd sat down thyself with a garment of raw flax, and minister to me.

2 So I girded myself with a clean garment of raw flax made of coarse material.

3 And when he saw me girded and ready to minister to him, Call, saith he, the men whose rods have been planted, according to the rank as each presented their rods.

4 And I went away to the plain, and called them all;

5 and they stood all of them according to their ranks.

6 He saith to them;

7 Let each man pluck out his own rod, and bring it to me.

8 Those gave them up first, who had had the withered and chipped rods, and they were found accordingly withered and chipped.

9 He ordered them to stand apart.

10 Then those gave them up, who had the withered but not chipped;

11 and some of them gave up the rods green, and others withered and chipped as by grubs.

12 Those then that gave them up green he ordered to stand apart;

13 but those that gave them up withered and chipped he ordered to stand with the first.

14 Then those gave them up who had had the half-withered and with cracks;

15 and many of them gave them up green and without cracks;

16 and some gave them up green and with shoots, and fruits on the shoots, such as those had who went into the tower crowned;

17 and some gave them up withered and eaten, and some withered and uneaten, and some such as they were, half-withered and with cracks.

18 He ordered them to stand each one apart, some in their proper ranks, and others apart.

Shepherd 80

1 Then those gave them up who had their rods green, but with cracks.

2 These all gave them up green, and stood in their own company.

3 And the shepherd rejoiced over these, because they all were changed and had put away their cracks.

4 And those gave them up likewise who had the one half green and the other half withered.

5 The rods of some were found entirely green, of some half-withered, of some withered and eaten, and of some green and with shoots.

6 These were all sent away each to his company.

7 Then those gave them up who had two parts green and the third withered;

8 many of them gave them up green, and many half-withered, and others withered and eaten.

9 These all stood in their own company.

10 Then those gave them up who had two parts withered and the third part green.

11 Many of them gave them up half-withered, but some withered and eaten, others half-withered and with cracks, and a few green.

12 These all stood in their own company.

13 Then those gave them up who had had their rods green, but a very small part [withered] and with cracks.

14 Of these some gave them up green, and others green and with shoots.

15 These also went away to their own company.

16 Then those gave them up who had a very small part green and the other parts withered.

17 The rods of these were found for the most part green and with shoots and fruit on the shoots, and others altogether green.

18 At these rods the shepherd rejoiced very [greatly], because they were found so.

19 And these went away each to his own company.

Shepherd 81

1 After [the shepherd] had examined the rods of all, he saith to me, I told thee that this tree clingeth to life.

2 Seest thou, saith he, how many repented and were saved?

3 I see, Sir, say I.

4 It is, saith he, that thou mayest see the abundant compassion of the Lord, how great and glorious it is,

5 and He hath given (His) Spirit to those that are worthy of repentance.

6 Wherefore then, Sir, say I, did they not all repent?

7 To those, whose heart He saw about to become pure and to serve Him with all the heart, to them He gave repentance;

8 but those whose craftiness and wickedness He saw who intend to repent in hypocrisy, to them He gave not repentance, lest haply they should again profane His name.

9 I say unto him,

10 Sir, now then show me concerning those that have given up their rods, what manner of man each of them is, and their abode,

11 that when they hear this, they that believed and have received the seal and have broken it and did not keep it sound may fully understand what they are doing, and repent, receiving from thee a seal, and may glorify the Lord,

12 that He had compassion upon them and sent thee to renew their spirits.

13 Listen, saith he;

14 those whose rods were found withered and grub-eaten,

15 these are the renegades and traitors to the Church, that blasphemed the Lord in their sins, and still further were ashamed of the Name of the Lord, which was invoked upon them.

16 These then perished altogether unto God.

17 But thou seest how not one of them repented, although they heard the words which thou spakest to them, which I commanded thee.

18 From men of this kind life departed.

19 But those that gave up the green and undecayed (rods), these also are near them;

20 for they were hypocrites,

21 and brought in strange doctrines, and perverted the servants of God, especially them that had sinned,

22 not permitting them to repent, but persuading them with their foolish doctrines.

23 These then have hope of repenting.

24 But thou seest that many of them have indeed repented from the time when thou spakest to them my commandments;

25 yea, and (others) still will repent.

26 And as many as shall not repent, have lost their life;

27 but as many of them as repented, became good;

28 and their dwelling was placed within the first walls, and some of them even ascended into the tower.

29 Thou seest then, [saith he,] that repentance from sins bringeth life, but not to repent bringeth death.

Shepherd 82

1 But as many as gave up (the rods) half-withered, and with cracks in them, hear also concerning these.

2 Those whose rods were half-withered throughout are the double-minded;

3 for they neither live nor are dead.

4 But those that have them half-withered and cracks in them,, these are both double-minded and slanderers, and are never at peace among themselves but always causing dissensions.

5 Yet even to these, [saith he,] repentance is given.

6 Thou seest, [saith he,] that some of them have repented;

7 and there is still, saith he, hope of repentance among them.

8 And as many of them, saith he, as have repented, have their abode within the tower but as many of them as have repented tardily shall abide within the walls;

9 and as many as repent not, but continue in their doings, shall die the death.

10 But they that have given up their rods green and with cracks, these were found faithful and good at all times, [but] they have a certain emulation one with another about first places and about glory of some kind or other;

11 but all these are foolish in having (emulation) one with another about first places.

12 Yet these also, when they heard my commandments, being good, purified themselves and repented quickly.

13 They have their habitation, therefore, within the tower.

14 But if any one shall again turn to dissension, he shall be cast out from the tower and shall lose his life.

15 Life is for all those that keep the commandments of the Lord.

16 But in the commandments there is nothing about first places, or about glory of any kind, but about long-suffering and humility in man.

17 In such men, therefore, is the life of the Lord, but in factious and lawless men is death.

Shepherd 83

1 But they that gave up their rods half green and half withered, these are they that are mixed up in business and cleave not to the saints.

2 Therefore the one half of them liveth, but the other half is dead.

3 Many then when they heard my commandments repented.

- 4 As many then as repented, have their abode within the tower.
- 5 But some of them altogether stood aloof.
- 6 These then have no repentance;
- 7 for by reason of their business affairs they blasphemed the Lord and denied Him.
- 8 So they lost their life for the wickedness that they committed.
- 9 But many of them were doubtful-minded.
- 10 These still have place for repentance, if they repent quickly, and their dwelling shall be within the tower;
- 11 and if they repent tardily, they shall dwell within the walls;
- 12 but if they repent not, they too have lost their life.
- 13 But they that have given up two parts green and the third part withered, these are they that have denied with manifold denials.
- 14 Many of them therefore repented, and departed to dwell inside the tower;
- 15 but many utterly rebelled from God;
- 16 these lost their life finally.
- 17 And some of them were double-minded and caused dissensions.
- 18 For these then there is repentance, if they repent speedily and continue not in their pleasures;
- 19 but if they continue in their doings, they likewise procure for themselves death.

Shepherd 84

- 1 But they that have given up their rods two thirds withered and one third green, these are men who have been believers, but grew rich and became renowned among the Gentiles.
- 2 They clothed themselves with great pride and became high-minded,
- 3 and abandoned the truth and did not cleave to the righteous, but lived together after the manner of the Gentiles, and the path appeared the more pleasant unto them;
- 4 yet they departed not from God, but continued in the faith, though they wrought not the works of the faith.
- 5 Many of them therefore repented, and they had their habitation within the tower.
- 6 But others at the last living with the Gentiles, and being corrupted the vain opinions of the Gentiles, departed from God, and worked the works of the Gentiles.
- 7 These therefore were numbered with the Gentiles.
- 8 But others of them were doubtful-minded, not hoping to be saved by reason of the deeds that they had done;

9 and others were double-minded and made divisions among themselves.

10 For these then that were double-minded by reason of their doings there is still repentance;

11 but their repentance ought to be speedy, that their dwelling may be within the tower;

12 but for those who repent not, but continue in their pleasures, death is nigh.

Shepherd 85

1 But they that gave up their rods green, yet with the extreme ends withered and with cracks;

2 these were found at all times good and faithful and glorious in the sight of God,

3 but they sinned to a very slight degree by reason of little desires and because they had somewhat against one another.

4 But, when they heard my words, the greater part quickly repented, and their dwelling was assigned within the tower.

5 But some of them were double-minded, and some being double-minded made a greater dissension.

6 In these then there is still a hope of repentance, because they were found always good;

7 and hardly shall one of them die.

8 But they that gave up their rods withered, yet with a very small part green, these are they that believed, but practised the works of lawlessness.

9 Still they never separated from God, but bore the Name gladly, and gladly received into their houses the servants of God.

10 So hearing of this repentance they repented without wavering, and they practise all excellence and righteousness.

11 And some of them even suffer persecution willingly, knowing the deeds that they did.

12 All these then shall have their dwelling within the tower.

Shepherd 86

1 And after he had completed the interpretations of all the rods, he saith unto me;

2 Go, and tell all men to repent, and they shall live unto God;

3 for the Lord in His compassion sent me to give repentance to all, though some of them do not deserve it for their deeds;

4 but being long-suffering the Lord willeth them that were called through His Son to be saved.

5 I say to him;

- 6 Sir, I hope that all when they hear these words will repent;
7 for I am persuaded that each one, when he fully knows his own deeds and fears God, will repent.
8 He answered and said unto me;
9 As many, [saith he,] as [shall repent] from their whole heart [and] shall cleanse themselves from all the evil deeds afore-mentioned,
10 and shall add nothing further to their sins,
11 shall receive healing from the Lord for their former sins, unless they be double-minded concerning these commandments, and they shall live unto God.
12 [But as many, saith he, as shall add to their sins and walk in the lusts of this world, shall condemn themselves to death.]
13 But do thou walk in my commandments, and live [unto God;
14 yea, and as many as shall walk in them and shall do rightly, shall live unto God.]
15 Having shown me all these things [and told me them] he saith to me;

Shepherd 87

- 1 [PARABLE THE NINTH].
2 After I had written down the commandments and parables of the shepherd, the angel of repentance, he came to me and saith with thee in the form of the Church, showed unto thee.
3 For that Spirit is the Son of God.
4 For when thou wast weaker in the flesh, it was not declared unto thee through an angel;
5 but when thou wast enabled through the Spirit, and didst grow mighty in thy strength so that thou couldest even see an angel,
6 then at length was manifested unto thee, through the Church, the building of the tower.
7 In fair and seemly manner hast thou seen all things, (instructed) as it were by a virgin;
8 but now thou seest (being instructed by an angel, though by the same Spirit;
9 yet must thou learn everything more accurately from me.
10 For to this end also was I appointed by the glorious angel to dwell in thy house, that thou mightest see all things mightily, in nothing terrified, even as before.
11 And he took me away into Arcadia, to a certain rounded mountain, and set me on the top of the mountain, and showed me a great plain, and round the plain twelve mountains, the mountains having each a different appearance.
12 The first was black as soot;

13 the second was bare, without vegetation;

14 the third was thorny and full of briars;

15 the fourth had the vegetation half-withered, the upper part of the grass green, but the part by the roots withered, and some of the grass became withered, whenever the sun had scorched it;

16 the fifth mountain had green grass and was rugged;

17 the sixth mountain was full with clefts throughout, some small and some great, and the clefts had vegetation,

18 but the grass was not very luxuriant, but rather as if it had been withered;

19 the seventh mountain had smiling vegetation, and the whole mountain was in a thriving condition, and cattle and birds of every kind did feed upon that mountain;

20 and the more the cattle and the birds did feed, so much the more did the herbage of that mountain flourish.

21 The eighth mountain was full of springs, and every kind of creature of the Lord did drink of the springs on that mountain.

22 The ninth mountain had no water at all, and was entirely desert;

23 and it had in it wild beasts and deadly reptile, which destroy mankind.

24 The tenth mountain had very large trees and was umbrageous throughout, and beneath the shade lay sheep resting and feeding.

25 The eleventh mountain was thickly wooded all over, and the trees thereon were very productive, decked with divers kinds of fruits, so that one seeing them would desire to eat of their fruits.

26 The twelfth mountain was altogether white and its aspect was cheerful;

27 and the mountain was most beautiful in itself 88.

28 And in the middle of the plain he showed me a great white rock, rising up from the plain.

29 The rock was loftier than the mountains, being four-square, so that it could contain the whole world.

30 Now this rock was ancient, and had a gate hewn out of it;

31 but the gate seemed to me to have been hewed out quite recently.

32 And the gate glistened beyond the brightness of the sun, so that I marvelled at the brightness of the gate.

33 And around the gate stood twelve virgins.

34 The four then that stood at the corners seemed to me to be more glorious (than the rest);

35 but the others likewise were glorious;

36 and they stood at the four quarters of the gate, and virgins stood in pairs between them.

37 And they were clothed in linen tunics and girt about in seemly fashion, having their right shoulders free, as if they intended to carry some burden.

38 Thus were they prepared, for they were very cheerful and eager.

39 After I had seen these things, I marvelled in myself at the greatness and the glory of what I was seeing.

40 And again I was perplexed concerning the virgins, that delicate as they were they stood up like men, as if they intended to carry the whole heaven.

41 And the shepherd saith unto me;

42 Why questionest thou within thyself and art perplexed, and bringest sadness on thyself?

43 For whatsoever things thou canst not comprehend, attempt them not, if thou art prudent;

44 but entreat the Lord, that thou mayest receive understanding to comprehend them.

45 What is behind thee thou canst not see, but what is before thee thou beholdest.

46 The things therefore which thou canst not see, let alone, and trouble not thyself (about them);

47 but the things which thou seest, these master, and be not over curious about the rest;

48 but I will explain unto thee all things whatsoever I shall show thee.

Shepherd 88

[no verses]

Shepherd 89

1 I saw six men come, tall and glorious and alike in appearance;

2 and they summoned a multitude of men.

3 And the others also which came were tall men above the gate.

4 And there arose a great noise from those men who had come to build the tower, as they ran hither and thither round the gate.

5 For the virgins standing round the gate told the men to hasten to build the tower.

6 Now the virgins had spread out their hands, as if they would take something from the men.

7 And the six men ordered stones to come up from a certain deep place, and to go to the building of the tower.

8 And there went up ten stones square and polished, [not] hewn from a quarry.

9 And the six men called to the virgins, and ordered them to carry all the stones which should go unto the building of the tower, and to pass through the gate and to hand them to the men that were about to build the tower.

10 And the virgins laid the first ten stones that rose out of the deep on each other, and they carried them together, stone by stone.

Shepherd 90

1 And just as they stood together around the gate, in that order they carried them that seemed to be strong enough and had stooped under the corners of the stone, while the others stooped at the sides of the stone.

2 And so they carried all the stones.

3 And they carried them right through the gate, as they were ordered, and handed them to the men for the tower;

4 and these took the stones and builded.

5 Now the building of the tower was upon the great rock and above the gate.

6 Those ten stones then were joined together, and they covered the whole rock.

7 And these formed a foundation for the building of the tower.

8 And [the rock and] the gate supported the whole tower.

9 And, after the ten stones, other twenty-five stones came up from the deep, and these were fitted into the building of the tower, being carried by the virgins, like the former.

10 And after these thirty-five stones came up.

11 And these likewise were fitted into the tower.

12 And after these came up other forty stones, and these all were put into the building of the tower.

13 So four rows were made in the foundations of the tower.

14 And (the stones) ceased coming up from the deep, and the builders likewise ceased for a little.

15 And again the six men ordered the multitude of the people to bring in stones from the mountains for the building of the tower.

16 They were brought in accordingly from all the mountains, of various colours, shaped by the men, and were handed to the virgins;

17 and the virgins carried them right through the gate, and handed them in for the building of the tower.

18 And when the various stones were placed in the building, they became all alike and white, and they lost their various colours.

19 But some stones were handed in by the men for the building, and these did not become bright;

20 but just as they were placed, such likewise were they found;

21 for they were not handed in by the virgins, nor had they been carried in through the gate.

22 These stones then were unsightly in the building of the tower.

23 Then the six men, seeing the stones that were unsightly in the building, ordered them to be removed and carried [below] into their own place whence they were brought.

24 And they say to the men who were bringing the stones in;

25 Abstain for your parts altogether from handing in stones for the building;

26 but place them by the tower, that the virgins may carry them through the gate, and hand them in for the building.

27 For if, [say they,] they be not carried in through the gate by the hands of these virgins, they cannot change their colours.

28 Labor not therefore, [say they,] in vain.

Shepherd 91

1 And the building was finished on that day, yet was not the tower finally completed, for it was to be carried up [still] higher;

2 and there was a cessation in the building.

3 And the six men ordered the builders to retire for a short time [all of them], and to rest;

4 but the virgins they ordered not to retire from the tower.

5 And me thought the virgins were left to guard the tower.

6 And after all had retired [and rested], I say to the shepherd;

7 How is it, Sir, say I, that the building of the tower was not completed?

8 The tower, he saith, cannot yet he fully completed, until its master come and test this building, that if any stones be found crumbling, he may change them;

9 for the tower is being built according to His will.

10 I would fain know, Sir, say I,

11 what is this building of this tower, and concerning the rock and gate, and the mountains, and the virgins, and the stones that came up from the deep, and were not shaped, hut went just as they were into the building;

12 and wherefore ten stones were first placed in the foundations,

13 then twenty-five, then thirty-five, then forty,

14 and concerning the stones that had gone to the building and were removed again and put away in their own place-concerning all these things set thy soul at rest, Sir, and explain them to me.

15 If, saith he, thou be not found possessed of an idle curiosity, thou shalt know all things.

16 For after a few days we shall come here, and thou shalt see the sequel that overtaketh this tower and shalt understand all the parables accurately.

17 And after a few days we came to the place where we had sat, and he saith to me, Let us go to the tower;

18 for the owner of the tower cometh to inspect it.

19 And we came to the tower, and there was no one at all by it, save the virgins alone.

20 And the shepherd asked the virgins whether the master of the tower had arrived.

21 And they said that he would be there directly to inspect the building.

Shepherd 92

1 And, behold, after a little while I see an array of many men coming, and in the midst a man of such lofty stature that he overtopped the tower.

2 And the six men who superintended the building walked with him on the right hand and on the left, and all they that worked at the building were with him, and many other glorious attendants around him.

3 And the virgins that watched the tower ran up and kissed him, and they began to walk by his side round the tower.

4 And that man inspected the building so carefully, that he felt each single stone;

5 and he held a rod in his hand and struck each single stone that was built in.

6 And when he smote, some of the stones became black as soot, others mildewed,

7 others cracked, others broke off short, others became neither white nor black, others rough and not fitting in with the other stones, and others with many spots;

8 these were the varied aspects of the stones which were found unsound for the building.

9 So he ordered all these to be removed from the tower, and to be placed by the side of the tower, and other stones to be brought and put into their place.

10 And the builders asked him from what mountain he desired stones to be brought and put into their place.

11 And he would not have them brought from the mountains, but ordered them to be brought from a certain plain that was nigh at hand.

12 And the plain was dug, and stones were found there bright and square, but some of them too were round.

13 And all the stones which there were anywhere in that plain were brought every one of them, and were carried through the gate by the virgins.

14 And the square stones were hewed, and set in the place of those which had been removed;

15 but the round ones were not placed in the building, because they were too hard to be shaped, and to work on them was slow.

16 So they were placed by the side of the tower, as though they were intended to be shaped and placed in the building;

17 for they were very bright.

Shepherd 93

1 So then, having accomplished these things,

2 the glorious man who was lord of the whole tower called the shepherd to him,

3 and delivered unto him all the stones which lay by the side of the tower, which were cast out from the building, and saith unto him;

4 Clean these stones carefully, and set them in the building of the tower, these, I mean, which can fit with the rest;

5 but those which will not fit, throw far away from the tower.

6 Having given these orders to the shepherd, he departed from the tower with all those with whom he had come.

7 And the virgins stood round the tower watching it.

8 I say to the shepherd, How can these stones go again to the building of the tower, seeing that they have been disapproved?

9 He saith unto me in answer;

10 Seest thou, saith he, these stones?

11 I see them, Sir, say I.

12 I myself, saith he, will shape the greater part of these stones and put them into the building, and they shall fit in with the remaining stones.

13 How, Sir, say I, can they, when they are chiseled, fill the same space?

14 He saith unto me in answer, As many as shall be found small, shall be put into the middle of the building;

15 but as many as are larger, shall be placed nearer the outside, and they will bind them together.

16 With these words he saith to me, Let us go away, and after two days let us come and clean these stones, and put them into the building;

17 for all things round the tower must be made clean,

18 lest haply the master come suddenly and find the circuit of the tower dirty,

19 and he be wroth, and so these stones shall not go to the building of the tower, and I shall appear to be careless in my masters sight.

Shepherd 94

1 And after two days we came to the tower, and he saith unto me;

2 Let us inspect all the stones, and see those which can go to the building.

3 I say to him, Sir, let us inspect them.

4 And so commencing first we began to inspect the black stones;

5 and just as they were when set aside from the building, such also they were found.

6 And the shepherd ordered them to be removed from the tower and to be put on one side.

7 Then he inspected those that were mildewed, and he took and shaped many of them, and ordered the virgins to take them up and put them into the building.

8 And the virgins took them up and placed them in the building of the tower in a middle position.

9 But the rest he ordered to be placed with the black ones;

10 for these also were found black.

11 Then he began to inspect those that had the cracks;

12 and of these he shaped many, and he ordered them to be carried away by the hands of the virgins for the building.

13 And they were placed towards the outside, because they were found to be sounder.

14 But the rest could not be shaped owing to the number of the cracks.

15 For this reason therefore they were cast aside front the building of the tower.

16 Then he proceeded to inspect the stunted (stones), and many among them were found black, and some had contracted great cracks;

17 and he ordered these also to be placed with those that had been cast aside.

18 But those of them which remained he cleaned and shaped, and ordered to he placed in the building.

19 So the virgins took them up, and fitted them into the middle of the building of the tower;

20 for they were somewhat weak.

21 Then he began to inspect those that were half white and half black, and many of them were (now) found black;

22 and he ordered these also to be taken up with those that had been cast aside.

- 23 *But all the rest were [found white, and were] taken up by the virgins;
- 24 for being white they were fitted by [the virgins] them[selves] into the building.
- 25 *But they were placed towards the outside, because they were found sound, so that they could hold together those that were placed in the middle;
- 26 for not a single one of them was too short.
- 27 Then he began to inspect the hard and rough;
- 28 and a few of them were cast away, because they could not be shaped;
- 29 for they were found very hard.
- 30 But the rest of them were shaped [and taken up by the virgins] and fitted into the middle of the building of the tower;
- 31 for they were somewhat weak.
- 32 Then he proceeded to inspect those that had the spots, and of these some few had turned black and were cast away among the rest;
- 33 but the remainder were found bright and sound, and these were fitted by the virgins into the building;
- 34 but they were placed towards the outside, owing to their strength.

Shepherd 95

- 1 Then he came to inspect the white and round stones, and he saith unto me;
- 2 What shall we do with these stones?
- 3 How do I know, Sir?
- 4 say I.
- 5 [And he saith to me,] Perceivest thou nothing concerning them?
- 6 I, Sir, say I, do not possess this art, neither am I a mason, nor can I understand.
- 7 Seest thou not, saith he, that they are very round;
- 8 and if I wish to make them square, very much must needs be chiseled off from them?
- 9 Yet some of them must of necessity be placed into the building.
- 10 If then, Sir, say I, it must needs be so, why distress thyself, and why not choose out for the building those thou willest, and fit them into it?
- 11 He chose out from them the large and the bright ones, and shaped them;
- 12 and the virgins took them up, and fitted them into the outer parts of the building.

13 But the rest, which remained over, were taken up, and put aside into the plain whence they were brought;

14 they were not however cast away, Because, saith he, there remaineth still a little of the tower to be builded.

15 And the master of the tower is exceedingly anxious that these stones be fitted into the building, for they are very bright.

16 So twelve women were called, most beautiful in form, clad in black, [girded about and having the shoulders bare,] with their hair hanging loose.

17 And these women, me thought, had a savage look.

18 And the shepherd ordered them to take up the stones which had been cast away from the building, and to carry them off to the same mountains from which also they had been brought;

19 and they took them up joyfully, and carried away all the stones and put them in the place whence they had been taken.

20 And after all the stones had been taken up, and not a single stone still lay round the tower, the shepherd saith unto me;

21 Let us go round the tower, and see that there is no defect in it.

22 And I proceeded to go round it with him.

23 And when the shepherd saw that the tower was very comely in the building, he was exceedingly glad;

24 for the tower was so well builded, that when I saw it I coveted the building of it ;

25 for it was builded, as it were, of one stone, having one fitting in it.

26 And the stone-work appeared as if hewn out of the rock;

27 for it seemed to be all a single stone.

Shepherd 96

1 And I, as I walked with him, was glad to see so brave a sight.

2 And the shepherd saith to me Go and bring plaster and fine clay, that I may fill up the shapes of the stones that have been taken up and put into the building;

3 for all the circuit of the tower must be made smooth.

4 And I did as he bade, and brought them to him.

5 Assist me, saith he, and the work will speedily be accomplished.

6 So he filled in the shapes of the stones which had gone to the building, and ordered the circuit of the tower to be swept and made clean.

7 And the virgins took brooms and swept, and they removed all the rubbish from the tower, and sprinkled water, and the site of the tower was made cheerful and very seemly.

8 The shepherd saith unto me, All, saith he, hath now been cleaned.

9 If the lord come to inspect the tower, he hath nothing for which to blame us.

10 Saying this, he desired to go away.

11 But I caught hold of his wallet, and began to adjure him by the Lord that he would explain to me [all] what he had showed me.

12 He saith to me;

13 I am busy for a little while, and then I will explain everything to thee.

14 Await me here till I come.

15 I say to him;

16 Sir, when I am here alone what shall I do?

17 Thou art not alone, saith he;

18 for these virgins are here with thee. Commend me then to them, say I.

19 The shepherd calleth them to him and saith to them;

20 I commend this man to you till I come, and he departed.

21 So I was alone with the virgins;

22 and they were most cheerful, and kindly disposed to me, especially the four of them that were the more glorious in appearance.

Shepherd 97

1 The virgins say to me;

2 Today the shepherd cometh not here.

3 What then shall I do? say I.

4 Stay for him, say they, till eventide;

5 and if he come, he will speak with thee;

6 but if he come not, thou shalt stay here with us till he cometh.

7 I say to them;

8 I will await him till evening, and if he come not, I will depart home and return early in the morning.

9 But they answered and said unto me;

10 To us thou wast entrusted;

11 thou canst not depart from us.

12 Where then, say I, shall I remain?

13 "Thou shalt pass the night with us, say they, as a brother, not as a husband;

14 for thou art our brother, and hence-forward we will dwell with thee;

15 for we love thee dearly.

16 But I was ashamed to abide with them.

17 And she that seemed to be the chief of them began to kiss and to embrace me;

18 and the others seeing her embrace me, they too began to kiss me, and to lead me round the tower, and to sport with me.

19 And I had become as it were a younger man, and I commenced myself likewise to sport with them.

20 For some of them began to dance, [others to skip,] others to sing.

21 But I kept silence and walked with them round the tower, and was glad with them.

22 But when evening came I wished to go away home;

23 but they would not let me go, but detained me.

24 And I stayed the nigh with them, and I slept by the side of the tower.

25 For the virgins spread their linen tunics on the ground, and made me lie down in the midst of them, and they did nothing else but pray;

26 and I prayed with them without ceasing, and not less than they.

27 And the virgins rejoiced that I so prayed.

28 And I stayed there with the virgins until the morning till the second hour.

29 Then came the shepherd, and saith to the virgins;

30 Have ye done him any injury?

31 Ask him, say they.

32 I say to him, Sir, I was rejoiced to stay with them.

33 On what didst thou sup? saith he.

34 I supped, Sir, say I, on the words of the Lord the whole nigh through.

35 Did they treat thee well? saith he.

36 Yes, Sir, say I.

37 Now, saith he, what wouldest thou hear first?

38 In the order as thou showedst to me, Sir, from the beginning, say I;

39 I request thee, Sir, to explain to me exactly in the order that I shall enquire of thee.

Shepherd 98

1 First of all, Sir, say I, explain this to me.

2 The rock and the How, Sir, say I, is the rock ancient, but the gate recent?

3 Listen, saith he, and understand, foolish man.

4 The Son of God is older than all His creation, so that He became the Fathers adviser in His creation.

5 Therefore also He is ancient.

- 6 But the gate, why is it recent, Sir? say I.
7 Because, saith he, He was made manifest in the last days of the consummation;
8 therefore the gate was made recent, that they which are to be saved may enter through it into the kingdom of God.
9 Didst thou see, saith he,
10 that the stones which came through the gate have gone to the building of the tower, but those which came not through it were cast away again to their own place?
11 I saw, Sir, say I.
12 “Thus, saith he, no one shall enter into the kingdom of God, except he receive the name of His Son.
13 For if thou wishest to enter into any city, and that city is walled all round and has one gate only, canst thou enter into that city except through the gate which it hath?
14 Why, how, Sir, say I, is it possible otherwise?
15 If then thou canst not enter into the city except through the gate itself, even so, saith he, a man cannot enter into the kingdom of God except by the name of His Son that is beloved by Him.
16 Didst thou see, saith he, the multitude that is building the tower?
17 I saw it, Sir, say I.
18 They, saith he, are all glorious angels.
19 With these then the Lord is walled around.
20 But the gate is the Son of God;
21 there is this one entrance only to the Lord.
22 No one then shall enter in unto Him otherwise than through His Son.
23 Didst thou see, saith he, the six men, and the glorious and mighty man in the midst of them, him that walked about the tower and rejected the stones from the building?
24 I saw him, Sir, say I.
25 The glorious man, saith he, is the Son of God, and those six are the glorious angels who guard Him on the right hand and on the left.
26 Of these glorious angels not one, saith he, shall enter in unto God without Him;

Shepherd 99

- 1 But the tower, say I, what is it?
2 “The tower, saith he, why, this is the Church.
3 And these virgins, who are they?
4 They, saith he, are unless these shall clothe him with their garment;

5 for if thou receive only the name, but receive not the garment from them, thou profitest nothing.

6 For these virgins are powers of the Son of God.

7 If [therefore] thou bear the Name, and bear not His power, thou shalt bear His Name to none effect.

8 And the stones, saith he, which thou didst see cast away, these bare the Name, but clothed not themselves with the raiment of the virgins.

9 Of what sort, Sir, say I, is their raiment?

10 "The names themselves, saith he, are their raiment.

11 Whosoever beareth the Name of the Son of God, ought to bear the names of these also;

12 for even the Son Himself beareth the names of these virgins.

13 As many stones, saith he, as thou sawest enter into the building of the tower, being given in by their hands and waiting for the building, they have been clothed in the power of these virgins.

14 For this cause thou seest the tower made a single stone with the rock.

15 So also they that have believed in the Lord through His Son and clothe themselves in these spirits, shall become one spirit and one body, and their garments all of one colour.

16 But such persons as bear the names of the virgins have their dwelling in the tower.

17 The stones then, Sir, say I, which are cast aside, wherefore were they cast aside?

18 For they passed through the gate and were placed in the building of the tower by the hands of the virgins.

19 Since all these things interest thee, saith he, and thou enquirest diligently, listen as touching the stones that have been cast aside.

20 These all, [saith he,] received the name of the Son of God, and received likewise the power of these virgins.

21 When then they received these spirits, they were strengthened, and were with the servants of God, and they had one spirit and one body [and one garment];

22 for they had the same mind, and they wrought righteousness.

23 After a certain time then they were persuaded by the women whom thou sawest clad in black raiment, and having their shoulders bare and their hair loose, and beautiful in form.

24 When they saw them they desired them, and they clothed themselves with their power, but they stripped off from themselves the power of the virgins.

25 They then were cast away from the house of God, and delivered to these (women).

Shepherd 100

1 What then, Sir, say I, if these men, being such as they are, should repent and put away their desire for these women, and return unto the virgins, and walk in their power and in their works?

2 Shall they not enter into the house of God?

3 They shall enter, saith he, if they shall put away the works of these women, and take again the power of the virgins, and walk in their works.

4 For this is the reason why there was also a cessation in the building, that, if these repent, they may go into the building of the tower;

5 but if they repent not, then others will go, and these shall be cast away finally.

6 For all these things I gave thanks unto the Lord, because He had compassion on all that called upon His name,

7 and sent forth the angel of repentance to us that had sinned against Him, and refreshed our spirit, and, when we were already ruined and had no hope of life, restored our life.

8 Now, Sir, say I, show me why the tower is not built upon the ground, but upon the rock and upon the gate.

9 Because thou art senseless, saith he, and without understanding [thou askest the question].

10 I am obliged, Sir, say I, to ask all questions of thee, because I am absolutely unable to comprehend anything at all;

11 for all are great and glorious and difficult for men to understand.

12 Listen, saith he.

13 The name of the Son of God is great and incomprehensible, and sustaineth the whole world.

14 If then all creation is sustained by the Son [of God], what thinkest thou of those that are called by Him, and bear the name of the Son of God, and walk according to His commandments?

15 Seest thou then what manner of men He sustaineth?

16 Even those that bear His name with their whole heart.

Shepherd 101

1 Declare to me, Sir, say I, the names of the virgins, and of the of the more powerful virgins, those that are stationed at the corners.

2 The first is Faith, and the second, Continance, and the third, Power, and the fourth, Longsuffering.

3 But the others stationed between them have these names Simplicity, Guilelessness, Purity, Cheerfulness, Truth, Understanding, Concord, Love.

4 He that beareth these names and the name of the Son of God shall be able to enter into the kingdom of God.

5 Hear, saith he, likewise the names of the women that wear the black garments.

6 Of these also four are more powerful than the rest;

7 the first is Unbelief;

8 the second, Intemperance;

9 the third, Disobedience;

10 the fourth, Deceit;

11 and their followers are called, Sadness, Wickedness, Wantonness, Irascibility, Falsehood, Folly, Slander, Hatred.

12 The servant of God that beareth these names shall see the kingdom of God, but shall not enter into it.

13 But the stones, Sir, say I, that came from the deep, and were fitted into the building, who are they?

14 "The first, saith he, even the ten, that were placed in the foundations, are the first generation;

15 the twenty-five are the second generation of righteous men;

16 the thirty-five are Gods prophets and His ministers;

17 the forty are apostles and teachers of the preaching of the Son of God.

18 Wherefore then, Sir, say I, did the virgins give in these stones also for the building of the tower and carry them through the gate?

19 " Because these first, saith he,

20 bore these spirits, and they never separated the one from the other, neither the spirits from the men nor the men from the spirits, but the spirits abode with them till they fell asleep;

Shepherd 102

1 Show me still further, Sir, say I.

2 What desirest thou to know the deep, and wherefore were they placed into the building, though they bore these spirits?

3 "It was necessary for them, saith he, to rise up through water, that they might be made alive;

4 for otherwise they could not enter into the kingdom of God, except they had put aside the deadness of their [former] life.

5 So these likewise that had fallen asleep received the seal of the Son of God and entered into the kingdom of God.

6 For before a man, saith he, has borne the name of [the Son of] God, he is dead;

7 but when he has received the seal, he layeth aside his deadness, and resumeth life.

8 The seal then is the water so they go down into the water dead, and they come up alive.

9 Thus to them also this seal was preached, and they availed themselves of it that they might enter into the kingdom of God.

10 Wherefore, Sir, say I, did the forty stones also come up with them from the deep, though they had already received the seal?

11 Because, saith he,

12 these, the apostles and the teachers who preached the name of the Son of God, after they had fallen asleep in the power and faith of the Son of God,

13 preached also to them that had fallen asleep before them, and themselves gave unto them the seal of the preaching.

14 Therefore they went down with them into the water, and came up again.

15 But these went down alive [and again came up alive];

16 whereas the others that had fallen asleep before them went down dead and came up alive.

17 So by their means they were quickened into life, and came to the full knowledge of the name of the Son of God.

18 For this cause also they came up with them, and were fitted with them into the building of the tower and were builded with them, without being shaped;

19 for they fell asleep in righteousness and in great purity.

20 Only they had not this seal.

21 Thou hast then the interpretation of these things also.

22 I have, Sir, say I.

Shepherd 103

1 Now then, Sir, explain to me concerning the mountains.

2 Wherefore are their forms diverse the one from the other, and various?

3 Listen, saith he.

4 These twelve mountains are [twelve] tribes that inhabit the whole world.

5 To these (tribes) then the Son of God was preached by the Apostles.

6 But explain to me, Sir, why they are various-these mountains-and each has a different appearance.

7 Listen, saith he.

8 These twelve tribes which inhabit the whole world are twelve nations;

9 and they are various in understanding and in mind.

10 As various, then, as thou sawest these mountains to be, such also are the varieties in the mind of these nations, and such their understanding.

11 And I will show unto thee the conduct of each.

12 First, Sir, say I,

13 show me this, why the mountains being so various, yet,

14 when their stones were set into the building, became bright and of one colour, just like the stones that had come up from the deep.

15 Because, saith he, all the nations that dwell under heaven, when they heard and believed, were called by the one name of [the Son of] God.

16 So having received the seal, they had one understanding and one mind, and one faith became theirs and [one] love, and they bore the spirits of the virgins along with the Name;

17 therefore the building of the tower became of one colour, even bright as the sun.

18 But after they entered in together, and became one body, some of them defiled themselves, and were cast out from the society of the righteous, and became again such as they were before, or rather even worse.

Shepherd 104

1 How, Sir, say I, did they become worse, after they had fully known God?

2 He that knoweth not God, saith he, and committeth wickedness, hath a certain punishment for his wickedness;

3 but he that knoweth God fully ought not any longer to commit wickedness, but to do good.

4 If then he that ought to do good committeth wickedness, does he not seem to do greater wickedness than the man that knoweth not God?

5 Therefore they that have not known God, and commit wickedness, are condemned to death;

6 but they that have known God and seen His mighty works, and yet commit wickedness, shall receive a double punishment, and shall die eternally.

7 In this way therefore shall the Church of God be purified.

8 And as thou sawest the stones removed from the tower and delivered over to the evil spirits, they too shall be cast out;

9 and there shall be one body of them that are purified, just as the tower, after it had been purified, became made as it were of one stone.

10 Thus shall it be with the Church of God also, after she hath been purified, and the wicked and hypocrites and blasphemers and

double-minded and they that commit various kinds of wickedness have been cast out.

11 When these have been cast out, the Church of God shall be one body, one understanding, one mind, one faith, one love.

12 And then the Son of God shall rejoice and be glad in them, for that He hath received back His people pure.

13 Great and glorious, Sir, say I, are all these things.

14 Once more, Sir, [say I,] show me the force and the doings of each one of the mountains, that every soul that trusteth in the Lord, when it heareth, may glorify His great and marvelous and glorious name.

15 Listen, saith he, to the variety of the mountains and of the twelve nations.

Shepherd 105

1 From the first mountain, which was black, they that have believed are such as these;

2 rebels and blasphemers against the Lord, and betrayers of the servants of God.

3 For these there is no repentance, but there is death.

4 For this cause also they are black;

5 for their race is lawless.

6 And from the second mountain, the bare one, they that believed are such as these;

7 hypocrites and teachers of wickedness.

8 And these then are like the former it not having the fruit of righteousness.

9 For, even as their mountain is unfruitful, so likewise such men as these have a name indeed, but they are void of the faith, and there is no fruit of truth in them.

10 For these then repentance is offered, if they repent quickly;

11 but if they delay, they will have their death with the former.

12 Wherefore, Sir, say I, is repentance possible for them, but not for the former?

13 For their doings are almost the same.

14 On this account, he saith, is repentance offered for them, because they blasphemed not their Lord, nor became betrayers of the servants of God;

15 yet from desire of gain they played the hypocrite, and taught each other [after] the desires of sinful men.

16 But they shall pay a certain penalty;

17 yet repentance is ordained for them, because they are not become blasphemers or betrayers.

Shepherd 106

1 And from the third mountain, which had thorns and briars, they that believed are such as these;

2 some of them are wealthy and others are entangled in many business affairs.

3 The briars are the wealthy, and the thorns are they that are mixed up in various business affairs.

4 These [then, that are mixed up in many and various business affairs,] cleave [not] to the servants of God, but go astray, being choked by their affairs,

5 but the wealthy unwillingly cleave to the servants of God, fearing lest they may be asked for something by them.

6 Such men therefore shall hardly enter into the kingdom of God.

7 For as it is difficult to walk on briars with bare feet, so also it is difficult for such men to enter into the kingdom of God.

8 But for all these repentance is possible, but it must be speedy, that in respect to what they omitted to do in the former times, they may now revert to (past) days, and do some good.

9 If then they shall repent and do some good, they shall live unto God;

10 but if they continue in their doings, they shall be delivered over to those women, the which shall put them to death.

Shepherd 107

1 And from the fourth mountain, which had much vegetation, the upper part of the grass green and the part towards the roots withered, and some of it dried up by the sun, they that believed are such as these;

2 the double-minded, and they that have the Lord on their lips, but have Him not in their heart.

3 Therefore their foundations are dry and without power, and their words only live, but their works are dead.

4 Such men are neither alive nor dead.

5 They are, therefore, like unto the double-minded;

6 for the double-minded are neither green nor withered;

7 for they are neither alive nor dead.

8 For as their grass was withered up then it saw the sun, so also the double-minded, when they hear of tribulation, through their cowardice worship idols and are ashamed of the name of their Lord.

9 Such are neither alive nor dead.

10 Yet these also, if they repent quickly, shall be able to live;

11 but if they repent not, they are delivered over already to the women who deprive them of their life.

Shepherd 108

- 1 And from the fifth mountain, which had green grass and was rugged, they that believed are such as these;
- 2 they are faithful, but slow to learn and stubborn and self-pleasers, desiring to know all things, and yet they know nothing at all.
- 3 By reason of this their stubbornness, understanding stood aloof from them, and a foolish senselessness entered into them;
- 4 and they praise themselves as having understanding, and they desire to be self-appointed teachers, senseless though they are.
- 5 Owing then to this pride of heart many, while they exalted themselves, have been made empty;
- 6 for a mighty demon is stubbornness and vain confidence.
- 7 Of these then many were cast away, but some repented and believed, and submitted themselves to those that had understanding, having learnt their own senselessness.
- 8 Yea, and to the rest that belong to this class repentance is offered;
- 9 for they did not become wicked, but rather foolish and without understanding.
- 10 If these then shall repent, they shall live unto God;
- 11 but if they repent not, they shall have their abode with the women who work evil against them.

Shepherd 109

- 1 But they that believed from the sixth mountain, which had clefts great and small, and in the clefts herbage withered, are such as these;
- 2 they that have the small clefts, these are they that have aught against one another, and from their backbitings they are withered in the faith;
- 3 but many of these repented.
- 4 Yea, and the rest shall repent, when they hear my commandments;
- 5 for their backbitings are but small, and they shall quickly repent.
- 6 But they that have great clefts, these are persistent in their backbitings and bear grudges, nursing wrath against one another.
- 7 These then were thrown right away from the tower and rejected from its building.
- 8 Such persons therefore shall with difficulty live.
- 9 If God and our Lord, Who ruleth over all things and hath the authority over all His creation, beareth no grudge against them that confess their sins, but is propitiated,
- 10 doth man, who is mortal and full of sins, bear a grudge against man, as though he were able to destroy or save him?

11 I say unto you: I, the angel of repentance unto as many as hold this heresy, put it away from you and repent, and the Lord shall heal your former sins, if ye shall purify yourselves from this demon;
12 but if not, ye shall be delivered unto him to be put to death.

Shepherd 110

1 And from the seventh mountain, on which was herbage green and smiling, and the whole mountain thriving,
2 and cattle of every kind and the fowls of heaven were feeding on the herbage on that mountain, and the green herbage, on which they fed, only grew the more luxuriant, they that believed are such as these;
3 they were ever simple and guileless and blessed, having nothing against one another,
4 but rejoicing always in the servants of God, and clothed in the Holy Spirit of these virgins, and having compassion always on every man, and out of their labours they supplied every mans need without reproach and without misgiving.
5 The Lord then seeing their simplicity and entire childliness made them to abound in the labours of their hands, and bestowed favour on them in all their doings.
6 But I say unto you that are such-I, the angel of repentance-remain to the end such as ye are, and your seed shall never be blotted out.
7 For the Lord hath put you to the proof, and enrolled you among our number, and your whole seed shall dwell with the Son of God;
8 for of His Spirit did ye receive.

Shepherd 111

1 And from the eighth mountain, where were the many springs, and all the creatures of the Lord did drink of the springs, they that believed are such as these;
2 apostles and teachers, who preached unto the whole world, and who taught the word of the Lord in soberness and purity,
3 and kept back no part at all for evil desire, but walked always in righteousness and truth, even as also they received the Holy Spirit.
4 Such therefore shall have their entrance with the angels.

Shepherd 112

1 And from the ninth mountain, which was desert, which had [the] reptiles and wild beasts in it which destroy mankind, they that believed are such as these;
2 they that have the spots are deacons that exercised their office ill, and plundered the livelihood of widows and orphans, and made gain

for themselves from the ministrations which they had received to perform.

3 If then they abide in the same evil desire, they are dead and there is no hope of life for them;

4 but if they turn again and fulfil their ministrations in purity, it shall be possible for them to live.

5 But they that are mildewed, these are they that denied and turned not again unto their Lord, but having become barren and desert, because they cleave not unto the servants of God but remain alone, they destroy their own souls.

6 For as a vine left alone in a hedge, if it meet with neglect, is destroyed and wasted by the weeds,

7 and in time becometh wild and is no longer useful to its owner, so also men of this kind have given themselves up in despair and become useless to their Lord, by growing wild.

8 To these then repentance cometh, unless they be found to have denied from the heart;

9 but if a man be found to have denied from the heart, I know not whether it is possible for him to live.

10 And this I say not in reference to these days, that a man after denying should receive repentance;

11 for it is impossible for him to be saved who shall now deny his Lord;

12 but for those who denied Him long ago repentance seemeth to be possible.

13 If a man therefore will repent, let him do so speedily before the tower is completed;

14 but if not, he shall he destroyed by the women and put to death.

15 And the stunted, these are the treacherous and backbiters;

16 and the wild beasts which thou sawest on the mountain are these.

17 For as wild beasts with their venom poison and kill a man, so also do the words of such men poison and kill a man.

18 These then are broken off short from their faith through the conduct which they have in themselves;

19 but some of them repented and were saved;

20 and the rest that are of this kind can be saved, if they repent;

21 but if they repent not, they shall meet their death from those women of whose power they are possessed.

Shepherd 113

1 And from the tenth mountain, where were trees sheltering certain sheep, they that believed are such as these;

2 bishops, hospitable persons, who gladly received into their houses at all times the servants of God without hypocrisy.

3 [These bishops] at all times without ceasing sheltered the needy and the widows in their ministration and conducted themselves in purity at all times.

4 These [all] then shall be sheltered by the Lord for ever.

5 They therefore that have done these things are glorious in the sight of God, and their place is even now with the angels, if they shall continue unto the end serving the Lord.

Shepherd 114

1 And from the eleventh mountain, where were trees full of fruit, decked with divers kinds of fruits, they that believed are such as these;

2 they that suffered for the Name [of the Son of God], who also suffered readily with their whole heart, and yielded up their lives.

3 Wherefore then, Sir, say I, have all the trees fruits, but some of their fruits are more beautiful than others?

4 Listen, saith he;

5 all as many as ever suffered for the Names sake are glorious in the sight of God,

6 and the sins of all these were taken away, because they suffered for the name of the Son of God.

7 Now hear why their fruits are various, and some surpassing others.

8 As many, saith he, as were tortured and denied not, when brought before the magistracy, but suffered readily, these are the more glorious in the sight of the Lord;

9 their fruit is that which surpasseth.

10 But as many as became cowards, and were lost in uncertainty,

11 and considered in their hearts whether they should deny or confess,

12 and yet suffered, their fruits are less, because this design entered into their heart for this design is evil, that a servant should deny his own lord.

13 See to it, therefore, ye who entertain this idea, lest this design remain in your hearts, and ye die unto God.

14 But ye that suffer for the Names sake ought to glorify God, because God deemed you worthy that ye should bear this name, and that all your sins should be healed.

15 Reckon yourselves blessed therefore;

16 yea, rather think that ye have done a great work, if any of you shall suffer for Gods sake.

17 The Lord bestoweth life upon you, and ye perceive it not;

18 for your sins weighed you down, and if ye had not suffered for the Name [of the Lord], ye had died unto God by reason of your sins.

19 These things I say unto you that waver as touching denial and confession.

20 Confess that ye have the Lord, last denying Him ye be delivered into prison.

21 If the Gentiles punish their slaves, if any one deny his lord, what think ye the Lord will do unto you, He Who hath the authority over all things?

22 Away with these designs from your hearts, that ye may live for ever unto God.

Shepherd 115

1 And from the twelfth mountain, which was white, they that believed are such as these;

2 they are as very babes, into whose heart no guile entereth, neither learnt they what wickedness is, but they remained as babes for ever.

3 Such as these then dwell without doubt in the kingdom of God, because they defiled the commandments of God in nothing, but continued as babes all the days of their life in the same mind.

4 As many of you therefore as shall so continue, saith he, and shall be as infants not having guile, shall be more glorious [even] than all them that have been mentioned before;

5 for all infants are glorious in the sight of God, and stand first in His sight.

6 Blessed then are ye, as many as have put away wickedness from you, and have clothed yourselves in guilelessness:

Shepherd 116

1 After he had finished the parables of the mountains, I say unto him,

2 Sir, now explain to me concerning the stones that were taken from the from the tower, and concerning the round (stones) which were placed in the building, and concerning those that were still round.

Shepherd 117

1 Hear, saith he, likewise concerning all these things.

2 The stones which were taken from the plain and placed in the building of the tower in the room of those that were rejected, are the roots of this white mountain.

3 When then they that believed from this mountain were all found guileless, the lord of the tower ordered these from the roots of this mountain to be put into the building of the tower.

4 For He knew that if these stones should go to the building [of the tower], they would remain bright and not one of them would turn black.

5 But if he had added (stones) from the other mountains, he would have been obliged to visit that tower again, and to purify it.

6 Now all these have been found white, who have believed and who shall believe;

7 for they are of the same kind.

8 Blessed is this kind, for it is innocent! Hear now likewise concerning those round and bright stones.

9 All these are from this white mountain.

10 Now hear wherefore they have been found round.

11 Their riches have darkened and obscured them a little from the truth, yet they never departed from God, nor did any evil word proceed from their mouth, but all equity and virtue which comes from the truth.

12 When therefore the Lord perceived their mind, that they could favour the truth, *and likewise remain good,

13 He commanded their possessions to be cut from off them, yet not to be taken away altogether, so that they might be able to do some good with that which hath been left to them, and might live unto God, for that they come of a good kind.

14 So therefore they have been cut away a little, and placed in the building of this tower.

Shepherd 118

1 But the other (stones), which have remained round and have not been fitted into the building, because they have not yet received the seal, have been replaced in their own position, for they were found very round.

2 For this world and the vanities of their possessions must be cut from off them, and then they will fit into the kingdom of God.

3 For it is necessary that they should enter into the kingdom of God;

4 because the Lord hath blessed this innocent kind.

5 Of this kind then not one shall perish.

6 Yea, even though any one of them being tempted by the most wicked devil have committed any fault, he shall return speedily unto his Lord.

7 Blessed I pronounce you all to be-I, the angel of repentance-whoever of you are guileless as infants, because your part is good and honourable in the sight of God.

8 Moreover I bid all of you, whoever have received this seal, keep guilelessness, and bear to grudge, and continue not in your wickedness nor in the memory of the offences of bitterness;

9 but become of one spirit, and heal these evil clefts and take them away from among you, that the owner of the flocks may rejoice concerning them.

10 For he will rejoice, if he find all things whole.

11 But if he find any part of the flock scattered, woe unto the shepherds.

12 For if the shepherds themselves shall have been found scattered, how will they answer for the flocks?

13 Will they say that they were harassed by the flock?

14 No credence will be given them.

15 For it is an incredible thing that a shepherd should be injured by his flock;

16 and he will be punished the more because of his falsehood.

17 And I am the shepherd, and it behoveth me most strongly to render an account for you.

Shepherd 119

1 Amend yourselves therefore, while the tower is still in course of building.

2 The Lord dwelleth in men that love peace;

3 for to Him peace is dear;

4 but from the contentious and them that are given up to wickedness He keepeth afar off.

5 Restore therefore to Him your spirit whole as ye received it.

6 For suppose thou hast given to a fuller a new garment whole, and desirest to receive it back again whole, but the fuller give it back to thee torn, wilt thou receive it thus?

7 Wilt thou not at once blaze out and attack him with reproaches, saying;

8 "The garment which I gave thee was whole;

9 wherefore hast thou rent it and made it useless?

10 See, by reason of the rent, which thou hast made in it, it cannot be of use."

11 Wilt thou not then say all this to a fuller even about a rent which he has made in thy garment?

12 If therefore thou art thus vexed in the matter of thy garment, and complainest because thou receivest it not back whole,

13 what thinkest thou the Lord will do to thee, He, Who gave thee the spirit whole, and thou hast made it absolutely useless, so that it cannot be of any use at all to its Lord?

14 For its use began to be useless, when it was corrupted by thee.

15 Will not therefore the Lord of this spirit for this thy deed punish [thee with death]?

16 "Certainly, I said, all those, whomsoever He shall find continuing to bear malice, He will punish.

17 Trample not, said he, upon His mercy, but rather glorify Him, because He is so long-suffering with your sins, and is not like unto you.

18 Practise then repentance which is expedient for you.

Shepherd 120

1 All these things which are written above I, the shepherd, the angel of repentance, have declared and spoken to the servants of God.

2 If then ye shall believe and hear my words, and walk in them, and amend your ways, ye shall be able to live.

3 But if ye continue in wickedness and in bearing malice, no one of this kind shall live unto God.

4 All things which were to be spoken by me have (now) been spoken to you.

5 The shepherd said to me, Hast thou asked me all thy questions?

6 And I said, Yes, Sir.

7 Why then hast thou not enquired of me concerning the shape of the stones placed in the building, in that we filled up their shapes?

8 And I said, I forgot, Sir.

9 Listen now, said he, concerning them.

10 These are they that have heard my commandments now, and have practised repentance with their whole heart.

11 So when the Lord saw that their repentance was good and pure, and that they could continue therein, he ordered their former sins to be blotted out.

12 These shapes then were their former sins, and they have been chiseled away that they might not appear.

Shepherd 121

1 PARABLE THE TENTH.

2 After I had written out this book completely, the angel who had delivered me to the shepherd came to the house where I was, and sat upon a couch, and the shepherd stood at his right hand.

3 Then he called me, and spake thus unto me;

4 I delivered thee, said he, and thy house to this shepherd, that thou mightest be protected by him.

5 True, Sir, I said.

6 If therefore, said he, thou desirest to be protected from all annoyance and all cruelty,

7 to have also success in every good work and word, and all the power of righteousness, walk in his commandments, which I have given thee, and thou shalt be able to get the mastery over all wickedness.

8 For if thou keep his commandments, all evil desire and the sweetness of this world shall be subject unto thee;

9 moreover success shall attend thee in every good undertaking.

10 Embrace his gravity and self-restraint, and tell it out unto all men that he is held in great honour and dignity with the Lord, and is a ruler of great authority, and powerful in his office.

11 To him alone in the whole world hath authority over repentance been assigned.

12 Seemeth he to thee to be powerful?

13 Yet ye despise the gravity and moderation which he useth towards you.

Shepherd 122

1 I say unto him;

2 Ask him, Sir, himself, whether from the time that he hath been in my house, I have done ought out of order, whereby I have offended him.

3 I myself know, said he, that thou hast done nothing out of order, nor art about to do so.

4 And so I speak these things unto thee, that thou mayest persevere.

5 For he hath given a good account of thee unto me.

6 Thou therefore shalt speak these words to others, that they too who have practised or shall practise repentance may be of the same mind as thou art;

7 and he may give a good report of then to me, and I unto the Lord.

8 I too, Sir, I say, declare to every man the mighty works of the Lord;

9 for I hope that all who have sinned in the past, if they hear these things, will gladly repent and recover life.

10 Continue therefore, said he, in this ministry, and complete it unto the end.

11 For whosoever fulfil his commandments shall have life;

12 yea such a man (shall have) great honour with the Lord.

13 But whosoever keep not his commandments, fly from their life, and oppose him, and follow not his commandments, but deliver themselves over to death;

14 and each one becometh guilty of his own blood.

15 But I bid thee obey these commandments, and thou shalt have a remedy for thy sins.

Shepherd 123

- 1 Moreover, I have sent these virgins unto thee, that they may dwell with thee;
- 2 for I have seen that they are friendly towards thee.
- 3 Thou hast them therefore as helpers, that thou mayest be the better able to keep his commandments;
- 4 for it is impossible that these commandments be kept without the help of these virgins.
- 5 I see too that they are glad to be with thee.
- 6 But I will charge them that they depart not at all from thy house.
- 7 Only do thou purify thy house;
- 8 for in a clean house they will gladly dwell.
- 9 For they are clean and chaste and industrious, and all have favour in the sight of the Lord.
- 10 If, therefore, they shall find thy house pure, they will continue with thee;
- 11 but if the slightest pollution arise, they will depart from thy house at once.
- 12 For these virgins love not pollution in any form.
- 13 I say unto him, I hope, Sir, that I shall please them, so that they may gladly dwell in my house for ever;
- 14 and just as he to whom thou didst deliver me maketh no complaint against me, so they likewise shall make no complaint.
- 15 He saith unto the shepherd, I perceive, saith he, that he wishes to live as the servant of God, and that he will keep these commandments, and will place these virgins in a clean habitation.
- 16 With these words he again delivered me over to the shepherd, and called the virgins, and said to them;
- 17 Inasmuch as I see that ye are glad to dwell in this mans house, I commend to you him and his house, that ye depart not at all from his house.
- 18 But they heard these words gladly.

Shepherd 124

- 1 He said then to me, Quit you like a man in this ministry;
- 2 declare to every man the mighty works of the Lord, and thou shalt have favour in this ministry.
- 3 Whosoever therefore shall walk in these commandments, shall live and be happy in his life;
- 4 but whosoever shall neglect them, shall not live, and shall be unhappy in his life.
- 5 Charge all men who are able to do right, that they cease not to practise good works;
- 6 for it is useful for them.

7 I say moreover that every man ought to be rescued from misfortune;

8 for he that hath need, and suffereth misfortune in his daily life, is in great torment and want.

9 Whosoever therefore rescueth from penury a life of this kind,

10 winneth great joy for himself For he who is harassed by misfortune of this sort is afflicted and tortured with equal torment as one who is in chains.

11 For many men on account of calamities of this kind, because they can bear them no longer, lay violent hands on themselves.

12 He then who knows the calamity of a man of this kind and rescueth him not, committeth great sin, and becometh guilty of the mans blood.

13 Do therefore good works, whoever of you have received (benefits) from the Lord, lest, while ye delay to do them, the building of the tower be completed.

14 For it is on your account that the work of the building has been interrupted.

15 Unless then ye hasten to do right, the tower will be completed, and ye shut out. When then he had finished speaking with me, he rose from the couch and departed, taking with him the shepherd and the virgins. He said however unto me, that he would send the shepherd and the virgins back again to my house.

Didachē or Teaching of the TwelveDidachē 1

1 There are two ways, one of life and one of death, and there is a great difference between the two ways.

2 The way of life is this. First of all, thou shalt love the God that made thee; secondly, Thy neighbor as thyself. And all things whatsoever thou wouldst not have befall thyself, neither do thou unto another.

3 Now of these words the doctrine is this. Bless them that curse you, and pray for your enemies and fast for them that persecute you; for what thank is it, if ye love them that love you? Do not even the Gentiles the same? But do ye love them that hate you that hate you, and ye shall not have an enemy.

4 Abstain thou from fleshly and bodily lusts. If any man give thee a blow on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also, and thou shalt be perfect; If a man impress thee to go with him one mile, go with him twain; if a man take away thy cloak, give him thy coat also; if a man take away from thee that which is thy own, ask it not back, for neither art thou able.

5 To every man that asketh of thee give, and ask not back for the Father desireth that gifts be given to all from His own bounties. Blessed is he that giveth according to the commandment; for he is guiltless. Woe to him that receiveth; for, if a man receiveth having need, he is guiltless; but he that hath no need shall give satisfaction why and wherefore he received and being put in confinement he shall be examined concerning the deeds that he hath done, and he shall not come out thence until he hath given back the last farthing.

6 Yea, as touching this also it is said; Let thine alms sweat into thine hands, until thou have learnt to whom to give.

Didachē 2

1 And this is the second commandment of the teaching.

2 Thou shalt do no murder, thou shalt not commit adultery, thou shalt not corrupt boys, thou shalt not commit fornication, thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not deal in magic, thou shalt do no sorcery, thou shalt not murder a child by abortion nor kill them when born, thou shalt not covet thy neighbors goods,

3 thou shalt not perjure thyself, thou shalt not bear false witness, thou shalt not speak evil, thou shalt not cherish a grudge,

4 thou shalt not be double-minded nor double-tongued; for the double tongue is a snare of death.

5 Thy word shall not be false or empty, but fulfilled by action.

6 Thou shalt not be avaricious nor a plunderer nor a hypocrite nor ill-tempered nor proud. Thou shalt not entertain an evil design against thy neighbor.

7 Thou shalt not hate any man but some thou shalt reprove, and for others thou shalt pray, and others thou shalt love more than thy life.

Didachē 3

1 My child, flee from every evil and everything that resembleth it.

2 Be not angry, for anger leadeth to murder, nor jealous nor contentious nor wrathful; for of all these things murders are engendered.

3 My child, be not lustful, for lust leadeth to fornication, neither foul-speaking neither with uplifted eyes; for of all these things adulteries are engendered.

4 My child, be no dealer in omens, since it leads to idolatry, nor an enchanter nor an astrologer nor a magician, neither be willing to look at them; for from all these things idolatry is engendered.

5 My child, be not a liar, since lying leads to theft, neither avaricious neither vainglorious; for from all these things thefts are engendered.

6 My child, be not a murmurer, since it leadeth to blasphemy, neither self-willed neither a thinker of evil thoughts; for from all these things blasphemies are engendered.

7 But be meek, since the meek shall inherit the earth.

8 Be long-suffering and pitiful and guileless and quiet and kindly and always fearing the words which thou hast heard.

9 Thou shalt not exalt thyself, neither shalt thou admit boldness into thy soul. Thy soul shall not cleave together with the lofty, but with the righteous and humble shalt thou walk.

10 The accidents that befall thee thou shalt receive as good, knowing that nothing is done without God.

Didachē 4

1 My child, thou shalt remember him that speaketh unto thee the word of God night and day, and shalt honor him as the Lord; for whencesoever the Lordship speaketh, there is the Lord.

2 Moreover thou shalt seek out day by day the persons of the saints, that thou mayest find rest in their words.

3 Thou shalt not make a schism, but thou shalt pacify them that contend; thou shalt judge righteously, thou shalt not make a difference in a person to reprove him for transgressions.

4 Thou shalt not doubt whether a thing shall be or not be.

5 Be not thou found holding out thy hands to receive, but drawing them in as to giving.

6 If thou hast ought passing through thy hands, thou shalt give a ransom for thy sins.

7 Thou shalt not hesitate to give, neither shalt thou murmur when giving; for thou shalt know who is the good paymaster of thy reward.

8 Thou shalt not turn away from him that is in want, but shalt make thy brother partaker in all things, and shalt not say that anything is thy own. For if ye are fellow-partakers in that which is imperishable, how much rather in the things which are perishable?

9 Thou shalt not withhold thy hand from thy son or from thy daughter, but from their youth thou shalt teach them the fear of God.

10 Thou shalt not command thy bondservant or thine handmaid in thy bitterness who trust in the same God as thyself, lest haply they should cease to fear the God who is over both of you; for He cometh, not to call men with respect of persons, but He cometh to those whom the Spirit hath prepared.

11 But ye, servants, shall be subject unto your masters, as to a type of God, in shame and fear.

12 Thou shalt hate all hypocrisy, and everything that is not pleasing to the Lord.

13 Thou shalt never forsake the commandments of the Lord but shalt keep those things which thou hast received, neither adding to them nor taking away from them.

14 In church thou shalt confess thy transgressions, and shalt not betake thyself to prayer with an evil conscience. This is the way of life.

Didachē 5

1 But the way of death is this. First of all, it is evil and full of a curse; murders, adulteries, lusts, fornications, thefts, idolatries, magical arts, witchcrafts, plunderings, false witnessings, hypocrisies, doubleness of heart, treachery, pride, malice, stubbornness, covetousness, foul-speaking, jealousy, boldness, exaltation, boastfulness;

2 Persecutors of good men, hating truth, loving a lie, not perceiving the reward of righteousness, not cleaving to the good nor to righteous judgment, wakeful not for that which is good but for that which is evil-from whom gentleness and forbearance stand aloof; loving vain things, pursuing a recompense, not pitying the poor man, not toiling for him that is oppressed with toil, not recognizing Him that made them, murderers of children, corrupters of the creatures of God, turning away from him that is in want, oppressing him that is afflicted, advocates of the wealthy, unjust judges of the poor, altogether sinful. May ye be delivered, my children, from all these things.

Didachē 6

1 See lest any man lead you astray from this way of righteousness, for he teacheth thee apart from God.

2 For if thou art able to bear the whole yoke of the Lord, thou shalt be perfect; but if thou art not able, do that which thou art able.

3 But concerning eating, bear that which thou art able; yet abstain by all means from meat sacrificed to idols; for it is the worship of dead gods.

Didachē 7

1 But concerning baptism, thus shall ye baptize. Having first recited all these things, baptize in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit in living (running) water.

2 But if thou hast not living water, then baptize in other water; and if thou art not able in cold, then in warm.

3 But if thou hast neither, then pour water on the head thrice in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit.

4 But before the baptism let him that baptizeth and him that is baptized fast, and any others also who are able; and thou shalt order him that is baptized to fast a day or two before.

Didachē 8

1 And let not your fastings be with the hypocrites, for they fast on the second and the fifth day of the week; but do ye keep your fast on the fourth and on the preparation (the sixth) day.

2 Neither pray ye as the hypocrites, but as the Lord commanded in His Gospel, thus pray ye: Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be Thy name; Thy kingdom come; Thy will be done, as in heaven, so also on earth; give us this day our daily bread; and forgive us our debt, as we forgive our debtors; and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one; for Thine is the power and the glory for ever and ever.

3 Three times in the day pray ye so.

Didachē 9

1 But as touching the eucharistic thanksgiving give ye thanks thus.

2 First, as regards the cup: We give Thee thanks, O our Father, for the holy vine of Thy son David, which Thou madest known unto us through Thy Son Jesus; Thine is the glory for ever and ever.

3 Then as regarding the broken bread: We give Thee thanks, O our Father, for the life and knowledge which Thou didst make known unto us through Thy Son Jesus; Thine is the glory for ever and ever.

4 As this broken bread was scattered upon the mountains and being gathered together became one, so may Thy Church be gathered

together from the ends of the earth into Thy kingdom; for Thine is the glory and the power through Jesus Christ for ever and ever.

5 But let no one eat or drink of this eucharistic thanksgiving, but they that have been baptized into the name of the Lord; for concerning this also the Lord hath said: Give not that which is holy to the dogs.

Didachē 10

1 And after ye are satisfied thus give ye thanks:

2 We give Thee thanks, Holy Father, for Thy holy name, which Thou hast made to tabernacle in our hearts, and for the knowledge and faith and immortality, which Thou hast made known unto us through Thy Son Jesus; Thine is the glory for ever and ever.

3 Thou, Almighty Master, didst create all things for Thy name's sake, and didst give food and drink unto men for enjoyment, that they might render thanks to Thee; but didst bestow upon us spiritual food and drink and eternal life through Thy Son.

4 Before all things we give Thee thanks that Thou art powerful; Thine is the glory for ever and ever.

5 Remember, Lord, Thy Church to deliver it from all evil and to perfect it in Thy love; and gather it together from the four winds – even the Church which has been sanctified – into Thy kingdom which Thou hast prepared for it; for Thine is the power and the glory for ever and ever.

6 May grace come and may this world pass away. Hosanna to the God of David. If any man is holy, let him come; if any man is not, let him repent. Maran Atha. Amen.

7 But permit the prophets to offer thanksgiving as much as they desire.

Didachē 11

1 Whosoever therefore shall come and teach you all these things that have been said before, receive him;

2 but if the teacher himself be perverted and teach a different doctrine to the destruction thereof, hear him not; but if to the increase of righteousness and the knowledge of the Lord, receive him as the Lord.

3 But concerning the apostles and prophets, so do ye according to the ordinance of the Gospel.

4 Let every apostle, when he cometh to you, be received as the Lord;

5 but he shall not abide more than a single day, or if there be need, a second likewise; but if he abide three days, he is a false prophet.

6 And when he departeth let the apostle receive nothing save bread, until he findeth shelter; but if he ask money, he is a false prophet.

7 And any prophet speaking in the Spirit ye shall not try neither discern; for every sin shall be forgiven, but this sin shall not be forgiven.

8 Yet not every one that speaketh in the Spirit is a prophet, but only if he have the ways of the Lord. From his ways therefore the false prophet and the prophet shall be recognized.

9 And no prophet when he ordereth a table in the Spirit shall eat of it; otherwise he is a false prophet.

10 And every prophet teaching the truth, if he doeth not what he teacheth, is a false prophet.

11 And every prophet approved and found true, if he doeth ought as an outward mystery typical of the Church, and yet teacheth you not to do all that he himself doeth, shall not be judged before you; he hath his judgment in the presence of God; for in like manner also did the prophets of old time.

12 And whosoever shall say in the Spirit, Give me silver or anything else, ye shall not listen to him; but if he tell you to give on behalf of others that are in want, let no man judge him.

Didachē 12

1 But let every one that cometh in the name of the Lord be received; and then when ye have tested him ye shall know him, for ye shall have understanding on the right hand and on the left.

2 If the comer is a traveler, assist him, so far as ye are able; but he shall not stay with you more than two or three days, if it be necessary.

3 But if he wishes to settle with you, being a craftsman, let him work for and eat his bread.

4 But if he has no craft, according to your wisdom provide how he shall live as a Christian among you, but not in idleness.

5 If he will not do this, he is trafficking upon Christ. Beware of such men.

Didachē 13

1 But every time prophet desiring to settle among you is worthy of his food.

2 In like manner a true teacher is also worthy, like the workman, of his food.

3 Every firstfruit then of the produce of the wine-vat and of the threshing-floor, of thy oxen and of thy sheep, thou shalt take and give as the firstfruit to the prophets; for they are your chief-priests.

4 But if ye have not a prophet, give them to the poor.

5 If thou makest bread, take the firstfruit and give according to the commandment.

6 In like manner, when thou openest a jar of wine or of oil, take the firstfruit and give to the prophets;

7 yea and of money and raiment and every possession take the firstfruit, as shall seem good to thee, and give according to the commandment.

Didachē 14

1 And on the Lord's own day gather yourselves together and break bread and give thanks, first confessing your transgressions, that your sacrifice may be pure.

2 And let no man, having his dispute with his fellow, join your assembly until they have been reconciled, that your sacrifice may not be defiled;

3 for this sacrifice it is that was spoken of by the Lord; In every place and at every time offer me a pure sacrifice; for I am a great king, saith the Lord, and My name is wonderful among the nations.

Didachē 15

1 Appoint for yourselves therefore bishops and deacons worthy of the Lord, men who are meek and not lovers of money, and true and approved; for unto you they also perform the service of the prophets and teachers.

2 Therefore despise them not; for they are your honorable men along with the prophets and teachers.

3 And reprove one another, not in anger but in peace, as ye find in the Gospel; and let no one speak to any that has gone wrong towards his neighbor, neither let him hear a word from you, until he repent.

4 But your prayers and your almsgiving and all your deeds so do ye as ye find it in the Gospel of our Lord.

Didachē 16

1 Be watchful for your life; let your lamps not be quenched and your loins not ungirdled, but be ye ready; for ye know not the hour the hour in which our Lord cometh.

2 And ye shall gather yourselves together frequently, seeking what is fitting for your souls; for the whole time of your faith shall not profit you, if ye be not perfected at the last season.

3 For in the last days the false prophets and corrupters shall be multiplied, and the sheep shall be turned into wolves, and love shall be turned into hate.

4 For as lawlessness increaseth, they shall hate one another and shall persecute and betray. And then the world-deceiver shall appear as a son of God; and shall work signs and wonders, and the earth shall be

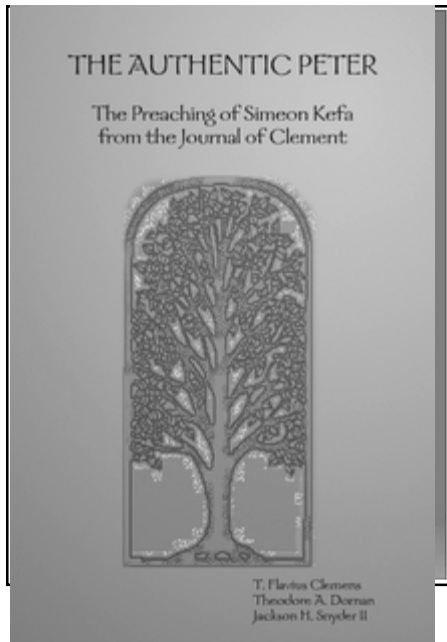
delivered into his hands; and he shall do unholy things, which have never been since the world began.

5 Then all created mankind shall come to the fire of testing, and many shall be offended and perish; but they that endure in their faith shall be saved by the Curse Himself.

6 And then shall the signs of the truth appear; first a sign of a rift in the heaven, then a sign of a voice of a trumpet, and thirdly a resurrection of the dead;

7 yet not of all, but as it was said The Lord shall come and all His saints with Him.

8 Then shall the world see the Lord coming upon the clouds of heaven.



**The Authentic Peter:
The Preaching of
Simeon Kefa from
the Journal of T.
Flavius Clemens**

by Ted Dornan & Jackson
Snyder

Only available at

www.Apostolia.us

1464008, 327 pages

Perfect bound book \$22.95

**Includes E-book and Audio
Book**

Ever wonder why Simon Peter only got a couple short letters in our Scriptures? Wouldn't someone have recorded Peter's AUTHENTIC acts and preaching? Of course his preaching was recorded! By Clement, an affluent Gentile convert, at the command of James the Just. So why would the Church Fathers bury the preaching of their first pope since Clement was their second pope? Because Peter's teachings are HEBRAIC. This volume is one-of-a-kind, containing teachings on many subjects, including deliverance, healing, true worship, and lost doctrines. We dispensed with churchy language in restored the original Hebraic names and titles of people, places and concepts - and a full GLOSSARY. Your purchase includes the AUDIO BOOK. To get the AUDIO, go to www.Apostolia.com or message (801) 605-1715. The Authentic Peter is a great way to learn the vocabulary of the Hebraic Roots Movement & pick up biblical Hebrew words.

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES